

Chapter 1201 - Kill!

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“You’re suicidal.”

Sir Mu Qian was shaking because of his indignation. He raised his crystal scepter, and all of a sudden, hundreds of lightning bolts flew out, forming a lightning fall.

It was apparent that Sir Mu Qian had great achievements on mind power, easily surpassing Tianluo Saint.

There was spiritual Qi everywhere in this sky and land. They all turned into lightning as if the air had been all sucked away.

“So, so powerful...”

Zhang Ruochen had already sanctified his mind power, yet he still felt that his consciousness was crumbling. He had an enormous headache as if his skull was going to crack.

Chu Siyuan shook his rope. He still looked chill, stepping on the lightning and walking toward Sir Mu Qian.

As he walked down, he crushed the mind power field of Sir Mu Qian. Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen felt that the pressure on them had gone.

Chu Siyuan stared at the front.

Hua.

A blue picture was formed in front of him, and it was quickly unfolded, showing the engravings of mountains and rivers. A wild world showed up.

Lightning fell and the picture clashed, and they both disintegrated.

All the destruction Qi was dissolved.

Sir Mu Qian realized that Chu Siyuan was a power to be reckoned with. He was not just being smug.

Heng!

Chu Siyuan moved his fingers, and the scroll pressed toward Sir Mu Qian.

Even Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint felt like being pressed by a mountain, not to mention Sir Mu Qian, who was standing at the center of the scroll.

“Leave now.”

The four of them quickly retreated and rushed to afar.

In the next moment, an earth-shattering sound exploded behind them.

The ground started to sink, and the air was popping. They were trapped in a chaotic world, and the irresistible power was almost about to tear them into pieces.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Huangtian Crown Princess with one hand and Huang Yanchen with the other, running out by performing great spatial move.

They only slowed down after they were hundreds of miles away.

Gradually, they stopped and looked to the back.

Chi Chi.

The sky and land behind them had caved in completely. Thick dust blasted, and there were lightning bolts shuttling in the air. Even saints would be killed in that area.

“That Elder Chu is so powerful! Is his mind power at the level of saint king now?” Zhang Ruochen deeply inhaled and exhaled.

“Master Chu’s mind power is unfathomable. You don’t need to worry about him.”

Huang Yanchen then stared at Huangtian Crown Princess and said, “Let’s just kill her first.”

A trace of shining sword light showed up in Huang Yanchen's hand, and the sword hit the head of Huangtian Crown Princess.

Huangtian Crown Princess looked weird. She reached out her fingers and caught the saint sword.

And then, two traces of blood Qi gushed out of her fingers and wound around the saint sword.

“Retreat.”

At the next moment, Huangtian Crown Princess grabbed the saint sword from Huang Yanchen's hand and slashed toward Huang Yanchen.

Everything she did was done in an instant.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen didn't expect Huangtian Crown Princess to be this impressive, as she was way stronger than Huang Yanchen.

“I know now!”

Zhang Ruochen recalled that Tianluo Saint gave Huangtian Crown Princess a pill, which he thought was just a healing pill.

It seemed that the pill was for more than just recovery.

Otherwise, Huangtian Crown Princess's power wouldn't have surged like this.

Huangtian Crown Princess was very quick, but Zhang Ruochen was quicker. He wielded Abyss Ancient Sword and warded off her saint sword.

Huangtian Crown Princess retreated more than one hundred feet, and her saint sword was shivering. She looked surprised and said, “No wonder you've sanctified your body. I've taken an emperor blood pill, after which I can stay ten times stronger than I actually am in two hours, yet you can still overpower me.”

“It's an emperor blood pill.”

Before he finished, Zhang Ruochen performed human sword and merged himself with the sword, racing forward like a black light shuttle.

Huangtian Crown Princess knew that Zhang Ruochen was high-achieving in sword way, so she tried her best to resist it.

Peng Peng.

The two of them were rapid, and they fought across hundreds of miles, crushing six mountains. Some of the mountains were cut into halves, forming a long valley.

The fight between two saints was always earth-shattering. Normal half saints would be killed if they got close.

Pu Chi.

Huangtian Crown Princess failed to resist the sword techniques of Zhang Ruochen. She was wounded everywhere, face, neck, and arm, and there was a bloody hole in her belly.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't injured at all. He looked clean and tidy, and the forces coming from him became fiercer.

Huangtian Crown Princess was scared by Zhang Ruochen. She stopped fighting him and kept retreating.

“Sword Six.”

Zhang Ruochen held Abyss Ancient Sword in his hand and drew a sword circle.

Sword Six represented ups, downs and four corners.

That sword technique included all the six directions, which could locate his opposition.

Hua.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword, and the sword circle which was originally ten square feet large became a spot.

The pupils of Huangtian Crown Princess contracted rapidly. When she could see the sword of Zhang Ruochen, the tip of Abyss Ancient Sword stabbed toward her eyebrows.

“Stop.”

Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint used their mind power, covering themselves with a wind dragon and a fire dragon, respectively. They rushed toward Zhang Ruochen, trying to stop him.

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn and said, “You’re too late!”

Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through Huangtian Crown Princess’s head.

And then, Zhang Ruochen twisted his wrist, forming a spinning destruction Qi.

Peng! Huangtian Crown Princess’s head exploded, and she became a headless corpse.

Meanwhile, the last strike by Huangtian Crown Princess pierced through the defense of Zhang Ruochen, which hit his left shoulder and numbed half his body. He retreated dozens of steps, kneeling on the ground.

The left shoulder of Zhang Ruochen was torn apart, and blood dripped on the ground.

Fortunately, my body constitution is sturdy enough, otherwise I couldn’t have resisted that strike, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Even an upper-class saint might be killed if he or she tried to kill Huangtian Crown Princess.

When Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint arrived, Huangtian Crown Princess’s body had already fallen on the ground, and her life force was gone completely.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’ve made a grave mistake!” Chen Yi Saint yelled in anger, his face twitching.

Zhang Ruochen was calm. He said, “Really? I only killed a crown princess. I killed the crown prince of Qingtian Tribe in Blue Dragon Void World before. Immortal vampires didn’t do anything to me.”

“That’s because immortal vampires haven’t decided to attack you yet. When the death of the Crown Princess is known, you’ll be the mortal enemy of the immortal vampires,” Chen Yi Saint said.

Chen Xi Saint walked to the corpse of Huangtian Crown Prince reluctantly, hoping that she could revive her.

“Carnivorous Holy Flower.”

Branches emerged from the back of Zhang Ruochen, reaching the corpse of Huangtian Crown Princess before Chen Xi Saint did.

The branches pierced through the body, starting to absorb the blood and essences in the corpse.

Chen Xi Saint failed to get the body. She got angrier, and said, "Let's suppress Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen together. We can only make up for our carelessness by bringing their blood back."

The death of Huangtian Crown Princess was a huge thing to Huangtian Tribe. If they couldn't catch the killer, Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint would face a horrible consequence after they went back.

"Light of stars and fires."

Chen Yi Saint raised his scepter and infused it with his mind power, forming a gleaming fiery light ball, giving out ferocious power.

"God of Wind and Rain."

Chen Xi Saint pinched a print with her hand, and it started to rain, with wind blowing in the area three hundred square miles around him. The wind condensed into a translucent giant that was thirty feet tall. It wielded the sword toward Zhang Ruochen.

The mind power of Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint had reached level fifty-two, far greater than that of Tianluo Saint. Once they fully utilized their power, they were much stronger than Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

Certainly, there were stronger ones and weaker ones at the same level.

Chen Yi Saint was stronger as his mind power had reached pinnacle level-fifty-two, and his power could rival that of saints at Xuanhuang Realm.

Huang Yanchen took out her heir stamp, holding it in her hand, and said, "Help me, brother Chen."

Zhang Ruochen had already taken out two saint-level Blood Repression Runes, but he put them away seeing how confident Huang Yanchen was.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Huang Yanchen and pushed forward.

He infused his holy Qi into the heir stamp.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Huang Yanchen and pushed his hands forward.

Holy Qi gushed out of their palms, infusing the heir stamp.

Huang Yanchen once said that an heir could only wield the true power of the heir stamp after reaching the state of saint.

He was curious how powerful the heir stamp, the most powerful weapon made by Chi Yao, was.

Hong Long.

The heir stamp spun rapidly and got larger and larger. Golden light gushed out, turning into golden clouds and spreading.

In an instant, the power from the golden clouds crushed that translucent giant which was more than thirty feet tall.

Chen Xi Saint wasn't able to resist the power of the heir stamp. Peng! His body exploded, turning into a cluster of bloody mist.

“How is it possible...”

Chen Yi Saint couldn't be more terrified. He wielded the fiery light ball above the scepter, and then, he mobilized the mind power he had and formed a fiery dragon. He stood inside the fiery dragon, trying to run away.

The power coming from the heir stamp was like that of the empress, which was irresistible.

He could only run.

Chapter 1202 - Prototype World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The fire dragon was more than 200 meters long. Though made out of flames, it had obvious horns, scales, and talons. It looked like a real dragon flying in the air.

Saint Chen Yi held the scepter and stood within the fire. They passed through the golden clouds and escaped.

“Such a powerful Heir Stamp. Just what kind of power is it?”

A level 52 Spiritual Power Saint was actually killed in an instant.

Thinking back to how Saint Chen Xi had been killed, Chen Yi was terrified and his body shook involuntarily.

The fire dragon flew quickly and reached hundreds of miles away. Saint Chen Yi let out a relieved breath. With his cultivation, he was confident in dodging the Heir Stamp from 100 miles away, no matter how strong it was.

Suddenly, he discovered with a shock that the Heir Stamp’s golden clouds actually covered the sky above his head. Not only that, a blue river crossed the sky. It was hundreds of miles long. Blue Qi surged in the river and fell down.

“Oh, no.”

Saint Chen Yi panicked and raised his scepter with both hands. Layers of fiery rings rushed out of his feet. They passed his legs, waist, chest, arms, and the 36 layers finally converged at the scepter.

“Burning Sky Spell!” he thundered, releasing his strongest spell.

Kaboom.

An explosion sounded above the scepter. Sizzling, a ring of red fire burst out with the scepter as the center. The entire sky was instantly shrouded in fire. It seemed to turn into a furnace world. All the vegetation within hundreds of miles was instantly turned to dust.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen controlled the Heir Stamp with all their might. The stamp grew even bigger. It floated in the clouds like a jade city.

The Heir Stamp trembled violently. Then the blue river in the sky grew even stronger. It passed through the flames and hit Saint Chen Yi.

“How can you be so powerful... I...cannot accept...”

He cried out tragically. The next moment, his physical body and scepter exploded at the same time and turned to dust.

Yet another Spiritual Power Saint had died.

The blue river quickly shrank back into the Heir Stamp, transforming into a blue thread of light.

Huang Yanchen collected the Heir Stamp. It was only the size of a jade bowl, hovering above her pale and slender palm.

Even Zhang Ruochen was surprised by the Heir Stamp’s power. After all, Huang Yanchen was only a lower Saint in martial arts and Zhang Ruochen was only a second trial Pre-Saint. Yet they were able to use the Heir Stamp to easily kill two 52nd-level Spiritual Power Saints.

The two Saints had wanted to escape but couldn’t.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Huang Yanchen’s Heir Stamp. He saw eight blue threads inside.

Earlier, they’d only activated one to create the blue celestial river. It unleashed extremely terrifying might. What would it be like if they activated all eight threads at the same time?

Of course, with their cultivations, it was difficult to activate just one. It was hard to control the power. It wouldn't be easy to activate all eight simultaneously.

Zhang Ruochen also took out an Heir Stamp and held it. This was from Ouyang Huan of the Demonic Sect!

There were also eight threads in the stamp.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't researched it after getting it. Now, he split a beam of Spiritual Power and went into it.

The Heir Stamp contained a boundless world. He couldn't find the end at all.

There were eight rolling blue celestial rivers in the world, carrying unmatched emperor-like strength. Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power approached it. The power from the rivers instantly swallowed his Spiritual Power.

Zhang Ruochen let out a long breath. He opened his eyes again and muttered to himself, "Is the Heir Stamp just a prototype world? No, this world..."

"...Is empty," Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen looked over quizzically.

"You're right," Huang Yanchen said. "The Heir Stamp is a prototype world, but it's still empty right now. An Heir can only start adding Rules of Saintly Way after reaching the Saint Realm to perfect the world. Finally, it will evolve into a true world."

"No wonder Chi Yao says that the nine Heir Stamps are the strongest weapons. She's created nine worlds." Zhang Ruochen thought carefully and then asked, "What are the eight threads of light in the Heir Stamp?"

Huang Yanchen pursed her lips. "Those...are the Empress' hair."

"How is that possible?"

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows. "I can feel that the lights are like celestial rivers. They contain horrible destructive power. How can they only be strands of hair?"

“In truth, they’re only eight strands of hair,” Huang Yanchen said. “The Empress’ cultivation is probably close to a god’s. She may be like the Thousand-bone Empress too. Even though she’s not a god, she has the abilities to kill a god.

“Even a strand of her hair contains boundless Rules of Saintly Way and emperor-like power. It can kill a Saint like killing an ant. Earlier, we only unleashed a portion of the strand’s power. If we really summoned its true form, Saint Chen Yi and Chen Xi would have been turned to dust.”

It was only a strand of hair, but it was like a celestial river. With Zhang Ruochen’s current abilities, he wouldn’t be able to withstand that power at all.

Huang Yanchen continued. “The Saint Lady once predicted that if the power of a strand of the Empress’ hair is fully released, even a Saint King wouldn’t be able to take it.”

Zhang Ruochen held his breath. He couldn’t imagine that kind of power.

The difference was too big!

Even though his physical body was now a Saint, he was still thousands of miles away from Chi Yao. How much longer did he need to cultivate in order to reach her level and be able to face her?

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Heir Stamp in his hand and then put it away.

The most powerful part about the Heir Stamp wasn’t that it contained eight strands of the Empress’ hair. It was because of itself. Once the Heir’s cultivation reached a certain extent, they wouldn’t need to use hairs’ power anymore.

Just imagine how terrifyingly destructive a prototype world could be in a battle.

Plus, as the Heir continued to pour in Rules of Saintly Way, the Heir Stamp would only become stronger.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen now had the Universe World. He didn’t need to cultivate the Heir Stamp anymore. It would only waste his time and delay his cultivation. No matter how strong

the Universe World and Heir Stamp were, the most important thing was still his own cultivation.

On the other hand, the Holy Carnivorous Flower had absorbed Empress Huangtian's Blood Qi and Life Qi. The flower bud at the top of the vine grew a bit more. On the ground, Empress Huangtian's corpse became a pile of brown dirt.

Seeing the bloodied dirt, Zhang Ruochen sighed too.

No matter how beautiful and excellent one was, a single mistake could make one become a pile of bones or not even have a corpse.

This was also a warning to himself.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Ruyi Treasure Bottle. He collected Saint Chen Yi, Chen Xi, and Tianluo's Blood Qi into the bottle.

The Blood Qi of a Spiritual Power Saint wasn't as strong as a Martial Saint, but it still contained extraordinary power. It could nourish the Holy Carnivorous Flower.

"It's a pity that the three Saints all had their hearts shattered," Huang Yanchen said. "Those are the most valuable parts of them."

Zhang Ruochen was much more optimistic. He smiled. "We killed Empress Huangtian and three Spiritual Power Saints in this battle. It's a complete victory. When news spreads to the northern region, that Huangtian Blood Emperor will probably hate our guts."

Huang Yanchen nodded. She looked up to the distant sky.

The flames and lightning that filled the sky slowly scattered. Sir Qian Mu fell to the ground, blood streaming down from him. The ground caved in under him.

"The battle's over?"

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen used physical techniques to hurry over.

Electric fire still surged in the center of the battleground. Regular cultivators would die immediately if they approached.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen passed through the fire and found Sir Mu Qian's corpse.

A cold snort sounded behind them. Chu Siyuan strolled over with a scornful expression.

“The Golden-robed Elder of the Immortal Vampires is just so-so. I only used some simple tactics and he couldn't take it anymore.”

No matter how Chu Siyuan bragged, he was indeed terrifyingly powerful. Zhang Ruochen had a new impression of him.

Perhaps he can defeat the Hierarch Madame, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The Hierarch Madame was truly an unpredictable figure that Zhang Ruochen feared. Someone like her hiding in the Blood God Sect was a huge threat that must be removed as soon as possible.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen walked over toward Chu Siyuan. He bowed and said, “Thank you, senior, for saving us.”

Chu Siyuan glanced at him. “Last time, I saved you because of Luo Xu,” he said. “This time, it's because of Nalan. Tell me! What is your relationship with her?”

Zhang Ruochen knew that Chu Siyuan had come to Tiantai State because of the Saint Lady.

“We just have some interactions!” he replied.

Some interactions? Chu Siyuan obviously didn't believe this and wanted to refute Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately interrupted. “Actually, there's an Immortal Vampire infiltrator in the Blood God Sect. Her abilities are above Sir Mu Qian. She might even be stronger than you, senior.”

Hearing the first sentence, Chu Siyuan's eyes widened in surprise.

Hearing the last sentence, he put on a disbelieving expression.
How could a mere Immortal Vampire infiltrator be stronger
than the leader of the Art Sect?

Chapter 1203 - Last Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen told everything about the hierarch wife.

Chu Siyuan knew something about the hierarch wife. After hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, he started to think.

After a while, Chu Siyuan sighed and said, “The hierarch, hierarch wife of Blood God Sect and I used to be eminent beings. We were dynamic and enthusiastic. After we became saints, we retreated and started to comprehend the saintly way. We have tried to reach a more complicated and mysterious level, and there’s no longer crossover among us. I haven’t seen them for three hundred years.”

The battles among sects were usually solved by the young talents. As for saints, they wouldn’t show up.

Which was why monks from all the major sects would choose to retreat after becoming saints.

Chu Siyuan recalled everything that happened after hearing about the hierarch and the hierarch wife of Blood God Sect. He used to be a passionate youngster, competing with his peers.

Many talents within his era had died. As for those who lived until now, they had all become prominent beings.

Chu Siyuan said, “Let’s go! I’ll take you to Mo You Valley and see how powerful Qiu Yichi has become in the past three hundred years.”

Apparently, Qiu Chiyi was the name of that hierarch wife.

Chu Siyuan, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen didn’t go to Mo You Valley immediately. Instead, they headed to the black

market headquarters.

The fight in the black market headquarters had finished.

There were many great beings from Huangtian Tribe, but with the protection of the Great Four Silence Formation, the fight didn't cause much damage to the evil capital.

Yue Shuzi, the Administrator Point from state of Tiantai led a group of saints from Way of Confucius and the imperial government to exit the evil capital city, meeting Chu Siyuan.

“Saint Painter, my lord.”

All the saints saluted Chu Siyuan.

Yue Shuzi waved his sleeves and said, “Grand master.”

Chu Siyuan had admitted seventeen disciples, and out of them, Yue Shuzi had the greatest achievements. He had become an Administrator Point of this state.

“How was the fight?” Chu Siyuan asked.

Yue Shuzi answered, “Eighteen immortal vampire saints were killed in the fight, and as for those below the state of saints, countless died. That Prince Xia has Hundred Saint Blood Armor, with which he broke the Great Four Silence Formation and escaped it. Demonic Eye Saint, Ghost Claw Saint and two other generals from the Ministry of War are chasing him.”

Chu Siyuan frowned and said, “That Prince Xia has great cultivation. They're just walking to certain death.”

“You don't know it. Prince Xia has been severely injured, and he can't even wield one-tenth of his real power. Any one of them is stronger than him now,” Yue Shuzi said.

Chu Siyuan then said, “I have another important issue to discuss with you.”

Chu Siyuan started to talk to Yue Shuzi using his mind power.

Zhang Ruochen turned into the shape of Gu Linfeng, standing in the distance.

Yue Shuzi and the others were officials of the imperial government, yet he was on the wanted list.

Huang Yanchen transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen: “Blood God Sect stood against the imperial government in the state of Tiantai. Once the saints from the imperial government enter the territory of Blood God Sect, they might seize the chance to annihilate the sect.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “I’ve talked about this with elder Chu already. I can lead them to the territory of Blood God Sect, but I’ll only allow three people in.”

Huang Yanchen stopped speaking, knowing that Zhang Ruochen was aware of what he was doing.

Qing Mo, Zhu Hongtao, Wan Ke and Blackie left the black market headquarters and met with Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

There was blood everywhere on Zhu Hongtao’s body. He had killed three immortal vampire saints this time, releasing all his anger.

Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi came up with a solution.

Although Zhang Ruochen gave them a quota of three, they didn’t use the third one. They decided to go there just as those two.

Chu Siyuan said, “I’ll go to Blood God Sect to fight Qiu Yichi, and as for other monks, you need to deal with them yourself.”

Zhang Ruochen spoke in the tone of the deity of Blood God Sect, saying “Thank you, master Chu and Lord Administrator Point. We in Blood God Sect owe you one. If you run into trouble in the future, I’ll definitely help you.”

Chu Siyuan sneered, as he didn’t take Zhang Ruochen seriously. He was the master of Painting Sect. He didn’t need the help of a youngster.

On his way to Blood God Sect, Zhang Ruochen sent a message to Elder Yuanzhou: “The immortal vampires from Huangtian Tribe have been annihilated. Summon all the personnel from Blood God Sect and attack Mo You Valley.”

The hierarch wife was a great threat to Blood God Sect. She must be eradicated, otherwise, she would destroy the entire

Blood God Sect.

Elder Yuanzhou and Elder Yuanxing had been preparing for a long time. After they received the message from Zhang Ruochen, they immediately started to mobilize all the saints they could.

Five hundred miles away from Mo You Valley, under a snow mountain, Zhang Ruochen saw Elder Yuanzhou, Elder Yuanxing and some other saints from Blood God Sect.

All of them were top-tier great beings, and they all looked serious. They knew how important this fight was.

This was the final battle.

As long as they could suppress the hierarch wife, the civil conflict in Blood God Sect would be resolved.

Yuanzhou Elder said, “Let’s make attacks now! I brought Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod from Baby Master Mountain, which can level the entire Mo You Valley in a second.”

Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod was ranked one-hundred-and-thirty-fourth on the ‘Ten Thousand Inscriptions Saint Weapon Rank,’ and was a holy weapon used by all the hierarchs from Blood God Sect. They hoped that it could surpass Ten Thousand Inscriptions Saint Weapons and become the second guarding-sect weapon.

Although Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod couldn’t rival the real guarding weapon, Blood God Mace, it was still an impressive weapon.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I’ve asked for some help from the outside. They can help you attack.”

The saints from Blood God Sect looked behind Zhang Ruochen, glancing across Huang Yanchen, Zhu Hongtao, Wan Ke and Qing Mo.

Although they were kind of surprised that this deity who didn’t have much of a background could have so many saints, they could tell that those saints didn’t have high enough cultivation.

Only those who had reached Absolute Land Realm and Sky Connecting Realm could change the battle.

A giant saint walked out. He looked solemn and said, “This battle is very important. You’d better hide behind my back so that I can protect you.”

That person was called Yao Sheng, and was the vice palace ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace, and was an upper-class saint.

There was a young woman on Yao Sheng’s back.

The man and the woman were stuck together, coexisting. They had two legs, four hands, and two heads.

It was said that the woman was the lover of Yao Sheng. Unfortunately, that woman didn’t have enough potential to become a saint, so she had a very short life.

Yao Sheng had performed a secret technique to keep her alive by binding that woman’s body to his body so that they could share the long life of a saint.

This was why Yao Sheng was very slow at training, otherwise, he would’ve reached Xuanhuang Realm already.

This was always a much-told story in Blood God Sect.

Huang Yanchen transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen: “That four-hand and four-leg palace master looks a bit weird.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Yao Sheng and transmitted his voice using mind power. He asked, “What happened?”

Huang Yanchen said, “There’s a secret technique only in Immortal Temple that can connect two bodies so that they’re codependent. Only a few know about that secret technique.”

“Immortal Temple...”

Zhang Ruochen still looked calm, yet he started to be more cautious.

There might be other immortal vampire spies within Blood God Sect, however, they’re not immortal vampires, but human beings who work for the immortal vampires.

That palace ruler Yao might be one of them

There was one palace ruler and two vice palace rulers from Nether Heavenly Palace.

At this moment, palace ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace, Lan Caiye, and the other vice palace ruler, Zuo Mu, also walked out.

Lan Caiye was a middle-aged woman who was wearing armor. She looked ordinary, and said, 'I'll also stay here and deal with those who escape Mo You Valley.'

Zuo Mu said, 'Tonight, we must get rid of all the immortal vampires in Mo You Valley. We can't afford to let anyone go.'

The ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace guarded the endless abyss where there were countless secrets hidden. Zhang Ruochen suspected that there were immortal vampire spies within Nether Heavenly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen got more suspicious when he saw the three palace rulers offering to guard the back.

'There's something wrong with them.'

Zhang Ruochen didn't have any evidence, and he didn't want to undermine the morale of the army now. He nodded mildly without saying anything.

All the saints from Blood God Sect thought Zhang Ruochen was only a second-trial pre-saint. Little did they know that his mind power and body constitution had reached the state of saint already.

Yuanzhou Elder was also concerned. He said to Zhang Ruochen, 'Hierarch wife's cultivation is unfathomable. Even if we activate Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod, we might not win. This battle is very critical, and you're the hope of Blood God Sect. Palace ruler Lan, palace ruler Yao and palace ruler Zuo should stay at the back.'

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, 'With the protection of three palace rulers, nobody can hurt me. All senior saints, you guys can make attacks at Mo You Valley, and we'll be responsible for the back.'

Chapter 1204 - A Bloody Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A huge battle erupted in Mo You Valley.

Whoosh, whoosh.

The Saints of the Blood God Sect used physical techniques to scatter instantly. They appeared in all directions of Mo You Valley, taking the most advantageous locations.

Night fell. An ivory moon appeared in the sky.

The Ancient Snow Mountain turned even colder. Chilly wind came from the sky, pouring onto the ground with beastly roars.

Rustles sounded in the miles-wide peach forest of Mo You Valley. Peach blossoms fell down like red rain, flying between the red buildings.

The Hierarch Madame sat in the peach forest. Her red robe spilled on the ground like a red cushion. Looking at the flower rain, she was calm. Her beautiful eyes glittered.

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin stood tall behind her, sketching curvy silhouettes.

The blossoms were beautiful; the people were even more beautiful.

Suddenly, Zhen Yin felt a murderous Qi from outside the valley. Her heart jumped. Eyes shining with dazzling light, she looked toward the sky.

Her expression changed as she stepped forward. "Master..."

The Hierarch Madame clearly sensed the situation outside the valley already. As soon as Zhen Yin spoke, she said, “Why are you panicking? I’ve been waiting for them. Since they’ve attacked first, none of them should dream about leaving alive.”

Thinking of her master’s powerful cultivation, Zhen Yin calmed down.

The other Saints in Mo You Valley also sensed danger arriving. They rushed out, appearing behind the Hierarch Madame, waiting diligently.

There were five Saint Elders of the Blood God Sect outside Mo You Valley: Yuan Xing, Yuan Zhou, Yuan Dian, Yuan Hu, and Yuan Quan. They wore loose blood robes and stood in the white wilderness.

An ancient purple tripod stood in the center of the five. It was 30 feet tall. It had four feet and two handles and was covered in dragon scale images.

This was the Ten Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod.

“Rise,” Elder Yuan Xing roared. He activated his Holy Qi first to pour into the ancient tripod.

Following him, the four other Saint Elders also sent out a pillar of Holy Qi into the tripod. Various runes appeared on it.

The tripod flew off of the ground. It became even bigger than a mountain. Hovering in the sky, it shone with brighter and brighter purple light.

Instantly, thousands of miles of the sky were covered with purple Qi. Bolts of lightning snaked through it with earsplitting booms.

A Ten Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon’s might was naturally horrifying. Merely the aura repressed all the Saints there.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Thousands of bolts of lightning flew out of the purple cloud. They fell like a sheet of rain and hit the defensive formation above Mo You Valley. Next, the Shocking Dragon Pattern

Tripod brought a cloud of purple Qi toward Mo You Valley and plummeted.

Boom.

The entire sky shook. Avalanches occurred within thousands of miles. The snowy peaks closest to Mo You Valley collapsed into flat land.

The power of the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod was too terrifying. It couldn't be stopped by human might. Even the Saints of the Blood God Sect gasped.

Finally, the defensive formation of Mo You Valley was broken. The hallucination shrouding it disappeared too, revealing the valley's true appearance.

There were no peach trees, blossoms, or pavilions in the valley. There were only buildings created from white bones and blood-red rivers and creeks. The beautiful scenery before were all fantasies created by spells.

Even the cultivators of Mo You valley were shocked. They didn't think that the place they'd lived and cultivated in was so bloody.

The Hierarch Madame was still calm. Looking at the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod hovering in the sky, she said in a pleasant voice, "Deity, you've still betrayed me in the end. Do you know the consequences?"

Her voice traveled hundreds of miles.

"I was never loyal to you," Zhang Ruochen said. "How can I betray you? Plus, you work for the Immortal Vampires. You are the enemy of humankind. Everyone will try to kill you."

The Hierarch Madame stood up beside the blood-red river. Her figure was slender and her skin was as white as jade. Her spirited eyes shone with cold light. "Everyone will try to kill me? But you people are not my opponent at all. All Saints of the Blood God Sect, listen to me. You can still retreat now. If you surrender, I will let you go."

"Madame," Elder Yuan Xing said. "No matter how advanced your cultivation is, you cannot stop the Shocking Dragon

Pattern Tripod.”

“Really?” The Madame sneered. “Elder Yuan Quan, are you still not going to attack?”

Elder Yuan Quan was an old woman with snowy hair. She was very low-key among the five Saint Elders and rarely ever spoke.

However, at that moment, her eyes turned dark red. She attacked the four other Saint Elders with the fastest speed and without warning. In that moment, all four Saint Elders were thrown out, heavily injured.

Elder Yuan Quan didn't stop. She continued to attack.

Poof, poof.

Her fingers doubled in length and sharp claws grew. They stabbed through Elder Yuan Dian's chest.

Elder Yuan Dian spat out saintly blood. Eyes widening, he said, “You...why did you...”

“There is no why. There is only death if you go against the Madame.”

Elder Yuan Quan's aged features twisted. She gouged out Elder Yuan Dian's saintly source. Her hands were covered in red blood that dripped to the ground. Then she slammed forward. Elder Yuan Dian's saintly corpse fell limply to the ground as a pile of flesh.

The remaining three Saint Elders—Yuan Xing, Yuan Zhou, and Yuan Hu—were all furious at this sight. They climbed back up.

Elder Yuan Quan stared coldly at them. Controlling the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod, she sent it at them.

“You two, retreat!” Elder Yuan Hu roared. He rushed out willingly, activating a God-connecting Technique. All his saintly blood burned and he unleashed ten times his cultivation as he crashed against the tripod.

Kaboom.

Elder Yuan Hu blocked the tripod's attack, but his saintly body was broken even more. His injuries worsened.

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou had fled to the distance. They looked back to see Elder Yuan Hu pick up the tripod. He transformed into a purple electric cloud and charged at Mo You Valley.

Right now, Elder Yuan Hu was completely risking his life. Not only was he trying to win more time for Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou to retreat, he also wanted to turn the tides by killing the Hierarch Madame.

Seeing the incoming purple electricity, Elder Yuan Quan was frightened too. She didn't dare go against Elder Yuan Hu who was risking his life. Using a physical technique, she hid to the left as a streak of light.

“Where are you fleeing to? Die!”

Elder Yuan Hu sent out the tripod to kill her.

Crackle.

Elder Yuan Quan couldn't escape. She was sent flying by the tripod and dense bloody cracks appeared on her body like spider webs.

Immediately following, Elder Yuan Hu attacked a second time. The tripod hit Elder Yuan Quan again, destroying her immediately.

In a few breaths' time, two Saint Elders had died.

The battle situation had changed so quickly that the Saints present couldn't even process everything.

Elder Yuan Hu was clear that his injuries were very grave and had forcefully used the God-connecting Technique. He could never heal again. Even if he somehow didn't die today, he would only have a few more years to live.

Even so, he still had to take another risk while he was still at his peak state.

“Fight.”

All his hair stood up straight. He grabbed the tripod in both hands and unleashed the last attack before death.

This attack used up all of his Holy Qi. It overlapped with the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod and crushed down on the Hierarch Madame.

As long as she was killed, the other enemies would be nothing to be afraid of.

Elder Yuan Hu, who'd used the God-connecting Technique, had unleashed ten times his own cultivation's power. Adding on the full power of his last attempt before death, this attack was even more terrifying.

He was confident that he could kill the Hierarch Madame.

When the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod plummeted, all the cultivators of Mo You Valley fell to the ground, unable to move in fear. Even Saints like Zhen Yin and Fan Yin were no exception.

Only the Hierarch Madame remained standing beside the river of blood. She lifted her eyes and reached out a pale jade-like hand. It transformed into a handprint that stretched for dozens of miles.

Elder Yuan Hu's desperate attack fell into the palm and only created a few ripples.

"No..." Elder Yuan Hu cried tragically, unable to accept this.

Sizzle, sizzle.

He'd used up all his power. In the flames, his body was slowly turned to dust. Only a translucent saintly source fell to the ground.

All the terrifying power dissipated.

The Hierarch Madame slowly put her hand away. The Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod shrunk to the size of her fist. It was delicate as it floated above her palm.

"I told you that you aren't my opponent," she said indifferently. "You just wouldn't listen."

The Saints of the Blood God Sect were all shocked. They held their breath, too scared to even breathe.

This was terrifying!

The Hierarch Madame now had the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod. This was like a tiger gaining supernatural powers. Who could fight against her now?

“Submit or die, it is time for you to decide now.” The Hierarch Madame’s disdainful eyes turned to the Blood God Sect Saints around Mo You Valley.

Chapter 1205 - Three Rulers of Nether Heavenly Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The five saint elders all had a tremendous amount of power, yet now, three of them were killed with their saint blood spilled on the ground, tainting the entire Mo You Valley red.

The saints from Blood God Sect stared at the hierarch wife in the valley, and they were all terrified.

The hierarch wife had reached the state of saint hundreds of years ago. How powerful was she now?

Elder Yuanxing and Elder Yuanzhou were both severely injured. They looked at the broken land, looking shocked. They didn't expect to be crushed this hard.

"I can't believe one of the saint elders works for the hierarch wife."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and sighed.

A lower-class saint elder performed an escape technique, trying to get away as fast as possible.

The hierarch wife curled the edge of her lips and moved her fingers.

A dragon shadow flew out of Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod, hitting that lower-class saint elder.

Peng.

The elder's body exploded, turning into a cluster of bloody clouds.

All the monks felt suffocated. He couldn't even run away using the escape technique, and he was a saint.

The three rulers of Nether Heavenly Palace, Lan Caiye, Yao Sheng, and Zuo Mu stood close to Zhang Ruochen. Blood mist gushed out of their bodies.

Lan Caiye put one hand of his over the other and saluted at Mo You Valley. He said, "All hail the new hierarch of Blood God Sect."

The ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace had submitted himself to the hierarch wife, which moved some of the saints who weren't perseverant enough.

Even the ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace had submitted himself, so there was no reason they made themselves enemies of the hierarch wife.

It was always better to live than to die.

Elder Yuanxing yelled, "Can't believe you're also working for him, Lan Caiye!"

Lan Caiye looked scornful and said, "Elder Yuanxing, I suggest that you stop fighting the hierarch wife. Say sorry to our new hierarch and pledge your allegiance to her. She will pardon you for offending her just now."

Ke Ke.

The face of Elder Yuanxing turned red. He couldn't control his emotions anymore, with holy Qi tumbling in his body. His injuries got worse.

Elder Yuanzhou was also furious. He would've attacked him.

Lan Caiye knew that the reason why the saints from Blood God Sect hadn't submitted was that Elder Yuanzhou and Elder Yuanxing were still alive.

If he could kill them both, he would crush the minds of the saints from Blood God Sect completely.

"Then I'll kill you both now."

Lan Caiye performed a saint spell, and two blood-red rivers showed up, flowing around his arms, attacking both Elder

Yuanxing and Elder Yuanzhou.

Lan Caiye was the leader of all the palace rulers, and he was at the Sky-connecting realm already.

If Elder Yuanxing and Elder Yuanzhou were still at their prime, Lan Caiye might have been intimidated. However, both the saint elders had been severely injured, so he dared fight them both at the same time.

It would be a huge contribution if he could kill the two saint elders.

Meanwhile, the two palace rulers also made attacks.

“Deity, the stupidest thing you’ve done is to betray our hierarch. Now, you will pay for what you did.”

Yao Sheng spit out a black chain that was as thick as an arm. Hua La La. The black spread toward Zhang Ruochen.

At the top of the black chain was a ferocious human head, and there was green ghost fire burning.

It was a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon called Ghost King Chain.

It was said that the head of the chain was the head of a true saint, which contained its power.

To all the monks there, it was a piece of cake for Yao Sheng to catch a second-trial pre-saint as an upper-class saint.

All the saints from Blood God Sect sighed as they had already figured the tragic ending for Gu Linfeng, and the torture he would suffer.

The next moment, the eyes of all the saints popped with astonishment.

A giant dragon shadow that was over a thousand feet long emerged on the arm of Gu Linfeng, making rumbling dragon sounds.

Peng.

He slapped the head of the ghost king chain, turning it around.

Gu Linfeng didn't seize the chance to run. Instead, he approached Yao Sheng quickly using a mysterious pace technique.

Gu Linfeng pushed forward near Yao Sheng, trying to attack him.

"Is that Gu Linfeng being suicidal?"

"A second-trial pre-saint dares attack an upper-class saint. He's mad! He's definitely mad!"

...

Only Yao Sheng knew that Gu Linfeng wasn't a weak being.

The strength and techniques he used to ward off the ghost king chain didn't belong to any second-trial pre-saint.

Yao Sheng spread his legs, and he lowered his body. Bronze muscles emerged from his arms, and he pushed forward his palms, forming two gigantic holy Qi whirlpools.

Hong Long.

The four palms clashed with each other, sinking the ground, forming a giant pit that had a diameter of three hundred feet.

At the bottom of the pit, their palms were still clashing with each other in a stalemate.

Zhang Ruochen's hair waved, and all the one hundred and forty-four apertures in his body were opened, emanating gleaming light as if there were one hundred and forty-four stars shining in the sky.

"His body is sanctified..."

All the saints were shocked by the shining apertures on Gu Linfeng's body.

Sanctifying bodies had tremendous meaning. Gu Linfeng, with endless potential, would definitely become an overlord.

He was totally qualified to be the hierarch of Blood God Sect.

But now, Gu Linfeng didn't have any chance to grow. The hierarch wife wouldn't let him go easily.

“The body of Gu Linfeng is stronger than other saints. He’s already able to rival an upper-class saint shortly after he reached the state of saint.”

“That’s right. Other creatures don’t have this power right after they sanctify their bodies.”

The gaps between each realm were huge after the state of saint. It was inconceivable for someone who had just sanctified his body to rival a senior upper-class saint.

A scream came from behind Yao Sheng.

The female sharing a body with Yao Sheng exhaled sound waves, forming tens of thousands of sword-shaped phantoms, turning into a sword river, hitting the chest of Zhang Ruochen.

It was too close for Zhang Ruochen to dodge it.

Zhang Ruochen had to utilize his Ten Saints Blood Armor, covering his whole body and warding off the sound wave sword river.

Hong!

Zhang Ruochen’s body trembled and flew away.

Yao Sheng seized this chance, stepped forward and performed a saint spell palm technique, hitting Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

The palm turned into a savage beast claw print which was more than thirty feet long, emanating a pungent bloody smell.

Zhang Ruochen flew in the sky. He gathered his power again and performed Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.

The phantom of Lord Pluto that was forty feet tall emerged behind Zhang Ruochen, performing a palm print.

Hong Long.

The claw that was more than forty feet long disintegrated into chaotic destruction Qi and hitting back at Yao Sheng.

Yao Sheng snorted and stepped a thousand feet away.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was hit on the chest by Ghost King Chain. Although Ten Saints Blood Armor dissolved most of

the power, he was still severely injured, and his organs were cracked.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't stop spitting out blood.

With the cover of Ten Saints Blood Armor, nobody could see that. Zhang Ruochen was still standing still on the ground with forceful holy Qi flowing around him.

“Gu Linfeng is impressive. He's already able to rival an upper-class saint. Ten more years, there'll be no one who can fight him in Blood God Sect.”

Gu Linfeng had grown so fast that the saints from Blood God Sect all recognized the potential of the younger generation.

Yao Sheng looked surprised as he thought he could easily defeat Gu Linfeng, but he didn't expect Gu Linfeng to be so difficult to deal with.

...

In another direction, the vice ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace attacked Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Zhu Hongtao, and Wan Ke, meaning to kill them all as quickly as possible.

Zuo Mu had already reached Xuanhuang Realm with Xuanhuang Holy Qi flowing in his body. He was a top-tier great being.

However, he was encircled after getting there.

Zhu Hongtao was also at Xuanhuang Realm, and he was a Taigu remain, so his power was much stronger than those of Xuanhuang Realm.

“Do you really think you can fight me? Down!”

Zhu Hongtao waved his hands and hit the left shoulder of Zuo Mu, knocking Zuo Mu away, who hit a mountain.

The mountain collapsed and covered him.

Both Huang Yanchen and Wan Ke wielded holy swords and performed saint-spell level sword techniques, hitting downwards, making Zuo Mu scream in agony.

“Damn it! I’ll kill all of you!” Zuo Mu roared, and dozens of blood-red light pillars gushed out of his body. He pinched his fist and wielded two holy swords, rushing out of the mountain.

However, just as Zuo Mu ascended seventy-five feet high, Zhu Hongtao dashed toward him like an artillery shell. His palms that were large as cattail leaf fans pressed Zuo Mu’s head into the ground.

Zuo Mu was encircled again, and he was crushed.

Blue Dragon Emperor walked out of Mo You Valley and walked to the hierarch wife. He said, “Grand master, please let me join the fight.”

Blue Dragon Emperor couldn’t loathe Gu Linfeng more. He had to suppress it because the hierarch wife valued Gu Linfeng a lot.

But now, Gu Linfeng had betrayed the hierarch wife, so Blue Dragon Emperor didn’t have any concerns anymore. He wanted to cut Gu Linfeng into pieces.

Chapter 1206 - Grand Duel

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

As a Saint in the Heaven Pass Realm, the Blue Dragon Emperor was very confident in killing Gu Linfeng. As long as he was given the chance, he would definitely turn Gu Linfeng to ashes.

The Hierarch Madame nodded, allowing him.

“Thank you, Master.”

A menacing smile flashed past the Blue Dragon Emperor’s eyes. He rushed out like wind, transforming into a long blue dragon. He landed on a mountain near Zhang Ruochen.

Powerful Holy Qi radiated from him. Each shred turned into a dragon’s shadow. It was like he was surrounded by thousands of dragons and had unbeatable might.

“Gu Linfeng, where’s Mo Yin?” he thundered.

Zhang Ruochen stood between the Blue Dragon Emperor and Yao Sheng. Facing these two mighty Saints, he didn’t show any fear. He just smiled. “She died, of course.”

“How dare you!”

The Blue Dragon Emperor had already predicted this, but after confirming it, he was still furious. Clenching his fists, his arms crackled and popped.

The Saints of the Blood God Sect all sighed. Gu Linfeng’s talent could’ve led the sect to a golden age, but he was going to die today. The Blood God Sect’s last hope would be killed too.

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou entered an intense battle. They wanted to break through the obstacles to save Gu Linfeng. However, Lan Caiye didn't give them the chance. He attacked with two Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, starting two bursts of Destruction of the Thousand Pattern. They pressed down above the two Saint Elders.

The two Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons were a water dragon and fire dragon pearl. They hovered in the air like a blue and red star, radiating with icy and fiery energy.

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou were both gravely hurt. They could only defend with all their might to fend off the destructive water and fire dragon pearls.

“Hierarch Madame, please spare the Deity,” Elder Yuan Xing said, spitting out blood. “I am willing to submit to you.”

He was clear that, as long as Gu Linfeng could leave, he could fight back to the Blood God Sect after completing his cultivation. Even if the sect was invaded by the Immortal Vampires, he could still drive them out and continue developing the heritage of the sect.

Elder Yuan Zhou raised both hands to push off the Destruction of the Thousand Pattern from the water dragon pearl. His entire body shook. “As long as you let the Deity go, I am willing to submit.”

The Hierarch Madame's eyes were calm. “Kill Gu Linfeng to cut out future threats.”

Clearly, she thought that Gu Linfeng was a huge threat. Since she couldn't make him work for her, she had to take him out.

“Gu Linfeng, no one can save you today! Die! Haha!”

The Blue Emperor Dragon laughed loudly. He slammed the ground with both hands. Two bursts of blue energy flooded out. It ripped the ground apart and a crack extended toward Zhang Ruochen.

Even the earth was separated. One could imagine just how powerful the bursts of energy were.

Yao Sheng shook his head. Faced with a Heaven Pass Realm Saint, even he would find it hard to escape, let alone Gu Linfeng.

Thinking of this, Yao Sheng immediately used a physical technique to retreat and avoid being hurt accidentally.

Zhang Ruochen didn't hide. Instead, he lifted his head and looked up in the air. "What exactly is old Chu doing?" he muttered. "Why isn't he fighting yet? Is he going to wait until the last moment to show up?"

With Chu Siyuan's personality, he might really be waiting for the chance for everyone's eyes to be on him. After all, he was the leader of the Art Sect—a top-tier figure. How could he come out so easily? How could he express his importance?

When the crack was only 30 feet from Zhang Ruochen, purple light appeared in the sky. It fell down and landed between Zhang Ruochen and the Blue Dragon Emperor, transforming into a middle-aged man in official clothing.

It was Yue Shuzi, the administrator of the Tiantai State.

With a boom, the torn earth was mended. Hit by an invisible force, the Blue Dragon Emperor let out a grunt. Losing balance, he took dozens of steps back.

"It's...him."

"The mountain gate is closed and the defensive formation is already activated. How did Yue Shuzi come in? Did the imperial court's army already invade us?"

The Saints of the Blood God Sect were all discussing this, wondering what had happened.

They all knew Yue Shuzi, but the Blue Dragon Emperor didn't.

"Who is this?"

He felt terrifying saintly might on Yue Shuzi. It was psychological pressure.

Yue Shuzi didn't reply to him. He just hmped. "You have the aura of the Blue Dragon Void World and have such advanced

cultivation. You must be the Blue Dragon Emperor.”

“You have good eyesight. I am indeed the Blue Dragon Emperor.”

He knew that Yue Shuzi was powerful, but he had the Hierarch Madame behind him. He didn't fear anyone. Plus, with his Heaven Pass Realm cultivation, he could look down on all the Saints in the world.

“No matter who you are, you can only die for working for the Immortal Vampires.”

Yue Shuzi extended his right hand. His fingers formed a print technique. Four lines of light emerged from his fingertips and sketched a picture of a black skeleton.

The skeleton walked out of the art scroll. It reached out a 70-meter-long bony arm to hit the Blue Dragon Emperor's head.

Poof.

The Blue Dragon Emperor's chest was penetrated by a bony finger. Sainly blood flowed out, but his cultivation was advanced enough to forcefully break free.

With a whoosh, a bronze crescent broadsword flew out of his Sea of Qi. He poured all his Holy Qi into the sword.

The bronze broadsword was like a dark and cold moon. It radiated with sharp broadsword Qi. It hacked down and shattered the black skeleton with a thud.

The Blue Dragon Emperor attacked a second time at Yue Shuzi.

Seeing the incoming bronze broadsword, Yue Shuzi didn't show any fear. He just said two words: “Flower bloom.”

A white lotus solidified out of nothing before him. It shone with eye-catching saintly light and clashed with the sword.

Kaboom!

The Blue Dragon Emperor flew backward. The bloody hole in his chest expanded quickly and spread through his body. His entire body was going to be ripped apart. White bones showed in some parts.

The white lotus was just too powerful, so much so that even the Blue Dragon Emperor lost his combat ability.

Before he could land on the ground, Yue Shuzi attacked again. He pointed forward and a beam of light flew out of his fingertip. It hit the Blue Dragon Emperor's head. With a boom, half of the Blue Dragon Emperor's body exploded. Only the remnants of his corpse fell to the ground.

All the cultivators in the area fell silent. They stared at Yue Shuzi in fear. Just how terrifying was his cultivation to be able to kill a Heaven Pass Realm Saint so easily?

Lan Caiye, Elder Yuan Xing, and Elder Yuan Zhou stopped fighting. Even Zuo Mu, sub-leader of the Nether Heavenly Palace, was beaten into a pile of mush by Zhu Hongtao.

As another lord from the Tiantai State, Lan Caiye was clear about Yue Shuzi's abilities. His brows creased. "This is the Blood God Sect's inner conflict. It's not suitable for the imperial court to get involved!"

Yue Shuzi smiled. "I was invited by the Deity to come to the Blood God Sect. I heard people here are working for the Immortal Vampires. The imperial court has no choice but to come clear them out."

Lan Caiye looked at Zhang Ruochen, eyes flashing coldly. This guy really did invite helpers.

He could even invite Yue Shuzi. Lan Caiye had really underestimated him.

Lan Caiye knew that he wasn't Yue Shuzi's opponent, so he looked toward the Hierarch madame.

However, her attention wasn't on Yue Shuzi. She raised her pretty face and her spirited eyes looked at the clouds in the sky. Smiling beautifully, she said, "We're old friends. Since you've already come to Mo You Valley, why don't you show yourself?"

Everyone was confused. They wanted to know who the Hierarch Madame was speaking to. Had another strong cultivator arrived at the Blood God Sect?

Stepping on a cloud of purple Qi, Chu Siyuan flew out of the clouds like an ethereal being. He stopped 100 feet from the ground and looked down. “The talented Blood God Sect Saintess from before is as young and beautiful as before. I am so envious.”

“The Art Master, one of the four masters of the Confucius Way, was once handsome. After hundreds of years, you’ve become so old.”

The Hierarch Madame shook her head softly, a mesmerizing smile hanging on her face.

Chu Siyuan’s mind wavered. He seemed to have been dragged back to centuries ago. The current Hierarch Madame was identical to the Blood God Sect Saintess from before. She hadn’t changed at all.

Chu Siyuan quickly awoke with a start, cold sweat forming. Her Spiritual Power...he thought. She can affect me... How is this possible...

After all, the Hierarch Madame focused on martial arts, and then Spiritual Power. On the other hand, Chu Siyuan only cultivated Spiritual Power and nothing else.

Under these circumstances, the Hierarch madame could still use Spiritual Power to affect him. This was a bit frightening.

Chu Siyuan’s eyes turned extremely serious. “Madame, you’ve been cultivating in seclusion in Mo You Valley these years. You’ve really reached an incredible state and even I can’t guess the level!”

The Hierarch Madame smiled. “To be honest, you shouldn’t have come. There aren’t many cultivators of our generation still alive. The number decreases with each death. Cultivation isn’t easy. I advise you to leave and avoid the turbid waters.”

Chu Siyuan straightened his back. “Back then, I faced the Deities of the seven ancient sects without even furrowing my brows. Even more, I cannot back away today. Let us fight. Since we’ve already gone opposite each other, we must produce a life and death.”

Chapter 1207 - Unrivalled She-Devil

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Saint Painter Chu Siyuan was definitely a prominent being in Kunlun's Field, a grandmaster.

Both Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife were gathering their holy might, and the forces coming from them got stronger and stronger.

A blue cloud showed up above Chu Siyuan's head. Tens of thousands of characters emerged on the cloud.

The hierarch wife stood on the ground. A bloody Qi whirlpool was formed, centering on her body, connecting the sky and the land.

Both of them were notable people who had garnered their fame hundreds of years ago. Their cultivation was unfathomable. If they fought each other, it would be earth-shattering, destroying this entire area.

All the saints from Blood God Sect retreated as they felt the danger.

As for the monks in Mo You Valley, they were still groveling on the ground because of the forces.

"I've already said everything I need to say. If you want death, then I'll give it to you." The voice of hierarch wife came out of the bloody Qi.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't see the figures of the hierarch wife and Chu Siyuan on the outside. He could only see the blue clouds and red whirlpools quickly moving, clashing in the sky.

The two traces of terrific power trembled the space around them. The sky and land were turned upside down as if the entire world was about to crumble.

Hua.

A white character flew out of the chaotic energies, falling beside a lower-class saint.

A pit with a diameter of hundreds of feet showed up on the ground.

Half the body of the lower-class saint was broken, and there was blood everywhere on his body. Fortunately, his heart and head weren't injured, so he survived.

“He was already three hundred miles away, yet he was still shocked by the waves coming from the fight. Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife are terrific. Let's keep stepping back.”

“A mere character was able to kill a saint. This is terrifying.”

...

Even those saints couldn't stay calm. They tried to get away as far as possible.

Zhang Ruochen didn't step back. He was still watching the fight between Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife using his Heavenly Eyes.

This was a crucial fight, and Chu Siyuan had to win.

If he lost, Blood God Sect would also be lost for good.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen stayed and took out two saint level Blood Repression Runes, hoping that he could help Chu Siyuan during the critical moments.

Yue Shuzi also chose to stay, standing beside a crack and looking at the sky.

Yue Shuzi also had great cultivation, but he was not in the class of Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife, which was why he could only stand aside to wait for a chance.

Yue Shuzi took a look behind him, staring at Zhang Ruochen, and said, “Leave this area now. Any after-effect from that fight

can annihilate you.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't step back, instead, he rushed toward the center of the battlefield.

It was pretty obvious that Chu Siyuan was weaker than the hierarch wife, as the blue cloud formed by Chu Siyuan was swallowed by the blood-red whirlpool, and it got thinner and thinner.

Chu Siyuan was about to lose!

Yue Shuzi also sensed that. He stopped caring about Zhang Ruochen, looking worried.

“Nine Dragon Out Ocean.”

The voice of the hierarch wife echoed in the area of one thousand square miles.

Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod flew out of her hand, and nine dragon phantoms that were three thousand feet long rushed out of the tripod, making deafening dragon sounds, piercing through the blue cloud and hitting Chu Siyuan.

“Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.”

Chu Siyuan unfolded his ‘Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map,’ and a crowd of human phantoms emerged on the scroll, clashing with the Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod.

Pu Chi.

Chu Siyuan spit out blood and flew one hundred miles away.

His face turned pale, and most of his forces were gone. His once gleaming eyes dimmed.

Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map was the true treasure of ‘Ten Thousand Inscription Saint Weapons Rank,’ and it was ranked higher than Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod.

Chu Siyuan now realized that it wasn't because of the weapons that he'd been beaten, but his cultivation.

Qiu Yichi's cultivation is inconceivably high, Chu Siyuan thought.

The hierarch wife held Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod up, stepping on a bloody Qi bridge and walking toward him. She said, “Chu Siyuan, you didn’t refine yourself hard enough. You’re falling behind.’

Chu Siyuan was upset. He sneered, “I have never slacked on refining. You must have run into some other opportunities. It has to do with immortal vampires, doesn’t it?”

“There’s no need to talk about this now.”

The hierarch wife raised her hand, and the dragon sound came out of Shocking Dragon Pattern Tripod. It became larger and larger, supressing toward Chu Siyuan.

Chu Siyuan was her greatest obstacle. Once she killed him, nobody could stop her from taking control of Blood God Sect.

“Seven Lives Seven Deaths, Seven Huge Worlds.”

Vigorous forces gushed out of Chu Siyuan’s body, and each trace of the force was as wide as a river, infusing them into ‘Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.’

The phantoms of seven worlds showed up as if they were seven floating towers.

Shocking Dragon Patterns Tripod clashed with Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. Tens of thousands of inscriptions shuttled back and forth in the sky, which was covered by turbulence. Even a hundred patterns saint weapon would be immediately crushed.

Yue Shuzi stood below Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife. He took out a stamp made of jade and pressed toward the hierarch wife.

There were only nine official stamps of Administrator Points. They were all made by the Ministry of Divinity. Although they couldn’t rival heir stamps, they were still top-tier true treasures, and they were as powerful as ten thousand patterns saint weapons.

Yue Shuzi was the most powerful being in the state of Tiantai, so he was exceptional.

“Kill.”

Yue Shuzi roared, and the official stamp became hundreds of miles long, approaching the hierarch wife.

The hierarch wife fought Chu Siyuan while pressing her other hand toward that official stamp.

Peng.

The official stamp of Administrator Point fell on the ground, injuring Yue Shuzi.

Yue Shuzi now realized the gap between his power and the hierarch wife's. If it was not for his master, he would've been killed by the hierarch wife.

It was very difficult for Chu Siyuan to resist the hierarch wife. There was blood slipping out of his pores when he was carrying 'Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.' He felt that his body was about to explode.

All the saints from Blood God Sect were worried, as it seemed that Chu Siyuan couldn't hold it anymore. He might be killed by the hierarch wife.

If Chu Siyuan died, there would be no one capable of stopping the hierarch wife.

If they didn't submit to the hierarch wife, they would be killed as well.

"Even Yue Shuzi and Saint Painter were crushed. Who in the world can still rival her?"

"The hierarch wife has become an unrivaled she-devil. Only less than a few female human monks can rival her in Kunlun's Field now."

...

At this moment, people saw a young person rushing toward Chu Siyuan and the hierarch wife.

"That's... Gu Linfeng? How dare he get into the fight between Saint Painter and the hierarch wife? It's suicide."

All the monks were shocked, as they didn't know what Gu Linfeng wanted to do.

The hierarch wife shot a glance at Zhang Ruochen as if she were a God looking down at an ant. She exhaled.

The breeze she exhaled turned into destructive wind power.

Traces of wind blades that were dozens of feet long traveled in the air, making cracking sounds.

She reckoned she could kill Gu Linfeng with one blow.

Zhang Ruochen was very reflexive. He dodged all the wind blades like a lightning, and he arrived only a hundred feet away from the hierarch wife.

“He’s got some power.”

The hierarch wife had to admit that she had underestimated Gu Linfeng, so she made a second attack.

Nine hairs were detached from her head, growing longer and slashing toward Zhang Ruochen as if they were nine blades.

The saintly way rules contained in the nine hairs were irresistible for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen looked firm, flying among the nine hairs, and wielding the two saint-level Blood Repression Runes.

Ci La.

A hair hit one saint-level Blood Repression Rune, cutting it in halves, which rendered it useless.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat, staring at another Blood Repression Rune. If the second Blood Repression Rune was destroyed, all hope would be lost.

Fortunately, the hierarch wife didn’t know of the power of Blood Repression Rune, so she didn’t take any precautionary measures.

The second Blood Repression Rune flew to the hierarch wife.

Peng.

Blood Repression Rune exploded and turned into white chains, covering the hierarch wife, suppressing the bloody Qi inside her.

“No!”

The hierarch wife was dazed. She immediately mobilized the holy Qi and bloody Qi inside her body, trying to break the shackles.

Peng Peng.

The hierarch wife was so powerful that she was actually breaking the chains on her.

“That strong?”

Zhang Ruochen looked upset.

He could sense the anger of the hierarch wife. Once the hierarch wife broke the suppression, she would kill him.

It was already impressive that Zhang Ruochen could be a part of the battle.

He didn't stand a chance against the hierarch wife.

He looked to Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi as they were the only hope he had.

Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi seized the great chance and fought back, operating 'Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map' and the official stamp, pressing toward the hierarch wife.

Hong Long.

The hierarch wife fell onto the ground under the attacks of both weapons.

The land crumbled completely, and Mo You Valley was leveled. As for the half saints and saints in Mo You Valley, they were all killed and turned into ashes.

Chapter 1208 - King of Saints

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There had been a dozen Saints in Mo You Valley, including the survivors of the Blue Dragon Dynasty and the disciples of the Hierarch Madame.

However, suppressed by the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map and Administrator Print, the dozen Saints and many Half-Saints were all turned to dust. None of them survived.

It was too tragic!

Usually, a Saint dying was a big event. Countless cultivators would mourn for him. However, dozens of Saints had died in the chaos of the Black Market's headquarters and Blood God Sect. One could imagine just how intense this storm was. It could shock the entire world and the chain effect was unpredictable.

After all, each Saint had a large force behind him. The death of each Saint would disrupt the force.

This battle gave the Saints of the Blood God Sect a new understanding of Gu Linfeng. This Deity was too courageous and resolute. He dared to get involved in the fight between the Art Saint and the Hierarch Madame, and even played a critical role.

Who still dared to say that Gu Linfeng was only a timid junior?

Who still dared to say that Gu Linfeng wasn't qualified to become the next Hierarch?

A Saint who once disliked Gu Linfeng now lamented, “Perhaps...Gu Linfeng really can bring hope to the Blood God Sect. In the future, we might be able to rise up again.”

“Was the Hierarch Madame truly killed?”

“She should be dead already. No matter how advanced her cultivation is, she can’t take both the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map and Administrator Print’s attack.

Some of the Saints looked toward the broken earth. They didn’t lower their guards, thinking that the Hierarch Madame couldn’t have died so easily.

Lan Caiye and Yao Sheng of the Nether Heavenly Palace looked at the flattened Mo You Valley and the burning saintly blood. They also thought that the Hierarch Madame had already died.

“Leave immediately. We cannot stay here.”

Lan Caiye and Yao Sheng didn’t dare to stay there. They both cast escape spells, unleashing meteorite-like speed and fled in different directions.

Chu Siyuan stood in the air. Sensing that Lan Caiye and Yao Sheng wanted to escape, his eyes darkened. He raised his right hand.

The Holy Qi that flooded from his palm swept up the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. The scroll opened completely, releasing seven-colored light. The seven worlds were shown again. They lined up and formed a hovering tower. It flew and quickly caught up to Lan Caiye.

“No, I cultivated for 300 years. I will not die today...”

Lan Caiye clenched his teeth. The water and fire dragon pearls flew out of her hands and rushed into the air.

The two dragon pearls were blue and red, cold and hot. They spun quickly, forming a 30-mile-long circular print. It sucked over all the Spiritual Qi.

However, this was to no avail before the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. The seven worlds pressed down with

destructive force and broke the circular print formed by the two pearls.

Thud, thud.

Two booms sounded afterward.

The two pearls were like Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. They exploded and were turned to powder. Blazing heat and icy cold were released, scorching 100 miles of land while sealing another 100 miles in ice.

Lan Caiye used a God-connecting Spell to release ten times the cultivation power. He pushed his arms up, but it only lasted for a moment.

The next moment, tiny cracks snaked through his body like it was made out of porcelain.

Boom.

Lan Caiye's physical body and saintly soul were both destroyed.

Yet another Heaven Pass Realm Saint had died. All the Blood God Sect cultivators present felt suffocated. They couldn't imagine just how terrifying Chu Siyuan's power was.

Old Chu can't have passed the Saint Realm and become a Spiritual Saint King, right? Zhang Ruochen thought.

After all, Saint Kings were definitely the kings of Kunlun's Field. They'd all lived for close to 1,000 years. Even Saints might not be able to see traces of them.

Even Sword Saint Xuanji, Jiuyou, and Zangyue—the three major Sword Saints of the eastern region—were only Saints. They were already the strongest figures of the eastern region, not counting the underground figures.

At first, Zhang Ruochen had only thought that Chu Siyuan was in the eighth realm of the Saint Realm, like the three Sword Saints. Now, it seemed that he was in an even higher level.

Of course, it was possible that he hadn't reached the Saint King Realm yet, but he was able to release this destructive force by using the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

The difference in cultivation was too large. Zhang Ruochen couldn't distinguish Chu Siyuan and the Hierarch Madame's cultivations at all. He could only guess.

In the other end, the lord and sub-lords of the Earth Heavenly Palace went after the fleeing Yao Sheng. They vanished off the end of the horizon.

“Is it all over?”

Elder Yuan Zhou let out a relieved breath. He sat down with some exhaustion. Taking a healing pill, he activated Holy Qi to refine the medical properties of the pill.

Suddenly, his brows arched. His eyes opened again and he uttered, “No.”

He wasn't the only one who sensed danger. All the Saints present felt a horrifying energy wave surge out of the ground. Even the Saints felt fear from the power. It was even stronger than from Chu Siyuan's duel with the Hierarch Madame.

Kaboom.

Scalding lava spewed out of the broken earth, accompanied by black smoke and hundreds of red sparks. It was like a dormant volcano that suddenly came back to life.

Zhang Ruochen inhaled sharply. He felt the strong Qi attack and flew backward uncontrolled.

“Is she...not dead?”

As he flew back, Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eyes and looked toward the spewing lava. He saw a beautiful woman clad in a red robe standing at the top of the volcano, at the heart of the dust and lightning.

She had four pairs of red feathery wings, different from the flesh wings of the Immortal Vampires but very similar. Her black hair was now hundreds of thousands of feet long. It floated in the air, each strand flowing with saintly light.

One strand flew toward a nearby mountain. The peak was chopped off, collapsing with a boom.

She didn't die. She's even more terrifying now.

Zhang Ruochen saw her features clearly. She looked as beautiful as a fairy but also demonic. It was Qiu Yichi, the Hierarch Madame.

All the Saints of the Blood God Sect gaped.

Next, they felt a burst of icy strength. As if falling into an icy valley, they trembled all over. Their limbs couldn't help but shake.

Chu Siyuan held the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. His entire body tensed and he held his breath. "Just what state have you reached?"

The Hierarch Madame stepped in the air and walked out of the black smoke. Hundreds of lightning bolts streaked on her body. "If you all didn't force me," she said coolly, "I wouldn't have had a breakthrough so quickly."

In that moment, Zhang Ruochen finally confirmed something. Just then, the Hierarch Madame had broken through the barrier and reached the Saint King Realm.

She was a king among Saints.

Suffering from the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map with the Administrator Print, the Hierarch madame had many injuries. Some of them were fatal to the typical cultivator. But now, her wounds were quickly healing.

Her energy waves kept increasing and strengthening.

Chu Siyuan knew that he wasn't her match. He looked toward Zhang Ruochen, clearly asking if he had any Saint Realm Blood Repression Runes.

They could only have a chance if they used a Saint Realm Blood Repression Rune.

Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly and shook his head.

Chu Siyuan's expression turned even more bitter than Zhang Ruochen, but he quickly recovered his will.

Extremely strong Spiritual Power flooded out of Chu Siyuan's body and into the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

“I will stop her. Yue Shuzi, take the boy and escape immediately. Get as far as possible.”

Chu Siyuan’s expression was resolute. After giving this command, he strode forward and took the initiative to attack the Hierarch Madame.

The Saints of the Blood God Sect also knew that Chu Siyuan was prepared to risk his life with Hierarch Madame to give everyone time to escape.

Whoosh, whoosh.

Sounds of wind came one after another. All the cultivators used their fastest speed to whizz off in all directions.

This way, no matter how strong the Hierarch Madame, she couldn’t kill everyone.

The Hierarch Madame stared at Chu Siyuan across from her. Her lips curled up into a both cruel yet attractive smile. “I am now a king among the Saints. What can you do to me?”

She reached out a slender finger and pressed forward. It was only a finger, but it carried unmatched penetrative force.

“Seven lives and seven deaths, seven worlds.”

Chu Siyuan spat a mouthful of blood onto the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. The seven worlds appeared again. They were more solid and majestic than before, shining with blood-red light.

However, the Hierarch Madame’s finger passed through them easily, hitting Chu Siyuan’s chest.

Poof, poof.

Even though Chu Siyuan’s body was wrapped in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, his chest was still stabbed through. His entire body caved in. Blood flowed out of him, dyeing the scroll red.

Yue Shuzi’s eyes were bloodshot. Flames of anger burned in him, but he controlled himself. He hurried to Zhang Ruochen’s side and grabbed his left shoulder. “Come with me.”

“Wait.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a ratty rune scroll. Holding it, he activated his Holy Qi and inserted it. The scroll was like a scrap of paper. One would worry about accidentally tearing it.

“What are you doing now? Don’t you know that my Master may die at any time, just to help us have a chance to escape?”

Yue Shuzi was frustrated. He ignored Zhang Ruochen and prepared to drag him away forcefully.

Whoosh!

Just then, specks of red light emerged from Zhang Ruochen’s rune scroll. They were like fire but also like small spatters of blood.

Chapter 1209 - Saint Figure Rune

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

That rugged rune was left to Zhang Ruochen by Taishang Elder before he went to the second level of the endless abyss. The elder claimed that it had tremendous power.

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe it in the first place. After all, the rune was rugged, and it was nothing like a piece of used paper.

Zhang Ruochen only infused his holy Qi inside to have a try, but he didn't expect the rune to change.

The red dots on the rune became thicker, and they started to spread.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know how to use this rune, but there was a trace of consciousness in his head teaching him how to use it.

Zhang Ruochen found out surprisingly that the weird trace of consciousness came from that rune.

The rune seemed to have a life, which merged with the consciousness of Zhang Ruochen.

“Combine.”

Zhang Ruochen bit his finger and drew a blood trace on the rune.

And then, he put the rune on his chest. Hua La! The rune merged with his skin, and there was only a rune character left on his chest.

Peng.

The thickly-dotted red spots gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's chest, knocking Yue Shuzi away.

Yue Shuzi barely balanced himself, staring at Zhang Ruochen, "So powerful. Where did that come from?"

Yue Shuzi was sure that the power didn't belong to Zhang Ruochen.

...

Half the body of Chu Siyuan had already caved in the sky. He was only supporting himself with his willpower, otherwise, he would've fallen completely.

However, he was already a dead end. He couldn't fight back at the hierarch wife at all.

The hierarch wife walked toward him, waved her bloody wings, looking seductive and forceful. Even the air and light didn't dare get close to her.

"If you had chosen to stay in Painting Sect, you could've stayed alive. Now you've meddled with issues in Blood God Sect," the hierarch wife said, in a commanding position.

The hierarch wife had already reached the level of saint kings, so when she looked at Chu Siyuan, it was as if she were looking at an ant.

Only those at the same level were qualified to talk to her.

Apparently, Chu Siyuan didn't have the privilege to talk to her anymore.

Chu Siyuan didn't look miserable at all. Instead, he laughed and said, "You just made breakthrough one step ahead of me. Winners live. That's the rule. You might kill me today, but the other great beings from Way of Confucius will definitely kill you one day."

Chu Siyuan knew that he wouldn't survive today, but he still looked sturdy. He stood up straight and glared at the hierarch wife.

Even if he was going to die, he would do that with dignity.

The saints from Blood God Sect took a look at the back and exclaimed. They admired Chu Siyuan while sighing for the death of Painting Saint.

This was originally the fight between immortal vampires and Blood God Sect, which had nothing to do with Chu Siyuan, yet he was willing to help the hierarch wife.

Which meant he was a way better person than lots of selfish saints.

“You’re solid.”

The hierarch wife’s eyes gleamed with a sense of killing. She reached out her right hand, and hundreds of bolts of lightning gathered toward her hand, turning into a lightning flood.

Chu Siyuan was about to be killed. Suddenly, someone yelled behind the hierarch wife.

The hierarch wife sensed something. She looked back, dazed.

A giant blood-red human shape stood up from the ground, stepping on the land, yet he was so tall that he could touch the clouds.

The giant human shape was formed by blood-red light spots.

All the saints from Blood God Sect could also sense that tremendous power, so they all stopped and looked toward that blood-red giant.

“That is... That is the saint figure of Taishang Elder. Did he come back?”

“Taishang Elder is fighting?”

...

All the monks were exhilarated as they believed Taishang Elder was able to solve everything.

Taishang Elder earned the name of ‘Tenth Emperor’ eight hundred years earlier, so even if he was injured, he could still outclass everyone in the world.

The hierarch wife was also shocked. She had to spin her arms and turn the lightning flood to the blood-red giant.

Zhang Ruochen stood inside the blood-red giant, slapping forward.

The blood-red giant also reached out a palm, pressing forward, disintegrating the lightning blood and knocking the hierarch wife away.

Hong Long.

The hierarch wife was in a fix. She fell onto the ground, cracking it.

Chu Siyuan's eyes popped as he could see that it was Zhang Ruochen standing inside the blood-red giant, not the tenth emperor.

“Where did that guy get such power?”

Chu Siyuan would rather get killed by the hierarch wife than be saved by Zhang Ruochen. Nor did he want to see such a powerful Zhang Ruochen.

It made no sense.

He was the master of Painting Sect, yet he needed saving by a youngster?

This couldn't be more humiliating.

The monks who didn't know the truth would definitely spread the rumor that the master of Painting Sect was crushed by a woman, and that he was eventually saved by the deity of Blood God Sect.

Chu Siyuan couldn't be more in pain thinking about that.

The hierarch wife saw the being inside the blood-red giant. She said, “Yan Liren gave you the Saint Figure Rune before he left.”

The giant caved, turning into billions of light spots, gathering on Zhang Ruochen's palm.

“Suppress.”

Zhang Ruochen growled, pressing down, and light rains fell from the palm.

The hierarch wife looked up, and the entire scene was gone. She could only see the sky pressing toward her, and each light spot looked like a star.

Pu Chi.

The mountains hundreds of square miles around had all been leveled.

The body of the hierarch wife was crushed. She didn't even have the human shape anymore; she looked like a lump of flesh.

She was severely injured. She drove a bloody cloud and flew away, transmitting her voice, "Gu Linfeng, I'll kill you after I recover and come back to Blood God Sect."

Zhang Ruochen didn't chase her because he could feel that the power of Saint Figure Run was declining.

Besides, he didn't know how powerful the saint king was. He might be crushed by the hierarch wife if he tried to chase her.

After a short while, the power of Saint Figure Rune dissipated, and Zhang Ruochen returned to his original level.

The rune character on Zhang Ruochen's chest had vanished, yet he could sense that the Saint Figure Rune was still there.

Yue Shuzi was the leader of a state. He was pretty well-informed on this. He said, "You can use the Saint Figure Rune multiple times, but you need to infuse holy Qi into it to wield its power again."

"Really?"

Zhang Ruochen tried to mobilize the holy Qi inside him and moved it to the chest.

He kept infusing holy Qi into it, yet it was instantly gone as if there were an abyss.

"It must take a long time to fill the Saint Figure Rune again."

Zhang Ruochen was relieved thinking about this.

He could wield the power of a saint king using Saint Figure Rune, so it definitely required an immense amount of holy Qi.

Saint Figure Rune was a true treasure that was craved by lots of saints.

Once he had a Saint Figure Rune, even truth saints and extreme saints wouldn't dare cross Zhang Ruochen. If Zhang Ruochen used Saint Figure Rune, they wouldn't be able to defend themselves.

Chu Siyuan landed on the ground, and he couldn't look weaker.

Yue Shuzi walked toward him.

When he walked to Zhang Ruochen, Chu Siyuan stood up straight and said, "Great power comes with great responsibilities. Stay on the right track, and if you turn evil, I will...cough...suppress you myself."

Chu Siyuan coughed out blood because he spoke too loudly.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He didn't understand why the elder Chu didn't show him any gratitude for saving his life.

It was unbelievable.

Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi left Blood God Sect and rushed back for recovery.

Chu Siyuan was severely injured. If he didn't make it back to heal himself in time, he would have lifelong ailments.

The saints from Blood God Sect came back and surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

Elder Yuanzhou and Elder Yuanxing gave each other a look, and they led all the other saints to bow to Zhang Ruochen. "Hierarch."

Saints didn't need to kneel for anyone. It was already a great feat to make them bow.

Taishang Elder gave Gu Linfeng the Saint Figure Rune because he wanted Gu Linfeng to inherit the hierarch position of Blood God Sect.

Taishang Elder was a holy being to all the saints. They would have to follow his decision.

Besides, Gu Linfeng's potential also won the approval from all the saints from Blood God Sect, so they recognized him as their new hierarch.

Chapter 1210 - The Blood Empress Hasn't Died?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen didn't reject the position of the Hierarch. He agreed without complaint.

The Blood God Sect was an ancient sect with a long and rich heritage. If he could become Hierarch, he would receive cultivation resources that the average Saint would never get.

For example, divine blood.

There was a deity's corpse in the Blood God Sect. According to legends, it was the corpse of the Blood God, the founder of the sect.

A deity's corpse was like a giant treasure chest. It contained an immense amount of divine blood.

Other than that, each part of the god's corpse was a treasure. The cloth that it was wrapped in, a piece of bone, a strand of hair... They were all treasures that Saints vied for.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen cared the most about the blood.

If I can receive a large amount of divine blood, I'll be able to create more Blood Repression Runes.

The chaos in the upper level of the Blood God Sect had ended. Practically all of the infiltrators and humans who worked for the Immortal Vampires had been killed.

Of course, a large number of Saints had died as well. The Blood God Sect was greatly affected. Minor unrest in the middle and lower levels continued. It would take more time for everything to settle completely.

Elder Yuan Zhou suggested inviting Saints from all over the world for a coronation ceremony.

Zhang Ruochen rejected this. He thought that the Blood God Sect should continue sealing itself off and reorganize the inside, working to raise its abilities. They could hold the ceremony after they'd settled down and become stronger.

...

...

News of the battle at the Black Market's headquarters spread. Not only did it shock Tiantai State, cultivators throughout the entire Kunlun's Field were in uproar.

The imperial court and Black Market had worked together to kill more than 20 Saints of the Huangtian Tribe. This even included Sir Mu Qian, the golden-robed elder of the Immortal Pavilion, and the Empress of the Huangtian Tribe.

There were rumors that Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen had participated in the battle, using the Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow to kill the Huangtian Empress.

All forces of the Tiantai State went on alert. They were afraid that this unrest would affect them.

“More than 20 Saints died in a row. Even the Huangtian Tribe won't be able to take this. More than half of their infiltrators in the central region should be gone now.”

The Huangtian Tribe's main plan in the central region was related to the Blood God Sect. They wanted to use the sect as their base to destroy Tiantai State.

Now, their force in the Blood God Sect was completely taken out. They couldn't cause any unrest in the central region anymore.

Many cultivators were analyzing the current situation. This included the Saint Lady of the distant Central Emperor City, the Ministry of War, Martial Market Bank, Black Market, Sacred Crypt Central, and Moon-Worship Demonic Sect.

They all tried to predict the upcoming changes to plan ahead.

“After taking out the infiltrators of Huangtian Tribe, Zhang Ruochen’s crisis should be averted, right?”

The Saint Lady stood beside the Heaven and Earth Chessboard. Seeing the various pieces disappear from the chessboard, a mesmerizing smile appeared in her pretty eyes.

Each Saint in the Kunlun’s Field was a chess piece on the board. When one died, a piece would disappear as well.

Boom!

An explosion came from the place that represented the Blood God Sect on the chessboard.

“What happened? Is the unrest in the Blood God Sect still not over?”

The Saint Lady’s eyes hardened. Activating her Spiritual Power, she immersed herself in the Heaven and Earth Chessboard to check which Saint had died.

Boom, boom.

Another portion of the chessboard exploded. At least 20 more Saints died.

The drastic changes of the board shocked the Saints of the Confucius Way. They all hurried over to the Lianzhu Mansion to ask the Saint Lady what had happened.

The Saint Lady didn’t understand either. According to the information she’d received, the inner conflicts of the Blood God Sect should have ended already. How could such an intense battle erupt again?

With so many Saints dying, one could only imagine how bloody the battle was.

“The Art Saint is in the Blood God Sect. He should be able to stop all chaos.”

“I don’t think so. Old Chu is very talented and can sweep the Saint Realm. However, the chessboard shows that a Saint King has been born. A Saint King is definitely not a small matter!”

“If the Saint King is our friend, then the chaos should settle. If it is foe, then the problems in the Blood God Sect are only the

beginning. The rest of the Tiantai State will soon enter war and unrest.”

...

The Heaven and Earth Chessboard could only show the general situation. No one present knew what exactly had happened in the Blood God Sect. They could only wait and hope news would come quickly.

The Saint Lady was very nervous too. She bit her red lips and even stopped breathing.

She was worried for the Blood God Sect and Chu Siyuan. Of course, she was also worried for Zhang Ruochen. After all, Zhang Ruochen was in the center of the vortex. Any mishap would cause him to be shattered.

Whoosh!

A communication rune flew across the sky into the Lianzhu Mansion.

The Saint Lady’s eyes flashed. With a sweep of her sleeves, she formed a whirlpool of Qi. The communication rune flew into her hands. She started reading the content.

The various Confucians crowded around her. They guessed that the content must be news from the Blood God Sect.

The Saint Lady finished reading the rune. Her clear eyes blinked and she seemed to be much more relaxed. Smiling, she said, “It’s a message from Yue Shuzi, administrator of Tiantai State. The Blood God Sect indeed had another large unrest, but it’s settled already.”

Then the Saint Lady passed the communication rune to the others. Seeing the content, they all had thoughtful expressions.

“The horribly powerful Saint King is actually the Hierarch Madame, Qiu Yichi. How could she be working for the Immortal Vampires?”

“It has only been a few centuries, but Qiu Yichi has developed so many Saints and even secretly controlled the Blue Dragon Void World. Her methods aren’t the average ones. We’ve actually overlooked her in the past.”

The Saint Lady found it incredible too. “Qiu Yichi doesn’t belong to any of the ten major tribes and hasn’t interacted with the Immortal Pavilion. Who is she working for?”

The Saint Lady controlled Kunlun’s Field biggest network of information. Nothing could be hidden from her. If Qiu Yichi really interacted with the Immortal Vampires, there would be small clues no matter how hidden it was.

Sir Mei, leader of the Qin Sect, stood beside the Heaven and Earth Chessboard. He didn’t speak and just stared at the area representing the Blood God Sect. Then he pointed somewhere on the board.

“Look at what this place is.”

The Saint Lady and other Confucians all looked over at where he was pointing at.

“The Bottomless Abyss,” a Confucian said.

“Sect Leader, what do you mean?” someone asked, confused.

The Saint Lady’s eyes shone with terrifying light. Shocked, she said, “Sir Mei, do you think that Qiu Yichi is working for the Immortal Vampires because of the Bottomless Abyss?”

Sir Mei was solemn. He nodded and said, “When you went to the Shangguan Clan, Saint King Que gave you a piece of paper, pointing you to the Bottomless Abyss, correct?”

“Correct, but that paper might not have been written by him personally. It might have been a trap set by the Immortal Vampires.”

“At first, I thought so too,” Sir Mei said. “But Qiu Yichi’s appearance changed my mind. Perhaps, Saint King Que had really written the note. He might have pointed you to the Bottomless Abyss to tell you something else. The Bottomless Abyss might hide a shocking secret.”

“If the Bottomless Abyss really has a shocking secret,” the Saint Lady said, “why didn’t Saint King Que tell me directly?”

“What if he didn’t dare to?” Sir Mei asked.

One Confucian didn't believe this. "Saint King Que reached the Saint King Realm 800 years ago. His cultivation is even more advanced now. What force in the world can silence him, other than the Empress?"

"For 800 years," Sir Mei said, "Saint King Que has been deeply isolated. He rarely ever shows himself in public. In the last century, he's completely disappeared. It's like he's dead. Isn't his behavior hiding something? Maybe there really is a force stronger than the Empress suppressing him so that he doesn't even dare to speak."

"Stronger than the Empress?"

None of the present Confucians could keep calm. Their minds were greatly affected. Sir Mei had made it so obvious. It wasn't that they were stupid. They'd already guessed it, but they didn't dare say it out loud.

"Sir Mei thinks that the Blood Empress didn't die 800 years ago?" the Saint Lady asked timidly. "She's in the Bottomless Abyss? Qiu Chiyi is working for the Blood Empress?"

Another Confucian instantly refuted that. "Back then, the Blood Empress was already stronger than the nine emperors. She was basically undefeatable. If she really is still alive, she would've taken over the world. Why would she hide in the Bottomless Abyss?"

"Yes, the Blood Empress was a royal figure that shined with dazzling light. She almost wiped out the human race back then. If she's really still alive, she couldn't bear to stay hidden."

The group wasn't willing to believe this guess. If the Blood Empress was still alive, the human race wouldn't be able to stop her, with the Empress missing.

"It's only a guess. Don't be nervous." Sir Mei smiled and then continued, "The most important thing to do now is to ask that figure to capture Qiu Chiyi. As long as she's captured, we'll naturally find out the truth. Who is the most suitable?"

"Qiu Chiyi had just recently entered the Saint King Realm," the Saint Lady said. "We should be able to capture her if we

can ask Heavenly King Lingxiao.”

Chapter 1211 - Yin Yang Ocean

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After becoming the hierarch, Zhang Ruochen moved from Secret Dragon Palace to Guiyuan Godly Palace.

Guiyuan Godly Palace was at the top of Baby Master Mountain, which was at the center of Blood God Sect.

There were palaces and balconies everywhere on the stargazing platform in the north. There were clouds which were surrounded by holy Qi. He could see all the buildings that belonged to Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the platform, inhaling and exhaling holy Qi, and there was holy light flowing in his body.

“I’ve finally recovered.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up. He practiced palm techniques first, and then he practiced fist techniques, performing a complete True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique.

Zhang Ruochen’s healing abilities were very powerful since he sanctified his body. He didn’t take any pills, yet he was still quickly recovering.

The stars were shining, casting light upon all the buildings.

Blackie stood at the edge of the stargazing platform, looking at the stars, and said, “Many immortal vampires died in the fights of black market headquarters and Blood God Sect. Both Zhang Ruochen and Gu Linfeng will be hunted by the immortal vampires.”

“I will fight them.”

Zhang Ruochen put his sword back in its sheath.

He craved power, and he wanted to reach the state of saint in martial arts. Only after getting stronger could he protect himself in Kunlun's Field.

Kunlun's Field became more and more chaotic. Zhang Ruochen felt that a great danger was coming.

Huang Yanchen was also standing on the stargazing platform. Her hair waved in the wind. She said, "Four of the saint elders from Blood God Sect died. One of the four discipline kings died, and another one is severely injured. Two of the palace rulers died. Aside from that, many saints and half saints were killed. Blood God Sect suffered from a great loss. Perhaps the top-tier powers in the state of Tiantai will seize the chance to rob Blood God Sect."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Indeed, a large group of saints from Blood God Sect died, however, they also left lots of saint sources behind. There're enough level-nine half saints and pre-saints in Blood God Sect. As long as they can refine the saintly source, new saints will be born."

"Besides, the entire Kunlun's Field is very chaotic. Nobody knows what's going to happen next. Those territories and resources don't mean anything. If they want it, I'll give it to them."

"That's right."

Blackie said, "We should go get Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower. As long as we can obtain one divine weapon, anyone who dares trespass in Blood God Sect will be killed."

Obviously, Huang Yanchen and Blackie had treated Blood God Sect as the foundation of Zhang Ruochen. They were both thinking about how to protect and enhance Blood God Sect.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen's interests were piqued. They asked, "Where is this Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower?"

Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower was one of the ten divine weapons in Kunlun's Field.

It was said that, during the ancient period, Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower floated in space, absorbing more than half of the chaos Qi in Kunlun's Field when Kunlun's Field had just come into being.

When someone refined themselves in Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower, it would be like going back to the ancient era.

Besides, Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower had mysterious and inscrutable power, which was much stronger than that of thousand patterns saintly weapons and ten thousand patterns saintly weapons. Once it came out, it would amaze the entire world.

Blackie said, "The ancestral land of Divine Dragon Race, Yin and Yang Ocean."

"Why is the tower there?"

Huang Yanchen frowned and said, "I heard that when the last divine dragon died, it turned on the forbidden formation, cutting off the road to Yin and Yang Ocean. That place became ancient forbidden remains, and no living beings can get in."

Blackie smiled and said, "Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower is an unrivaled true treasure of the divine dragon race."

Huang Yanchen went into silence, thinking.

"Your real body is also sealed in Yin and Yang Ocean?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie nodded and said, "That's right. As long as you can help me get my body back, I'll return to my peak. I'll protect you all and become your most solid backer."

Qing Mo walked toward Blackie and stroked his head. She picked it up and said, "You want to protect us all and become our backer?"

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen knew that Blackie liked to exaggerate things, so they didn't take it seriously.

However, given how certain Blackie was when it talked about Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower, they had to go to

Yin and Yang Ocean.

If they could master a divine weapon, they could at least protect themselves no matter how tumultuous Kunlun's Field became.

"Aside from Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos," Blackie continued, "there are also other incredible treasures. Every one of them is amazing."

"For example?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"The formula for Six Saints to the Sky Wine," Blackie said.

"Impossible. It's said that the formula for the wine has been destroyed."

Qing Mo raised a question first, as she thought Blackie was bluffing again.

Six Saints to the Sky Wine was the wine made by six human saints during ancient history. They wanted to improve the body quality of human beings so that they could reach the level of savage beasts.

Even an ordinary human being could gain saint body constitution after drinking Six Saints to the Sky Wine.

If one could make a great amount of the wine, the power of human beings would surge.

However, right after the six saints made the first batch of Six Saints to the Sky Wine, they were attacked by savage beasts. To prevent the formula from falling into the hands of the savage beasts, the six saints had destroyed the formula.

Blackie raised its head and said, "What you've heard came from the savage beasts. How could savage beasts tell human beings that the formula for Six Saints to the Sky Wine is kept in Yin Yang Ocean? If the human saints entered Yin Yang Hai and took the formula, it would put the savage beasts at a great disadvantage. Six Saints to the Sky Wine is only beneficial to human beings, but it's useless to savage beasts."

Zhang Ruochen turned solemn. He said, "Don't joke about this. Is the formula for Six Saints to the Sky Wine in Yin Yang Hai or not?"

“Everything I said it true. Why do you keep questioning me?”

Blackie sighed.

“Be serious. I want to know the exact answer,” Zhang Ruochen said.

To Zhang Ruochen, Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower was so far that it was a mere legend. He might not be able to find it.

As for Six Saints to the Sky Wine, Zhang Ruochen had seen that before.

When Saint Lady had organized the heir ceremony in Yin and Yang Sect, she offered the human monks Six Saints to the Sky Wine. It was said that the human talents had finished the last bit of Six Saint to the Sky Wine in that ceremony.

Which meant Six Saints to the Sky Wine was real. If they could find the formula, they could mass produce it so that human beings would walk to prosperity as they never had before.

Besides, even Zhang Ruochen wasn't selfless enough to give Six Saints to the Sky Wine to all the human beings; he could totally cultivate tens of thousands of talents for both Sacred Sect and Blood God Sect.

Blackie said with absolute certainty, “I swear to God that the formula of Six Saint to the Sky Wine is in Yin Yang Ocean.”

“Okay! I'll trust you this time. Let's head to Yin Yang Ocean in two days,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Why in two days?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Because I have something important to do in these next two days.”

Zhang Ruochen, Elder Yuanxing, and Elder Yuanzhou went to the underground of the blood god altar that night to perform a memorial ritual for the body of the Blood God.

The body of the Blood God was more than three thousand feet tall. Even though it had been dead for hundreds of thousands

of years, there was still a forceful holy power surrounding it. Even saints would feel pressured when they got close to it.

“How can a human being be more than three thousand feet tall?” Zhang Ruochen found it unbelievable.

Elder Yuanxing and Elder Yuanzhou both looked solemn. They all looked respectfully and didn't even dare speak loudly.

They were both surprised by Zhang Ruochen's voice.

Elder Yuanzhou said, “Stop talking, hierarch. Don't blaspheme a God. That's the body of a God, not a human being. Although the Blood God has passed away, his divine soul hasn't been annihilated yet. Perhaps He will come back one day, so we need to revere Him.”

Zhang Ruochen looked up. He found that godly body to be a huge mountain, which was intimidating.

Elder Yuanzhou was afraid that the young hierarch would say something reckless again. He immediately explained, “Refining is the process of constantly evolving. Every time someone reaches another realm, his or her life level will have a tremendous breakthrough.

“Becoming a saint and becoming a God are the two greatest changes.”

“It's documented that when someone becomes a God, his bloody Qi will surge, breaking the constraint of space. If he doesn't go to the Divine Realm, he will become a holy giant.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded.

And then, Zhang Ruochen asked another question. “Why didn't Blood God go to the divine realm? Does the divine realm actually exist?”

Elder Yuanxing said, “Many people in Kunlun's Field talked about this before, but no one can reach a conclusion. Perhaps only after becoming a God can one answer this question.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped asking further questions and walked to the body of the Blood God. He said, “I need ten million drops of divine blood.”

The two saint elders thought they were mishearing him. They asked, “What?”

“I need ten million drops of divine blood,” Zhang Ruo Chen said again.

The two saint elders were shocked.

Ten million drops of divine blood? He had to be joking.

Every year, Blood God Sect only took two hundred drops of divine blood, which were used to cultivate the young generation of talents and to refine pills and weapons... Which meant each drop of divine blood needed to be carefully used, and there should be no use.

Yet this young hierarch wanted ten million drops of divine blood, which was equal to fifty thousand years of Blood God Sect’s usual demand.

He had to be kidding.

Chapter 1212 - Difficult Negotiation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“You want to take away ten million drops of divine blood? Impossible. After hundreds of thousands of years, not much divine blood still remains in the Blood God’s corpse. If we don’t use it sparingly, it’ll be dried out quickly. An ancient sect will definitely weaken without the support of divine blood.”

Elder Yuan Xing’s attitude was definite. It was like Zhang Ruochen had to cross over his dead body in order to get the ten million drops of divine blood.

Elder Yuan Zhou wiped the sweat from his forehead. “Divine blood is incredibly strong. One drop can shatter a mountain. If it is dropped on a Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon, the weapon can be penetrated. There is nothing that can even contain ten million drops of divine blood.”

“I think otherwise.” Zhang Ruochen took out a small jar made out of wood from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. Holding it in his hand, he said, “Use this. It’s enough to contain divine blood.”

Elder Yuan Xing had created the Time and Space Martial Deity Print, which was of wood element. Thus, he was very sensitive to wood elemental spiritual treasures. The wooden jar in Gu Linfeng’s hands definitely wasn’t a typical wooden treasure. The wood contained very mysterious Rules of Saintly Way.

He practically snatched the half-inch-tall wooden jar from Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

“This...this is...it can't be...”

Elder Yuan Xing studied the patterns in the wood. He also put in a shred of Holy Qi to investigate the wood element inside the jar.

As an old thing who'd lived for centuries, Elder Yuan Xing was obviously well-learned. He already had some guesses, but he found it hard to believe.

Elder Yuan Zhou was stunned. He'd never seen Yuan Xing lose his calm like this. “What is this?” he asked curiously. “Is it a jar made out of an ancient sacred tree?”

An ancient sacred tree was worth cities. Any piece of bark peeled off was as valuable as a saint stone.

If Gu Linfeng's jar was really made out of the wood from an ancient sacred tree, then it could be sold for a shocking price of a few hundred saint stones.

Elder Yuan Xing shook his head. Unable to hide his shock, he looked at Zhang Ruochen. “Is this...” he said, voice trembling, “made from the wood of the legendary Divine Sky-connecting Tree?”

“Yes.”

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm as if this was nothing. After all, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was huge in the scroll world. It could create millions of jars. They were as cheap as cabbage.

Plus, the Qi of the tree was all used to grow new divine trees and had already been used up. To Zhang Ruochen, the wood from the tree wasn't very valuable.

“I received this batch of jars made from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree by chance,” Zhang Ruochen added.

“Unfortunately, the Qi of the divine tree was completely gone. I can only use it to store saintly blood and divine blood.”

Elder Yuan Xing was so excited that his eyes seemed to burn. “Who told you that the wood loses value after the divine Qi is gone? This is the Divine Sky-connecting Tree's wood. Even

without the Qi, it's still a huge treasure for creating pills and weapons.

“When creating a divine pill, you can add some of the wood's dust to increase the pill's medical abilities. When creating a saint weapon, adding the wood not only increases the chance of success. It also improves the weapon's power.

“Also, cultivators of the wood element only need to refine enough wood from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree for the same effect as absorbing a saintly source. It'll be easier for them to reach the Saint Realm.”

“Really?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He'd actually overlooked the huge value of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Actually, it was because he had too much of the wood. The more of something one had, the cheaper it seemed. He didn't know that the pill and weapon masters of Kunlun's Field dreamed of finding a piece of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree to create ancient divine pills and powerful saint weapons.

Gradually, Elder Yuan Xing calmed down. “Hierarch,” he said. “Where did you receive so many jars made from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. Then he took close to 100 jars from his spatial ring. They varied in size and were all made from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

The smallest one was only the size of his palm. The biggest one was two meters tall.

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou weren't shocked that Zhang Ruochen had a spatial ring. After all, the entire cultivation world was gossiping that the young Hierarch was close friends with the Time and Space Descendant. It was very logical for him to get a spatial ring from the Time and Space Descendant.

However, the various jars dumbfounded them again. The two Saint Elders stared at the jars as if they were beautiful girls. They could barely stop themselves from pouncing and embracing the jars.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “As long as you're willing to let me take away ten million drops of divine blood, I can give all of

these jars to you.”

“No.” Elder Yuan Xing calmed down. He looked at the wooden jars on the ground and then at the Blood God’s corpse. Thinking carefully, he said, “One hundred thousand drops and nothing more.”

“Yes,” Elder Yuan Zhou said. “One hundred thousand drops is already the limit of the Blood God Sect. The most that the previous Hierarch took out was 30,000 drops. That time, he still got rejected by all the Saints in the sect.”

Even the Hierarch couldn’t do anything that he wished. The various elders of the Elder Pavilion could veto the Hierarch’s over-the-top decisions.

For example, Zhang Ruochen wanting to take away ten million drops was very over-the-top. No elder would agree to it.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. Then he said, “Taking away ten million drops at once is indeed hard to accept. How about this? I’ll take out some more treasures in exchange for the divine blood.”

“What treasures?”

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou both looked excited. The Hierarch was still very young, but he had a powerful fate. Since he could have so much wood from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, he might be able to take out more extreme treasures.

The wood of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree could strengthen the entirety of the Blood God Sect. It was enough to be called the “supporting treasure of the sect.”

If the Hierarch could take out more like that, the Elder Pavilion could loosen the restrictions and let him take away more divine blood.

Zhang Ruochen took another wooden jar out of his spatial ring and handed it to Elder Yuan Xing.

Another jar made out of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree? Just how much wood does he have?

Elder Yuan Xing tried hard to control himself. He accepted the jar and opened the lid.

Whoosh!

Black light surged out, radiating with a light medical fragrance. It spread in all directions instantly.

Elder Yuan Xing quickly closed the lid. “The wooden jar is completely filled with Grade Seven Saintly Source Sacred Liquid?” he asked, bewildered.

“Correct. I received the Grade Seven Saintly Source Sacred Liquid when I was in the Blue Dragon Void World. I have 5,000 small cups in total. It can create 5,000 Divine Origin Pills. How many drops of divine blood do you think I can exchange it for?”

Divine Origin Pills could produce a large group of Half-Saints. It possessed immeasurable value.

Receiving 5,000 small cups of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid made Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou ecstatic. They could use this to quickly reinvigorate the sect.

The two Saint Elders discussed the value of the 5,000 cups.

Elder Yuan Zhou grabbed the wooden jars and pushed them and the 5,000 drops of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid to his back. He put up five fingers. “Fifty thousand drops of divine blood,” he said.

“One cup of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid for ten drops of divine blood. That’s reasonable.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t bargain with them. He just smiled and took 20 huge wooden jars out of his spatial ring.

“Each jar before you contains 50,000 small cups of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid. There are one million cups in total. With this, I can take away ten million drops of divine blood. You have no objections, right?”

“One million cups of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid... How is that possible?”

Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou felt befuddled. Even with their mindset and experience, they were still shocked by how Zhang Ruochen kept taking out treasures. After all, the Blood God Sect had sent a large group of Half-Saints to the Blue Dragon Void World to fight for the Saintly Source Sacred Liquid, but all of them had only gotten 1,000 small cups in total.

This young Hierarch had actually taken out one million cups at once. This was naturally hard to believe.

The two Saint Elders flipped open the 20 lids as quickly as possible. They really were filled with Saintly Source Sacred Liquid. They roughly estimated that there were indeed one million small cups.

They took a great blow to their composure. They stood there dumbly, not even breathing anymore. Even during the Blood God Sect's prime era, they'd only had a few thousand cups saved up.

One million cups was enough for the Blood God Sect to use comfortably for a millennium.

Of course, if they could use all these cups, the Blood God Sect would be able to produce a large group of Half-Saints in a short period. They would quickly rise up and become a thriving and powerful sect.

How could the two Saint Elders remain calm?

Of course, they didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had taken a huge amount of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid. The one million cups was only a small portion.

A pause later, Elder Yuan Zhou said, "Isn't ten million drops of divine blood too much? Hierarch, even if you want to cultivate your body, it's unnecessary to take that much at once."

While speaking, Elder Yuan Zhou took three steps forward to put the 20 jars of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid behind him. He was clearly worried that Zhang Ruochen would take them back.

“I won’t waste the divine blood. Instead, I want to use them to create Blood Repression Runes to counter the Immortal Vampires. If we have a large amount of the runes, we won’t have to worry about the Vampires’ revenge.”

Zhang Ruochen revealed some information about the Blood Repression Runes to Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou.

The two Saint Elders were quite worried that the Immortal Vampires would take revenge. After learning the true motive behind Zhang Ruochen taking the divine blood, they were quite moved.

They’d seen the power of the Blood Repression Runes. Even the Hierarch Madame could be suppressed, let alone other Immortal Vampire Saints.

Chapter 1213 - God of Death Knights

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

In the end, the two saint elders acquiesced and allowed Zhang Ruochen to take ten million drops of divine blood.

Zhang Ruochen took away the divine blood, and he left Blood God Sect with Huang Yanchen, Blackie and Qing Mo the next day.

He needed to go to the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians first.

One of the three families in the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians, Shi family, was ranked top five in Kunlun's Field when it came to rune making. He needed to cooperate with Shi family to make Blood Repression Runes.

The six sword holders had a strong bond with the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians.

Zhang Ruochen was the holder of Taotian Sword, so he was greeted by many seniors from the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians when he visited King Pluto.

Shi Ren was standing at the front to receive Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen and Shi Ren were friends who'd been through life and death together. They ventured the nether world together before, and they also fought immortal vampires in Pluto Sword Tomb.

They didn't act excited when they met each other. They gave each other a smile to express the entire friendship.

The last leader of the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians, Wang Beilie, had been captured by Emperor Qing and became a

blood slave. The new leader was Shi Ren's father, Shi Qiankun.

Shi Ren was the junior clan leader.

Zhang Ruochen and Shi Ren walked side by side toward Sword Mausoleum.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Has your father dissolved the poison of Lord Pluto yet?"

Shi Ren put one of his hands behind his back and clenched the other hand. He smiled, "Martial Lord dissolved the blood poison in my father's body, after which his mind power reached a whole new level. My father has always said that he owes you a huge favor."

Shi Qiankun had been attacked by the last generation of the clan leader and became a bloodthirsty devil who lost his mind. It was Zhang Ruochen who had helped him dissolve his devil Qi so that he could regain his mind.

To Shi Qiankun and Shi's family, Zhang Ruochen was the one who had saved their lives.

Zhang Ruochen smiled humbly. "Actually, I came here because I need some help."

They arrived right outside Sword Mausoleum.

Zhang Ruochen saw Shi Qiankun again after entering Sword Mausoleum.

Shi Qiankun looked to be around thirty years old, and he had a scholarly bearing. He looked energetic.

Obviously, the blood poison of Lord Pluto in his body had been dissolved.

"Such strong mind power."

Zhang Ruochen stood down there and looked to Shi Qiankun. He felt that the person was standing in a chaotic hollow. Shi Qiankun actually stood very close to him, but he felt that they were standing in two different worlds.

The hollow and chaos were forces formed by Shi Qiankun's mind power.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen's mind power had reached level fifty, otherwise he couldn't have seen his real face.

Such mind power was very close to that of Chu Siyuan and Sir Mu Qian, if not the same.

No wonder he was a peerless genius from the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians.

Shi Qiankun was holding a magazine in his hand, reading. He sensed that Zhang Ruochen was walking toward him, and he raised his head and looked toward Zhang Ruochen.

The mind power field around him immediately went away, and he turned back to an ordinary human being.

Zhang Ruochen greeted him with respect. "Clan leader."

Shi Qiankun immediately stood up and greeted Zhang Ruochen. "We're both sword holders. There's no need for you to salute me. Let's sit and talk."

Zhang Ruochen sat in a chair on the left side.

Shi Qiankun didn't go sit on the chair at the top. Instead, he sat in the chair on the right. Obviously, he thought Zhang Ruochen was his equal.

After exchanging some pleasantries, Zhang Ruochen told him why he had come to Pluto Lord Tomb.

"Blood Repression Rune?"

Shi Qiankun stopped smiling and looked serious. He asked, "Can I see the rune of Blood Repression Runes first?"

"Of course."

Zhang Ruochen took out the half-saint Blood Repression Runes and Saint-level Blood Repression Runes, enveloping them with holy Qi and giving them to Shi Qiankun.

As for saint-king Blood Repression Runes and supreme-saint Blood Repression Runes, they were too important to lose, so Zhang Ruochen didn't take them out.

Besides, the rune masters of Shi family might not be able to make those two runes.

Shi Qiankun was an expert on rune making. He observed the rune inscriptions while drawing in the air with his fingers.

Zhang Ruochen observed Shi Qiankun's fingers and nodded. "Shi Qiankun is way more proficient in rune making than me and Blackie."

Shi Qiankun was immersed in it. After a while, he took a deep breath and exclaimed, "How superb the design is. Do you know who designed this rune? He is magnificent."

"Actually, I don't know who designed these two Blood Repression Runes." Zhang Ruochen shook his head and smiled.

Shi Qiankun looked a bit disappointed. He then said, "How many do you need?"

"The more the better."

Zhang Ruochen then said, "I'll give the main materials to make the runes."

And then, Zhang Ruochen took out all his ten million drops of divine blood, putting them in front of Shi Qiankun.

Even Shi Qiankun was a bit thrilled seeing ten million drops of divine blood.

But Shi Qiankun was also an amazing person. He quickly suppressed his amazement, smiled and said, "To be honest, this is the first time I've seen so many drops of divine blood. Are you really going to put all of them in Pluto Lord Tomb? Aren't you afraid that someone from the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians...?"

Zhang Ruochen picked up his teacup, took a sip and said, "I'm confident in the morale of Shi's people."

"Okay."

Shi Qiankun admired Zhang Ruochen's bravery. He said, "When will you come to get the Blood Repression Runes?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "I need to go do something very important, which will take me at least three months."

Shi Qiankun promised Zhang Ruochen, “Shi family will do our best to make Blood Repression Runes. We should be able to make all the Blood Repression Runes in three months’ time.”

Zhang Ruochen refined the Blood Repression Runes because he wanted to fight the immortal vampires in the north, but he needed to head to Yin Yang Ocean first.

“Thank you, clan ruler. We’ll see each other in three months.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and prepared to leave.

“Wait,” Shi Qiankun said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Is there any other question?”

“Let me show you something.”

Shi Qiankun took a look at the desk in front of him, and he grabbed forward.

A piece of newspaper flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took the newspaper, and the words ‘News of Central Region’ were printed on the cover.

‘News of Central Region’ was also edited by Saint Lady, which published the major news that took place in the central region.

The headline of the newspaper recorded the ‘civil war in Blood God Sect,’ and that ‘Gu Linfeng had become the new hierarch of Blood God Sect’.

Shi Qiankun looked at Zhang Ruochen and asked, “That new hierarch of Blood God Sect, Gu Linfeng, is you, isn’t it?”

Zhang Ruochen read ‘News of Central Region’ and asked, “Why would you say that?”

“The divine blood you gave me belongs to the Blood God. Other than the hierarch of Blood God Sect, nobody could have ten million drops all at once. Even for the hierarch of Blood God Sect, it’s difficult to have ten million drops of divine blood from the Blood God,” Shi Qiankun said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’re right, clan ruler. Zhang Ruochen and Gu Linfeng are the same person.”

Shi Qiankun said, “There’re many smart people in the world. If I can figure it out, so can others. You need to be extra careful from now on. I heard that the Immortal Temple has sent God of Death Knights to fight you. Qingtian Tribe and Huangtian Tribe also sent saints to accompany the God of Death Knights. The intelligent beings from Immortal Temple must’ve suspected that you two are the same person.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t anxious at all. He smiled, “Should I be flattered that Immortal Temple is sending God of Death Knights to fight me?”

It was said that the God of Death Knights formed the strongest army cultivated by Immortal Temple, and they were trained to fight saints. In the last eight hundred years, all the human great beings who had been targeted by God of Death Knight were killed.

Shi Qiankun was worried that Zhang Ruochen might underestimate his enemies, so he said, “I know that you have a valuable with you that can cover your force so well that not even mind power saints can deduce where you are. However, you should never underestimate Immortal Temple. If they have mind power supreme saints, no valuables are going to help you get away from them.”

“Immortal Temple has mind power supreme saints?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“I’m not sure.”

Shi Qiankun shook his head and said, “But think about this: if Immortal Temple doesn’t have mind power supreme saints, how does it stay above all the ten immortal vampire tribes?”

Immortal Temple was mysterious, powerful and intimidating.

If Immortal Temple really had mind power supreme saints, then even the Buddhist beads given by Master Yintuoluo couldn’t protect him from being traced.

Shi Qiankun said, “To immortal vampires, you’re more of a threat than truth saints and extreme saints. Once they find you,

they will try to end you at all costs.”

“The Ancient Race of Prison Guardians is responsible for guarding the nether dungeon, so we can’t help you much. However, I can give you a five-trial saint suppression rune, which might save your life at a critical moment.”

Chapter 1214 - God Of Death Is Here

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Ninth Town Destructive Sacred Rune of the Shi Family was known throughout the world. The rune scroll could kill a Saint.

With Shi Qiankun's Spiritual Power, he could only create a Fifth Town Destructive Sacred Rune. However, even that was incredible. It could even force Heaven Pass Realm Saints to retreat. With the Fifth Town Destructive Sacred Rune, Zhang Ruochen had a new trump card.

"Actually," Shi Qiankun tried again, "you should return to the Blood God Sect. With the Blood God Sect's heritage, no one can break in if you seal the mountain, unless the Blood God himself comes."

Zhang Ruochen stood in the Sword Mausoleum. He looked very free and unrestrained. "How can I keep hiding when faced with a strong enemy? I have countless enemies. The imperial court wishes to capture me, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect wishes to kill me, the Black Market wishes to destroy me. The Necromancer and Ghost Cultivation tribes view me as a thorn too. But I'm still alive. It won't be so easy for the Immortal Vampires to kill me."

He waved his sleeves and walked out of the Sword Mausoleum, leaving behind an unrestrained figure.

Shi Qiankun stared at Zhang Ruochen's leaving backside. "He is a dragon amongst men," he said to Shi Ren on the side. "As long as he doesn't die, he will be incredible in the future. You

must interact with him genuinely. It'll bring endless benefits to the Guardians of the Prison.”

...

...

The next day, before daybreak, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie snuck out of the Pluto Sword Tomb and headed toward the Yin Yang Sea.

Blackie transformed into a fat cat the size of a small mountain. Unfurling its wings, it flew above the clouds and asked, “Zhang Ruochen, why did we leave so sneakily? Didn't we say that we'd bring Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo with?”

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on Blackie's back. While reading the Central Region Report, he said, “This journey is too dangerous. It's better if we head toward Yin Yang Sea by ourselves.”

Since he already knew that the Immortal Vampires had sent the Death Knights against him, he obviously wouldn't bring Huang Yanchen to step into danger again.

“Haha,” Blackie laughed. “I also think that bringing two women is too troublesome. We should act alone.”

“The Yin Yang Sea should be in the Savage Barren Territory, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Right.”

“How should we enter the territory to be closest to the Yin Yang Sea?”

Zhang Ruochen hadn't been to the Savage Barren Territory before and didn't know the specific location of the Yin Yang Sea, so he naturally had to ask Blackie.

“The east.” Blackie paused and continued, “Even if we go from the east, we'll still need to travel three million miles to reach the Yin Yang Sea.”

“It's that far?” Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows.

“A typical martial artist can spend ten lifetimes and still not go from the east of the Savage Barren Territory to the center. You

can imagine just how vast the territory is. Three million miles is actually the shortest distance.”

The entire Kunlun’s Field was just barren land. The five regions of the human race were only five small portions on a map. Even added together, it was only a tiny bit of the entire barren land.

The five regions weren’t connected. They were divided by wilderness, with a great distance between each region. Humans could only travel between the five major regions through wormholes.

This time, Zhang Ruochen would leave the five human regions and enter the vast wilderness to search for the ancestral land of the divine dragons—the Yin Yang Sea.

The Savage Barren Territory was the land of the savage beasts. It preserved the primitive way of life. There were many dangerous and deathly lands. Even going 30,000 miles could land him in fatal danger, let alone three million miles.

The savage beast tribes also viewed humans as enemies. Humans entering the Savage Barren Territory was no different than a sheep going into a tiger’s den.

Even though Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power and physical body were in the Saint Realm, venturing into the Savage Barren Territory was still very dangerous.

With his current attainments in spatial power, he could create a basic transport formation, but it could only transport him 30,000 miles at once. He didn’t dare to use it impulsively either. If he was unlucky, he might teleport near the nest of a Grade Seven or Eight savage beast. That would be suicide.

“Aren’t there any wormholes that go directly to the Yin Yang Sea?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Perhaps.” Blackie wasn’t sure, so he answered carefully.

Zhang Ruochen was alerted. “Where is it?” he asked.

“Divine Dragon and Half-human Clan,” Blackie said.

“Divine Dragon and Half-human Clan? That’s possible.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Divine Dragon and Half-human Clan were the descendants of the dragons and humans. They had a deep relationship with the dragons.

The Divine Dragon and Half-human Clan's territory might have a wormhole that led to the Yin Yang Sea.

"In that case," Zhang Ruochen said, smiling. "Let's go visit the Divine Dragon and Half-human Clan first."

Their territory was located between the eastern region and Savage Barren Territory. It was called Divine Dream Marsh. Even if they didn't have a wormhole, Zhang Ruochen still had to pass by Divine Dream Marsh on the way to the Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen continued reading the Central Region Report. He found some interesting things in the newspaper.

In the recent period, many high-level figures of the Confucius Way and Imperial Court had been arrested for different crimes and thrown into prison.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "It seems like the Saint Lady has started cleaning out infiltrators after receiving the Vampire Secrets," he said to himself. "When she's done, she'll probably reveal it to the public."

After he finished reading, he took a saint fruit from the Gold Light Ribbon. Swallowing it, he began refining the medical and spirit Qi in the fruit.

This fruit was a treasure from the Blue Dragon Dynasty. It was comparable to a divine pill. If a pill master saw Zhang Ruochen just eat the fruit, he would definitely scold him for wasting it. You could produce countless divine pills by adding some auxiliary medicine to the fruit.

Zhang Ruochen didn't care though. He just wanted to improve his cultivation as fast as possible.

Also inside the Tiantai State, Yao Sheng, sub-lord of the Nether Heavenly Palace was hurriedly traveling. More accurately, he was running for his life.

Palace lord Lan Caiye and sub-lord Zuo Mu had both died. Only Yao Sheng was still alive. However, he was badly hurt too. The male and female heads were both tattered.

The male body had all four limbs broken. A two-inch-long gash on the chest ripped the inner organs. The injury shone with demonic blood-red light. As if corroded by some power, it was unable to heal.

The escape path was spattered with saintly blood.

The people after Yao Sheng were the palace lord and two sub-lords of the Earth Heavenly Palace.

The palace lord was named Nie Lin. He was already a Saint in the fourth level—Xuanhuang Realm. The two sub-lords Mu Changfeng and Yao Han were upper-level Saints as well.

None of them were weaker than Yao Sheng.

When a Saint reached the Xuanhuang Realm, they could cultivate Xuanhuang Qi. Their combat ability would be multiple times above an upper-level Saint. They were only one level apart, but the gap was huge.

Yao Sheng was a powerful figure in the upper level, but faced with the Earth Heavenly Palace's palace lord, he was still helpless.

He'd thought that he was undoubtedly going to die. He prepared to implode his saintly source and Sea of Qi in a suicide attack on the three palace lords. But just then, he received a telepathic message.

The Death God Knights have arrived in Tiantai State. If you wish to live, you must first pledge allegiance.

The voice was cold and emotionless.

“The legendary Death God Knights, the strongest army developed by the Immortal Pavilion?”

Yao Sheng had no choice, so he immediately pledged his allegiance.

At the same time, three beams of powerful Holy Qi hurried over. They formed a pyramid. The Qi condensed into three

saintly clouds, appearing above Yao Sheng's head.

“Yao Sheng, you won't escape!”

Yao Han, sub-lord of the Earth Heavenly Palace, flew out of one cloud. He held a long whip with flowing flames and looked down at Yao Sheng.

Next, the other sub-lord Mu Changfeng, also walked out of a cloud. He held a saint sword. Close to 1,000 beams of Sword Qi emerged naturally, spinning around him.

Kaboom!

Nie Lin, palace lord of the Earth Heavenly Palace, rode a 200-meter-tall beast. He landed on the ground, blocking Yao Sheng's path.

Yao Sheng gritted his teeth. Clenching his fists, he roared, “We were once friends and now, you won't even let me live?”

Nie Lin grunted. “Working for the Immortal Vampires will only result in death.”

“Are you forcing me to make us all die together?” In order to boost his aura, Yao Sheng stomped on the ground. An 800-meter-tall mountain nearby collapsed.

“If you want us to die with you, it'll depend on if you have the abilities.”

Nie Lin reached out. He pushed forward and two bursts of Xuanhuang Qi flooded out of his palms. They were like two broad rivers that kept spinning, curling the fallen mountain into the air.

This scene was very impressive. A typical martial artist would throw himself to the ground in fear if he saw this.

Nie Lin was activating the Xuanhuang Qi in him to restrict Yao Sheng and prevent him from using suicidal tactics.

Whoosh!

Just before Yao Sheng was killed, an icy wind came from the southeast. The wind carried a thick bloody scent.

Nie Lin was alarmed. He looked southeastward and saw that the sky and earth were shrouded in a blood-red Qi. As the blood-red Qi flooded over, all the vegetation in the mountains turned into black dust.

“Who is it?” Nie Lin roared coldly.

“Someone to kill you.”

An icy bone-penetrating voice traveled from the blood-red Qi. Next, a knight in red armor riding a dragon rushed out. He held a blood-red spear. He quickly approached Nie Lin and stabbed forward.

Poof.

This attack was filled with shocking Rules of Saintly Way and formed a horizontally-flowing whirlpool.

Nie Lin was forced to form a large river with the two beams of Xuanhuang Qi toward the knight to block the attack.

Poof.

The blood-red spear possessed terrible penetrative abilities. It instantly passed through the Xuanhuang Qi and stabbed Nie Lin’s chest. It skewered him, lifting him into the air.

Nie Lin’s saintly blood flowed down the spear and dripped onto the ground.

Chapter 1215 - Arrived at Taiyin Ancient City

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The blood-red spear was as thick as a bowl. And then, traces of erosive power spread, robbing him of his life essence.

“Death...Knight...”

After a breath, the veins and apertures on Nie Lin’s body turned black, and his skin quickly bulged like a balloon.

He was too injured to run away.

Nie Lin wanted to make his lower abdomen explode to meet his death together with the Death Knight.

The Death Knight looked very indifferent. He twisted his arm, piercing through the lower abdomen of Nie Lin with his blood-red spear, and then, he swung the spear, sticking it to the ground with Nie Lin’s body.

One of the ten palace rulers of Blood God Sect, a saint at Xuanhuang Realm, was killed.

The Death Knight stood on the back of the dragon, wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor. There were horrifying forces coming out of his body. Killing a saint at Xuanhuang Realm was like killing a pet for him.

As for the vice rulers of Kun Heavenly Palace, Yao Han and Mu Changfeng, were both horrified.

The two vice rulers immediately performed escape techniques, rushing toward two different directions. Their extreme speed made cracking sounds in the air, leaving two traces of fire.

“Light of Death.”

The Death Knight pulled out the blood-red spear and hit it on the ground.

Hua!

A blood-red halo showed up, covering an area of a hundred square miles.

He looked down, and a circular blood river showed up on the ground, giving off weird light.

Yao Han and Mu Changfeng didn't manage to get away. They hit the halo at the same time, which knocked them away.

The Death Knight grabbed the shoulders of Yao Han. His iron arms had invincible power, completely suppressing her and taking away all her saint power.

Yao Han was terrified. He was an upper-class saint, and he had never been through a danger like this.

At the next moment, Yao Han felt a sting on his neck, and arteries had been broken.

The armor on the Death Knight's face had disappeared. He showed his ferocious face and clenched the neck of Yao Han with his sharp teeth, drinking his saint blood.

“No! I'll take you down with me!”

Yao Han kept struggling, triggering the saint Qi in his lower abdomen, trying to explode.

The Death Knight stared at Yao Han coldly. He yelled, opened his mouth wide and broke Yao Han's neck. And then, he ate his head and half of his body.

The scene was bloody and tragic. Yao Sheng had goosebumps everywhere, and he wanted to run away as fast as possible, yet after witnessing the power of the Death Knight, he didn't dare run.

At the other end, Mu Changfeng was extremely scared and knew that he couldn't run away. He then ran toward the Death Knight and ignited his lower abdomen.

The Death Knight noticed the danger. He threw the other half of Yao Han's body away, picking up a long spear and throwing it toward Mu Changfeng's waist.

Peng.

Mu Changfeng bounced back tens of miles away before his saint body exploded, releasing destructive power.

The destructive power from the explosion of an upper-class saint was inconceivable.

Hong Long Long.

The ground within hundreds of square miles was burnt, and all the mountains collapsed while all the lakes were dried. Even the area within a thousand miles was affected.

Yao Sheng was staying at the edge. When Mu Changsheng ignited himself, he immediately rushed underground and saved his life.

He climbed out of the ground and looked at the scorched earth and said, "That Mu Changfeng was impressive. He became this strong after hundreds of years of refinement, yet he ignited his lower abdomen and saint source without any hesitation."

Yao Sheng pondered whether he would do the same if he was also in a hopeless situation.

'Ending lives together' was no easy task.

It was very difficult to survive and refine for hundreds of years, and nobody was willing to kill themselves.

Yao Sheng climbed up and prepared to leave.

Suddenly, he felt a cold force coming from behind him. He trembled and stopped, looking back.

Da Da.

The Death Knight walked out of the fire, wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor and holding a spear as if he were Death walking out of hell.

The destructive power from the explosion of Mu Changfeng was horrifying. However, the Death Knight hadn't stood at the

center. Instead, he was ten miles away.

Besides, the Death Knight was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, which saved his life.

“Even the explosion of an upper-class saint couldn’t kill him. He’s way too powerful.”

Yao Sheng couldn’t help sweating and wasn’t able to walk anymore. He stood there, still.

The Death Knight showed his eyes and shot a gaze at Yao Sheng. He said, “Now that you’ve submitted yourself to me, why haven’t you kneeled down and saluted to me yet?”

“I am a saint. I don’t need to kneel in front of anyone,” Yao Sheng said.

“If you don’t do it, I’ll kill you.”

The Death Knight raised his spear and pointed at Yao Sheng’s head.

Yao Sheng knew that the Death Knight must’ve been severely injured, and perhaps he was able to kill him if he made efforts.

However, the power and force that the Death Knight had shown before were too terrifying. Even if he knew that the Death Knight had been severely injured, he didn’t dare attack the Death Knight.

After a long inner struggle, Yao Sheng kneeled down on one knee and said, “I salute you, Lord Death Knight.”

Heng.

The Death Knight put back his long spear and looked to the sky with his red eyes.

Four black spots quickly flew toward them.

With the four black spots getting closer and closer, Yao Sheng saw that they were four immortal vampire saints with flesh wings. Some were male, and some were female. All of them were mighty.

One of the immortal vampire saints looked old and had wrinkles on his face. He was wearing a silver cape with a

moon character on it, and he was holding a saint scepter.

“Silver-caped Elder from Immortal Temple.”

Yao Sheng had figured out the identity of that elder, which surprised him.

That silver-caped elder was called Ya She Saint. He had a hoarse voice. “I’ve heard from the Immortal Temple that the hierarch of Blood God Sect, Gu Linfeng, is the same person as the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen.”

Yao Sheng was in shock. “How is it possible?”

Ya She Saint shot a cold glance at Yao Sheng and said, “The information from the Immortal Temple is almost always accurate.”

The Death Knight said, “Gu Linfeng is in Blood God Sect?”

Ya She Saint shook his head and said, “According to the information from the Immortal Temple, Gu Linfeng is heading to Taiyin Ancient City in Qingli County. He’s meant to get to the east through the space wormhole.”

“Okay, I’ll go kill him now,” the Death Knight said.

“You’ve been severely injured. Rest and recover first before so you have the strength to fight Gu Linfeng,” Ya She Saint said.

Yao Sheng knew now that the Death Knight, the silver-caped elder, and the other three saints were all here to kill Gu Linfeng.

Yao Sheng also hated Gu Linfeng’s guts. If it wasn’t for Gu Linfeng, he could’ve already been a senior in Blood God Sect instead of a servant of the Death Knight.

Yao Sheng stood straight and said, “Gu Linfeng has barely sanctified his body, which means he’s not that powerful yet. I can easily kill him as well. If he really is Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen, he’s not going to be too powerful. His level is the biggest limit of his power.”

The Death Knight knew about the power of Gu Linfeng and Zhang Ruochen. He nodded and said, “Let’s head to Taiyin Ancient City Now.”

...

Taiyin Ancient City was in Qingli County of the state of Tiantai. It was built during ancient times, and many saints had gone there before.

There was indeed a space wormhole in Taiyin Ancient City, which connected to the Yin and Yang Sect in the north.

Which was why most of the monks in the city were disciples from Yin and Yang Sect.

This was the bridge that connected Yin and Yang Sect and the central region. Meanwhile, many monks from the central region would also pass by Taiyin Ancient City when they were heading to the north.

Zhang Ruochen changed his clothes to a Taoist cape worn by the disciples of Yin and Yang Sect, and he took out a token from his space ring, walking into the city.

After asking around, Zhang Ruochen knew that the space wormhole would only open tonight when there would be lots of monks heading to the east.

Blackie shrunk to the size of a fist and lay on the shoulder of Zhang Ruochen. It could tell that Zhang Ruochen was in a rush, so it said, "You don't need to worry. The Death Knight might not even know where you are."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "I'm not worried about the Death Knight. This is Taiyin Ancient City after all, which means there must be saints from Yin and Yang Sect guarding this place. And even if the Death Knight comes, I can be sure that there're mind power supreme saints in the Immortal Temple, and I'll make some adjustments to my following plans."

"Then what're you worried about?" Blackie said.

"I'm worried that sister Huang might come here," Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie smiled. "Mind power supreme saints are able to track you, but do you really think that Huang Yanchen can also track you?"

“I can feel that she’s getting closer and closer. It’s ineffable,” Zhang Ruochen said seriously.

Ever since he’d met Huang Yanchen again in Shengming City, Zhang Ruochen found out that there was a mysterious connection between him and Huang Yanchen.

The closer they got, the stronger the connection was.

Zhang Ruochen sighed and said, “The worm whole will only open after nine tonight. Let’s walk around Taiyin Ancient City first. Perhaps we can buy something amazing.”

“It’s very dangerous to enter the savage barren territory. We should indeed buy some protecting valuables beforehand, or some exceptional attack valuables. You have more than enough saintly stones anyway,” Blackie said.

Chapter 1216 - Crazy Alcoholic

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen wandered around the Martial City of Ancient Taiyin City. He didn't buy any suitable defensive or offensive items.

With his current cultivation, he would only need to use a defensive or offensive treasure if he was in a Saint-level attack.

Only the major ancient clans and sects could create items that could fend off or attack Saints. There were very few and only important figures could carry them.

The Blood God Sect's Hierarch Fire Token was a powerful protective treasure. However, the previous Hierarch had taken it away. It wasn't passed down to Zhang Ruochen.

There were very, very few treasures that could attack and hurt Saints.

The Fifth Town Destructive Rune that Shi Qiankun gave Zhang Ruochen was one. As for the Saint Figure Rune that the Taishang Elder had given him, it was an incredibly powerful attack treasure.

The most special thing about attack weapons was that it could overlook cultivation and repress the opponent.

Of course, in the Ancient Taiyin City, Zhang Ruochen wasn't completely fruitless. He also bought some rare medicines.

According to Blackie, using these spiritual medicines with the sacred medicine from the Blue Dragon Dynasty could produce

pills to heal Saints.

Under the Saint Realm, the most effective pill was none other than the Withered Pill. Any cultivator who took the Withered Pill would be able to be brought back, even if he was on the brink of dying.

But after reaching the Saint Realm, the cultivator's body would change drastically. With changes in their life, the Withered Pill's effectiveness would also decrease. To Xuanhuang Realm Saints, the Withered Pill wouldn't be effective at all.

In the Saint Realm, whether it was a curing pill or pills for raising cultivation, they had to be divine pills to be effective.

Divine pills could only be received by chance.

Most Saints would use their comprehension and accumulation of time to reach a higher level. Cultivating 100 or 200 years to have a breakthrough was very normal.

They could only speed up if they found a divine pill.

Blackie organized the spiritual medicines that Zhang Ruochen had bought. "There should be a 10,000-year Willow Grass from the Blue Dragon Dynasty's treasury, right?"

Zhang Ruochen took out the Golden Light Ribbon and searched. He took out a blade of saintly green grass. "This Willow Grass must be 20,000 years!"

The Willow Grass looked like a freshly-grown willow branch. Shreds of saintly light flowed on the surface of the leaf. It also emanated a dizzying fragrance.

Blackie's eyes lit up. "Not bad. The higher the year, the stronger the Willow Grass is. The Spring Pill will also be stronger."

"You're making a Spring Pill?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Indeed."

The Spring Pill was definitely a divine pill. It could help Saints heal. If a Saint had a Spring Pill, it was like him having an extra life.

If Blackie could really produce a Spring Pill, Zhang Ruochen would be more confident entering the Savage Barren Territory this time.

Blackie took out a pill furnace and began producing the Spring Pill.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged near the furnace and continued cultivating. Earlier, he'd refined a saint fruit. His cultivation had increased greatly. His body was well-saturated now.

According to his calculations, he should be at the peak of the Second Pre-Saint Level now. It was all due to the saint fruit. Otherwise, he wouldn't be this fast at cultivating.

My physical body and Spiritual Power both reached the Saint Realm. It's even stronger than my foundation for the Pre-Saint Realm. I can undergo the third Pre-Saint Trial at any time.

Zhang Ruochen decided to go into a wormhole and undergo the trial after reaching the eastern region. Only then would he be able to condense a saintly source and become a true Martial Saint.

Next, Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide. He continued studying the sword technique in the third level—the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique.

The Twelfth Hour Sword Technique represented 12 sword movements in total. Each movement had a different style and contained endless time rules. The more he studied them, the more he realized how miraculous and powerful the technique was.

Time was the most difficult to predict. It was formless and impossible to see. If Saint Xumi hadn't combined time with sword to create the time-sword technique, Zhang Ruochen might not even be able to start learning.

“Saint Xumi definitely put in a lot of effort to create the time-sword technique. This way, I could use sword techniques to learn the mysteries of time.”

Comprehending the sword and time simultaneously, Zhang Ruochen was completely immersed.

Boom.

A huge sound came from the direction of the door.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie were both shocked. A gray figure crashed open the door and rushed to the side of the furnace.

It was an old man that reeked of alcohol. He wore a wrinkly gray robe with a ragged hat. Messy white hair peeked out of the hat. He was no different from a beggar.

Sniff, sniff.

The man caressed the red-hot furnace and pressed his nose against the side. He sniffed powerfully as if mesmerized. “Willow Grass...23,640 years... Using such saintly medicine to create pills is such a waste.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and looked at the intruder cautiously. It was clear that the old man had broken in because he'd smelled the fragrance. However, Blackie had already set up a formation to stop the smell from permeating.

Just how sensitive was the old man's nose to be able to smell the fragrance through the formation?

The furnace was also burning red-hot. The temperature was so high, but the man could touch it without getting hurt. It was clear that the man wasn't a common figure.

With my Spiritual Power, I can only estimate that the Willow Grass is around 23,000 years. He just sniffed and could determine the exact year. This isn't easy.

Zhang Ruochen tried to keep calm as he walked toward the old man.

The old man didn't even look at him or Blackie. He just hugged the furnace and sighed. “This grade of Willow Grass should be used to create willow wine. It's a complete waste to be turned into a Spring Pill.”

Blackie stretched its claws, shining with cold light. It prepared to attack.

Zhang Ruochen stopped it.

This old alcoholic seemed strange, but he wasn't about to steal the pill furnace. It was best not to attack first, lest they create a big enemy.

Zhang Ruochen looked very handsome in his white robe. He came to the back of the old man and smiled. "Senior seems very well-versed in producing wine and pills. May I know your name?"

The man let go of the furnace and looked back at Zhang Ruochen. "Not well-versed at all. I only know some things." After a pause, he said, "I drank too much wine and I'm all a bit numb. I don't remember my name, but people who know me all call me Crazy Alcoholic."

"You're indeed a crazy alcoholic," Blackie said coldly.

The Crazy Alcoholic wasn't angry. He grabbed the wine gourd hanging on his hip and poured it into his mouth. It was emptied in an instant.

"The gourd is too small. I can drink it all in one gulp."

He put the gourd back on his hip and took a bag of wine from his back. He sat beside the furnace and continued drinking.

Blackie sent a telepathic message to Zhang Ruochen. "This Crazy Alcoholic isn't a simple figure. He might know your identity and might just be pretending to be crazy to get close and steal your treasures."

"I'll test him."

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the Crazy Alcoholic. He suddenly sped up, leaving a trail of afterimages, and appeared beside the Crazy Alcoholic. He reached out two fingers to steal the wine bag.

Unexpectedly, he didn't face any problems and grabbed the bag easily.

The Crazy Alcoholic looked up blankly and asked, "What are you doing?"

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the wine bag. Looking at the pure and artless eyes of the Crazy Alcoholic, he didn't know what to do.

“Haha, I got it. You like drinking too, right?”

The Crazy Alcoholic jumped up like a little child. He made several flips, filled with excitement.

Zhang Ruochen let out a relieved breath but smelled the thick smell of alcohol. The Crazy Alcoholic suddenly came before him. He stared crazily from the short distance and urged, “Drink! Since you want to drink, don’t be shy. Just one word: drink.”

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully. He’d been too tense during this time. Everyone he saw was like a cunning fox. Sometimes, he really should change this mindset.

He smiled. “Thank you for your wine. I’ll drink.”

He grabbed the wine bag and poured it into his mouth. The Crazy Alcoholic’s wine wasn’t spiritual wine or saintly wine. It couldn’t enhance his cultivation or increase his Spiritual Power, but it was spicy and strong.

Seeing him drink, the Crazy Alcoholic grew even more excited. He dragged Zhang Ruochen outside, saying he’d take him elsewhere to drink and not go home until they were drunk.

Zhang Ruochen could see that the Crazy Alcoholic had no ulterior motives. He was just a drinker.

Zhang Ruochen also wanted to take this advantage to adjust his mind so he wouldn’t give himself any problems. He really went outside to drink with the Crazy Alcoholic.

The man brought Zhang Ruochen to an underground wine cellar. There were jars of various sizes.

Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power and physical body had both reached the Saint Realm, so he wasn’t afraid of hard liquor. He was confident that he wouldn’t be drunk no matter how much he drank.

He and the Crazy Alcoholic drank three vats in a row.

The Crazy Alcoholic put it down. Looking at how Zhang Ruochen was still standing, he was a bit shocked. “The Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine is the 17th strongest wine in the world but you drank three vats without falling. You’re

comparable to how I was when I was young. Not bad, not bad.”

“What Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine?”

Zhang Ruochen’s mind was a bit messed up now. He couldn’t sense that Holy Qi was spinning wildly in him at all. Each strand of Holy Qi was like a mad ox. Even the speed of his blood flowing had doubled.

Boom.

Just then, an ear-splitting boom came from above ground. The wine cellar shook as well. Clouds of dust fell down as if it was about to cave in.

“Gu Linfeng, come out to die.”

A cold and emotionless voice passed through the ground and into the wine cellar.

In the night, the Death Knight held a blood-red spear and shattered the gates of Ancient Taiyin City. He rushed in. The previous boom was the sound of the city gates breaking.

Chapter 1217 - Zhang Ruochen is Gu Linfeng

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Death Knight arrived without any signs. The guarding formation of Taiyin Ancient City wasn't yet opened when he trespassed upon it.

All of a sudden, many monks fell to the ground, dead.

Peng Peng.

The Death Knight took a deep breath, and all the dead bodies on the ground exploded, turning into bloody Qi and gathering toward him.

After inhaling all the bloody Qi, he recovered from the previous injuries.

“Gu Linfeng, don't you even think about going to the east.”

Yao Sheng flew toward him, stepping on a blood-red cloud. Two light pillars gushed out of the red eyes of his male body and looked down at Taiyin Ancient City.

As for the female body, she was laughing with a shrill voice, which terrified the human monks in Taiyin Ancient City.

And then, Ya She Saint and the other three saints from the immortal vampire race also arrived in Taiyin Ancient City, guarding one direction each to prevent Gu Linfeng from running away.

The saintly forces shocked the creatures below the state of saint.

Under the deterrent of the six saints, hundreds of thousands of monks couldn't stand up to anyone. Some of them were kneeling down, some fainted. Only half saints were able to stand still.

“Why are the blood saints from the immortal vampire race here?”

“Gu Linfeng? What's happening? They're hunting the hierarch of Blood God Sect, Gu Linfeng? Gu Linfeng is in Taiyin Ancient City?”

“Six saints from the immortal vampire race came here at the same time. The monks in Taiyin Ancient City might be slaughtered.”

...

All the human monks were terrified.

To them, each saint had a tremendous amount of power. Ordinary monks were nothing compared to saints.

Hua.

A saint Qi spread out from the city leader mansion, gleaming.

At the center of the holy Qi waves was an elder wearing a Taoist cape. He was the guardian of Taiyin Ancient City, and he was also a saint from Yin and Yang Sect, called Qing Feng Saint.

Qing Feng Saint was an upper-class saint who had an immense amount of saint might. He said, “Taiyin Ancient City is an important place of Yin and Yang Sect. I've notified the sect, and there'll be great beings coming here. I suggest you leave now, otherwise, you won't be able to do so.”

Qing Feng Saint was not bluffing. He had indeed sent a message back to Yin and Yang Sect.

The Death Knight said with a cold voice, “We won't stay here for long. We'll leave after we kill Gu Linfeng.”

Qing Feng Saint knew that the Death Knight was powerful, so he didn't dare fight him directly before the great beings from

Yin and Yang Sect were here. However, he said, “Gu Linfeng is not here.”

“That’s not for you to say.”

The Death Knight looked to Ya She Saint.

Ya She Saint was holding a bronze compass. He used his mind power to communicate with the bronze compass, and then, he found Gu Linfeng instantly.

The saints from the immortal vampire race walked toward where Ya She Saint pointed, getting close to the center of Taiyin Ancient City.

The bloody Qi coming from the Death Knight was very strong. Wherever he walked, all the human monks within one hundred feet of him were killed.

The bloody Qi from those dead monks was absorbed by his body, healing his injuries.

Most of the people in Taiyin Ancient City were the disciples from Yin and Yang Sect. More than one thousand disciples from Yin and Yang Sect were killed.

Qing Feng Saint looked irritated and said, “Turn on the guarding formation and kill the saints from the immortal vampire race.”

All the formation towers in Taiyin Ancient City were activated, and eight thick light pillars gushed out, turning into eight white halos, spreading out.

“Don’t you think it’s too late to turn on the guarding formation now?” Silver-caped Elder Ya She Saint sneered. He bit his index finger on his right hand and pointed at the center of the bronze compass.

The bronze compass spun rapidly, and then, eight traces of blood-red light flew out, rushing toward the eight formation towers.

All eight traces of blood-red light had strong mind power. After they rushed into the formation tower, blood-curdling screams came out.

All the formation masters were severely injured. Some spit blood and fainted. Some's minds were crushed dead because their saint souls were crushed.

There were no mind power saints among those formation masters in Taiyin Ancient City, so they didn't have any defending power against a mind power saint.

Qing Feng Saint was horrified.

Those immortal vampire saints were too powerful. Perhaps every one of them was at least as strong as he was.

The Death Knight warned Qing Feng Saint, "You'd better stay out of this, otherwise, we'll kill you first."

Yao Sheng, Ya She Saint, and the other three immortal vampire saints all smiled coldly.

Qing Feng Saint had never felt so powerless before. He could only watch the disciples from Yin and Yang Sect be sucked dry by the disciples from Yin and Yang Sect, and couldn't do anything about it.

He knew that he would be killed if he fought the immortal vampire saints.

A large group of disciples from Yin and Yang Sect groveled on the ground. As they watched the Death Knight getting closer to them, they were all horrified.

They looked at Qing Feng Saint, begging for his help.

A timid disciple started to cry. "Please, please don't drink my blood."

Qing Feng Saint clenched his teeth and tried to repress his urge to fight. He was still waiting for the prominent people from Yin and Yang Sect.

The Death Knight smiled malignantly. Bloody Qi coming out of his body wounded one disciple after another as if there were invisible ropes around their necks.

The disciples tried to struggle, and they were all in despair.

Qing Feng Saint felt guilty. He thought, It's not that I don't want to help you. I'm really not able to do anything.

Hong Long.

A ferocious strength came from the underground of Taiyin Ancient City, rushing to the sky.

“Such powerful energy ripples. I never realized there’s someone so strong in Taiyin Ancient City.”

Qing Feng Saint looked to the front at the human being.

It was a young man wearing a disciple cape of Yin and Yang Sect. He looked handsome with a great bone structure. Black hair was attached to his cheeks, and he smelled strongly of alcohol.

It was Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t turn into someone else.

“No wonder it’s Dragon Spirit Mad Bull Wine. It’s fantastic.”

Zhang Ruochen was only half sober. He smiled and saw the disciples from Yin and Yang Sect surrounded by blood Qi.

“Dragon Traveling Nine Days.”

Zhang Ruochen twisted his body and ascended like a dragon.

Ao.

He wielded a handprint, and a dragon shadow flew out, making rumbling dragon sounds, crushing layers of bloody Qi and dashing toward the Death Knight who was standing in the middle of the street.

Dozens of disciples from Yin and Yang Sect escape and fell on the ground.

As they rushed by, they were all thrilled as they didn’t understand how a young disciple was powerful enough to rival the Death Knight.

Ci La.

The spear and the dragon clashed, releasing gleaming light, which almost blinded the human monks near them.

Taiyin Ancient City had been solidified countless times, and the structure was very sturdy. Even the fight between two saints didn’t damage it.

The Death Knight had seen the pictures of Zhang Ruochen and Gu Linfeng before, so he recognized Zhang Ruochen.

He had come for Gu Linfeng, yet he ran into Zhang Ruochen.

Their identities were axiomatic.

“You are indeed the hierarch of Blood God Sect, Zhang Ruochen. I’ll definitely kill you today.”

Holy Qi inside the Death Knight spun rapidly, making rumbling sounds as if there were rivers flowing inside, releasing powerful energy ripples.

Qing Feng Saint was astonished. Was the man down there really Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen?

Then why would Zhang Ruochen be Gu Linfeng?

Aside from Qing Feng Saint, all the monks in Taiyin Ancient City were shocked by what the Death Knight had said, as it was a huge secret.

A half saint from Yin and Yang Sect said, ‘I’ve seen the picture of Zhang Ruochen. The young man there is indeed Zhang Ruochen.’”

“The Death Knight claimed that Zhang Ruochen and Gu Linfeng, the hierarch of Blood God Sect are the same person. He’s not kidding, is he?”

“The Death Knight is a saint. How would a saint lie? Perhaps Zhang Ruochen is indeed Gu Linfeng.”

“I heard that the sword master genius of Yin and Yang Sect, Lin Yue, might also be Zhang Ruochen as well.”

A teenager disciple from Yin and Yang Sect was thrilled. He said, “Is it true that Zhang Ruochen has three heads, six arms, seventy-two avatars and is able to fly?”

There were many legends about Zhang Ruochen in Kunlun’s Field. Some of the legends were ridiculous, but because of those legends, Zhang Ruochen was idolized by countless young monks.

And now, seeing Zhang Ruochen himself, those young disciples all forgot that they were in grave danger and became

excited as they looked forward to the fight between him and the immortal vampire saints.

It was said that Zhang Ruochen had never been defeated. Was that true?

Chapter 1218 - Wild Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The battle started off immediately. The Saints all released their saintly might, filling the Ancient Taiyin City.

The city's defensive formation couldn't be activated, but there were still many defensive formations. The human cultivators all hid in them.

Yao Sheng flew out of the night sky. He landed on the ground with a boom, appearing behind Zhang Ruochen.

"There's no need for the Death Knight, himself, to attack," Yao Sheng claimed. "I can kill him by myself."

In Mo You Valley's battle, Yao Sheng had fought with Zhang Ruochen and even hurt him. He believed that he'd completely grasped Zhang Ruochen's true abilities and was confident in killing him.

Yao Sheng had just submitted to the Death Knight, becoming a member of the Immortal Pavilion. He had to achieve something to improve his status.

Killing Zhang Ruochen would be a great achievement.

"Ghost King Chain."

Yao Sheng opened his mouth and spat out a chain of an arm's width. It reached out like an iron dragon. Thousands of runes emerged on the chain, releasing the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

Kaboom.

Carrying the destructive might, the chain didn't hit Zhang Ruochen. It went toward Saint Qingfeng, who was flying in

the sky.

Saint Qingfeng was slightly shocked. He quickly formed a sword print, uttering, "Mountain Print."

The saintly sword on his back flew out of the sheath. It shook violently, forming thousands of beams of Sword Qi. They quickly converged into a sword mountain with five peaks.

Boom!

The Ghost King Chain shattered the sword mountain and struck Saint Qingfeng. It sent him plummeting to the ground. The strong shockwave turned the organized pavilions in the manor all into rubble.

Saint Qingfeng's face was pale. Spitting out blood, he walked out of the rubble and stared at Yao Sheng with shock. "We're both upper-level Saints. How can we be this different?"

He wasn't a weak member of the upper-level Saints. However, he was hurt after a slight exchange with Yao Sheng. How could he not be shocked?

As the sub-palace lord of the Nether Heavenly Palace, Yao Sheng was quite famous. Some older Half-Saints of the Ancient Taiyin City already recognized him.

"Yao Sheng actually joined the Immortal Vampires."

"I heard that Yao Sheng has a male and female saint body. When he attacks, it's like two upper-level Saints. Very few people below the Xuanhuang Realm can counter him."

"Didn't you see that even Saint Qingfeng can't block his attack? Someone like him probably can only be repressed by a Xuanhuang Realm Saint."

...

...

Yao Sheng didn't care about Saint Qingfeng. His eyes only contained Zhang Ruochen. Striding, he rushed forward and chuckled darkly.

"You hid pretty quickly. I'd like to see how much longer you can hide."

Whoosh!

Under his control, the Ghost King Chain flew out again. It spun quickly, forming nine 30-foot-wide rings. A menacing head reached above the Ghost King Chain. It was as big as a disc. It appeared in the center of the nine rings, burning with green ghostly fire.

That was a true Saint's head and contained a true Saint's power. This attack was too much stronger than the last one.

Saint Qingfeng gasped, thinking, Yao Sheng's combat ability is terrifying. If he'd used this attack earlier, I wouldn't only be injured. I'm afraid for Zhang Ruochen's fate today. He can only be saved if the big figures of the Yin and Yang Sect hurry over.

No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he was still too young. His cultivation was too low and couldn't go against upper-level Saints.

The power radiating from the Ghost King Chain suffocated countless human cultivators. No one believed that Zhang Ruochen could block it.

Perhaps because of the wine, Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid of the Ghost King Chain. He voluntarily welcomed it.

Argh!

Roar!

He raised his arms. A dragon and elephant's shadow appeared. He pushed forward with both palms, crashing against the ghostly fire and head.

Zhang Ruochen's palm power was very harsh and aggressive. He attacked with dozens of palms in a row, forcing the ghostly head and Ghost King Chain flying back.

How is this possible? How can he be this strong?

Yao Sheng was shocked. He questioned whether Zhang Ruochen was Gu Linfeng or not.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was much stronger than Gu Linfeng. Even without the Ten Saints Blood Armor, he could

still counter Yao Sheng.

If Zhang Ruochen really was Gu Linfeng, then had he improved again in a short few days?

How was this possible?

Zhang Ruochen was in a wild state. The blood and Holy Qi within him had become aggressive. Of course, he hadn't lost all reason. He was still quite conscious. He found it incredible too. When drunk, he could unleash twice the amount of power.

“Ten Saints Blood Armor,” he yelled without thinking, activating the armor.

Ten saintly images appeared, surrounding him from ten directions. With their help, Zhang Ruochen radiated with even stronger might.

Boom!

He slammed forward, forcing Yao Sheng to retreat 100 feet. The ground beneath his feet exploded.

Zhang Ruochen continued to attack. Each palm was like a five-fingered mountain falling down. Yao Sheng could only passively defend. No matter what he did, he couldn't block Zhang Ruochen.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen realized something strange. He guessed, It must be the effect of the Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine that makes me release double the power. Otherwise, with my current cultivation, I wouldn't be Yao Sheng's match at all.

Saint Yashe furrowed his brows. “Yao Sheng isn't Zhang Ruochen's match. Saint Kongyu, Saint Qingyi, Saint Wanxin, go help him.”

The three Saints were all upper-level Saints from the Huangtian Tribe. The Huangtian Blood Emperor had personally ordered them to follow the Death Knight and kill Gu Linfeng.

The three upper-level Saints opened up their blood wings. They flew in from three directions toward Zhang Ruochen who was fighting intensely with Yao Sheng.

“Original Blood Print.”

“Jinghong Dragon Sword Technique.”

“Heart Destruction Finger.”

The three Saints attacked with saint spells at once.

Yao Sheng cursed inwardly, thinking the Immortal Vampires were horrible. The three saint spells would also hit him.

He quickly stopped attacking and escaped.

“Where are you going?”

Taking this chance, Zhang Ruochen’s palm hit Yao Sheng’s male body in the chest. The palm power had overlapping layers, releasing 36 layers of strength.

Poof.

Yao Sheng’s chest caved in and his ribs collapsed. He flew out like a cannon and fell into the rubble.

Zhang Ruochen also paid the price to hurt Yao Sheng. The three saint spells fell onto him. Even with the Ten Saints Blood Armor’s protection, he was still injured. However, his body had become a Saint and had shocking defensive abilities. He wasn’t too badly hurt.

“How crazy. As expected of a physical Saint. He can just take saintly spells.”

“The Ten Saints Blood Armor is truly powerful. We can’t hurt Zhang Ruochen unless we use our true trump cards.”

“Go all out. I don’t believe I can’t kill him.”

The three Saints cast saint spells again, activating even stronger power.

Zhang Ruochen definitely wouldn’t give them the chance.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen flashed and used the Spatial Move. He appeared before Saint Kongyu and charged.

Before Saint Kongyu could react, he was already flying and thrown onto the ground. Zhang Ruochen’s knees pressed down

on Saint Kongyu's stomach. He clenched his fists. His punches rained down.

Boom, boom.

Zhang Ruochen punched 100 times instantly. Each punch contained all his might.

Saint Kongyu's bones shattered and his chest caved in. Half of his body broke apart into bloody mush. Zhang Ruochen reached into the mush and took out a fist-sized saintly source.

In the span of a breath, an upper-level Saint had died. He was beaten to death.

In the distance, Saint Qingfeng felt his scalp go numb. If he'd met a fanatic like Zhang Ruochen, he'd probably die too.

Yao Sheng climbed out of the rubble and spat out some blood. "You dared to attack me, you deserve to be killed. Zhang Ruochen isn't that easy to deal with."

Saint Qingyi and Wanxin had strong mindsets and weren't afraid. They continued to attack with a sword technique and finger spell.

"Sword Five."

Saint Qingyi's strongest trump card was Sword Five. With his age, he had at least a 50% chance to become a Sword Saint. Even now, he rarely met matches among the upper-level Saints.

Saint Qingyi's body combined with his saint sword. With a trail of sword light dozens of meters long, he stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

Zhang Ruochen slammed forward, crashing against the saint sword.

A sword that was a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon and had Sword Five's conception was among the peak of the upper-level Saints. Very few people could block it.

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen was sent back from the power. He retreated more than 100 meters and half of his body had sunk into the

ground.

Even with the Seven Kill Boxing Glove and Ten Saints Blood Armor, Zhang Ruochen's right arm was still numb with pain. He was injured.

Saint Qingyi held his saint sword and looked down at Zhang Ruochen. He sneered. "Zhang Ruochen, aren't you skilled in swordsmanship? How can you be hurt by my sword?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't reply. He circulated the Holy Qi within him and his right arm regained feeling. Then he took out the Abyss Ancient Sword, grasping the hilt.

Whoosh!

Dense Sword Qi automatically appeared. Like a pilgrimage, they all spun around him.

Saint Qingyi's saint sword trembled with low clangs.

"How can his sword intent be so strong?" Saint Qingyi forcefully controlled his saint sword, which wanted to fly away. Surprise colored his eyes.

"Sword Six." Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and flew into the air to attack Saint Qingyi.

Saint Qingyi was well-prepared. He put his sword horizontally to block Zhang Ruochen's attack. However, his saint sword cracked as soon as it touched the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Poof.

Zhang Ruochen stabbed through Saint Qingyi with this attack.

The Sword Qi was too sharp. In the air, Saint Qingyi's saintly body was cut in half, releasing a large spray of saintly blood.

Chapter 1219 - Pass Life and Death Trial

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Watching the body of Qing Yi fall, Yao Sheng, Wan Xin Saint, and Ya She Saint were all terrified.

Sword warriors were the most powerful among those at the same level.

However, Qing Yi Saint, who had the potential to become a sword saint, was killed with one strike by Zhang Ruochen. How could people not be scared?"

"Zang Ruochen has completed Sword Six. Perhaps he will complete Sword Seven soon and become the new generation of sword saints."

"I heard the Abyss Sword that Zhang Ruochen has was made of the same materials that were used to make Empress's Divine Blood Sword. I thought it was only a legend, but now it seems that it's possible."

"Abyss Sword is sharper than what I heard. It could cut a thousand-patterns saint weapon in half with one strike. It's invincible."

Zhang Ruochen was able to kill Qing Yi Saint with one strike. The power Zhang Ruochen demonstrated was like that of a white-caped sword saint.

Abyss Ancient Sword refined the thousand-patterns saint sword Qing Yi Saint had, and the sword started to glow.

It flew back to Zhang Ruochen and floated above him, showing tens of thousands of sword shadows.

Yao Sheng, Wan Xin Saint, and Ya She Saint all stared at Abyss Ancient Sword, held by Zhang Ruochen.

They also thought that Zhang Ruochen was able to kill Qing Yi Saint only because of his Abyss Sword. Otherwise, Qing Yi would've been perfectly capable of resisting his attack.

“Abyss Sword has got to be a divine weapon. It can not only break thousand-patterns saint weapons, but also refine them to improve its level. We must seize it and give it to the Blood Emperor.”

Wan Xin Saint didn't take any actions as he didn't want to be killed like Kong Yu Saint and Qing Yi Saint.

Wan Xin Saint looked to the Death Knight and Ya She Saint, wishing that they had made attacks first.

Both Death Knight and Ya She Saint were way more powerful than upper-class saints. Either of them were able to completely suppress Zhang Ruochen.

Ya She Saint stepped forward, holding the bronze compass, and said, “Time and Space Descendant, I have to admit I've underestimated you, in that you could kill Kong Yu Saint and Qing Yi Saint so easily. But from now on, you won't stand a chance anymore.”

Hua.

Ya She Saint triggered the compass with his mind power, and a blood-red light pillar was shot out from the center of the compass.

It was condensed by mind power, which was designed to attack the mind power and saint souls of monks. Ordinary defense skills weren't able to ward it off.

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move again and arrived right above Ya She Saint, and he stabbed him.

Black sword light gushed out of the sword.

Ya She Saint wasn't anxious. He looked disdainful and moved his left foot.

The Death Knight who was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor showed up behind Ya She Saint, wielding his long spear.

It was his long spear clashing with Zhang Ruochen's sword.

Chi Chi.

The energies released from the clash of the two forces trembled the space around them.

Zhang Ruochen was knocked away, hitting a six-level building before falling on the ground.

“How powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen supported himself with one hand and held his sword with the other, staring at the Death Knight, who was near him.

The Death Knight said with a cold voice, “If I wasn't severely injured, I would've killed you.”

Yao Sheng showed up beside Zhang Ruochen and said, “I was also wounded badly before coming to Taiyin Ancient City, otherwise, you wouldn't have suppressed me just now.” Wan Xin Saint went to Zhang Ruochen's back. He put one hand above the other, and gleaming light emerged from his index fingers.

Ya She Saint trampled the ground, showing up on Zhang Ruochen's right.

Ya She Saint's bronze compass flew up and spun, turning large like a dustpan. It kept spinning at the center of the compass, breeding a cluster of crimson energies.

Zhang Ruochen was completely encircled and there was nowhere for him to escape.

“Zhang Ruochen, it's impressive of you to kill Kong Yu Saint and Qing Yi Saint, but this ends now. You won't stand a chance from now on,” Ya She Saint said.

Zhang Ruochen stood straight and smiled. “If I want to leave, you won't be able to stop me.”

“You want to escape using the power of space? I can tell you with absolute certainty that you won't be able to do that

today.”

The Death Knight raised his blood-red spear and stuck it to the ground. He yelled, “Light of Death.”

A red-blood halo with a diameter of one hundred miles emerged, surrounding the entire Taigu Ancient City, and it also froze the space, preventing Zhang Ruochen from fleeing using spatial move.

“Do you really think you can run now?”

The Death Knight’s voice was cold and repressive. He thought that he had won this battle.

Zhang Ruochen tried to mobilize the power of space to perform spatial move, yet he found that the space around him was solidified.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t panic. He smiled. “The skills of the Immortal Temple are indeed extraordinary, but do you really think space power is the only thing I’ve got?”

“It doesn’t matter what you have. You will die for sure today,” Ya She Saint said.

Zhang Ruochen knew that even with Dragon Spirit Mad Bull Wine, he was still way weaker than the Death Knight and Ya She Saint, which meant there was no need to confront them.

He had already killed two upper-class saints, which was a huge success for him.

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen reached into his cape and took out a rune scroll. He said, “You’re the silver-caped elder from the Immortal Temple, then you must have extensive knowledge. You do recognize this rune scroll, don’t you?”

Ya She Saint gazed at the rune scroll and observed it. Quickly, he recognized it and said, “One, two, three, four... Fifth Town Destructive Sacred Rune. Quick! Retreat!”

Ya She Saint couldn’t be more terrified. He immediately ran away until he’d left Taiyin Ancient City.

Yao Sheng and Wan Xin Saint also knew how powerful fifth town destructive sacred runes could be, so they also rushed out of Taiyin Ancient City.

Only the Death Knight still stood on the ground and said, “I don’t believe you’re going to use the fifth town destructive sacred rune, unless you want to kill all the human monks in Taiyin Ancient City.”

Fifth Town Destructive Sacred Runes did have a tremendous amount of power, which could kill saints. However, if Zhang Ruochen used it now, he might annihilate all the human monks in the city.

Which was why the Death Knight wasn’t intimidated by the fifth town destructive sacred rune.

Qing Feng Saint was alarmed. He was afraid that Zhang Ruochen might actually use the fifth town destructive sacred rune, which might take all the hundreds of thousands of human monks down with the Death Knight.

“Zhang Ruochen, please don’t use the fifth town destructive sacred run! The prominent beings from Yin and Yang Sect will be here very soon, after which those immortal vampire saints will also be dead,” Qing Feng Saint said.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and sighed. He had planned to use the fifth town saint repression rune to scare the immortal vampire saints, but it seemed that he couldn’t use it now.

He still had to fight.

Zhang Ruochen put back his fifth town saint repression rune and said, “Okay! I won’t use the rune.”

After learning that Zhang Ruochen didn’t dare use the rune in Taiyin Ancient City, Ya She Saint, Yao Sheng and Wan Xin Saint all came back to the city.

“Even if you have the fifth town saint repression rune, you’re a dead man,” the female body of Yao Sheng sneered.

“Why’re you pushing me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“So what? Do you dare use your fifth town saint repression rune?” Wan Xin Saint thought that he had known the weakness

of Zhang Ruochen and guffawed.

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking to them. He raised his head and looked to the sky.

“What’s he looking at?”

The immortal vampire saints and the monks in Taiyin Ancient City all looked up. They saw dark clouds showing up in the sky above Taiyin Ancient City, blocking the stars and the moon.

The lightning clouds got thicker and thicker, and the forces only became stronger.

Hua La.

The bolts of lightning that were as thick as buckets came out, trembling Taiyin Ancient City.

“I’m going to pass the third pre-saint trial, and all the pre-saints and saints will be targeted. Are you going to run away now?”

Even if he was going to pass the trial, Zhang Ruochen still looked calm.

Nobody could expect that Zhang Ruochen was going to pass the life and death trial now.

Was he being suicidal?

“What a maniac...”

Yao Sheng clenched his teeth hard and stared at the Death Knight. He wanted to know what decision he would make.

“Zhang Ruochen wants the advantage back. If we leave Taiyin Ancient City, he’ll definitely use his fifth town saint repression rune. The only thing we can do is kill Zhang Ruochen before the lightning trial arrives.”

The Death Knight looked determined. He trampled the ground with his right foot and rushed out like an arrow. He tried to pierce Zhang Ruochen’s chest with his spear.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the holy Qi inside his body, infusing it into Abyss Ancient Sword. Three thousand

inscriptions emerged.

Hong Long.

Destructive sword Qi gushed out toward the Death Knight.

The Death Knight had been severely injured, yet Zhang Ruochen had the extra strength from Dragon Star Mad Bull Wine, so he could actually rival the Death Knight.

The Death Knight didn't manage to kill Zhang Ruochen. Lightning fell from the trial clouds, hitting not just Zhang Ruochen, but also other pre-saints and saints in Taiyin Ancient City.

“Get out of Taiyin Ancient City now, otherwise we'll all be dead.”

Wan Xin Saint couldn't laugh anymore. After warding off the first lightning, he tried to fly out of the city.

“Too late!”

Zhang Ruochen looked dynamic among the trial clouds, and he caught up with Wan Xin Saint quickly.

Chapter 1220 - Battle Under Trial Thunder

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Zhang Ruochen, the Life-Death Trial is the most terrifying trial. Many geniuses die in this trial. The thunder will soon fall again. Do you want to die?”

Saint Wanxin screamed. He flapped his blood wings at the same time, escaping into the distance.

“I’ll kill you before the lightning strikes me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

As Zhang Ruochen charged at Saint Wanxin, the trial clouds in the sky also flew over. Thick bolts of lightning twisted together and fell down with a crack.

Boom!

Kaboom!

Zhang Ruochen and Saint Wanxin were both struck by the trial thunder. Their bodies shook and they fell to the ground together.

Zhang Ruochen’s physical body was very strong. All 140 apertures on him opened, releasing bright saintly light, blocking the lightning’s strength.

Of course, Saint Wanxin’s physical body wasn’t that strong. His skin was scorched. He looked like a burnt piece of coal with black smoke rising up.

“Sword Six.”

Zhang Ruochen activated strong sword intent and held the Abyss Ancient Sword up. He pushed it forward, stabbing it toward Saint Wanxin's back.

“Xuanji Finger.”

Saint Wanxin stepped down and shot into the air. He turned in the air and formed a fingerprint. Pointing forward, he crashed against the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Poof.

Saintly blood splattered from the sword tip. All of the power that Saint Wanxin had consolidated now broke apart. He was thrown back. His right arm was shattered by the Sword Qi.

“No wonder he killed Saint Qingyi in one strike. The Abyss Ancient Sword and Sword Six combined is indeed impossible to fend off.”

Saint Wanxin knew that he wasn't Zhang Ruochen's opponent. Without hesitating, he activated a secret escape spell with a speed five times faster than before. With this kind of shocking speed, even a Heaven Pass Realm Saint wouldn't be able to catch up.

“Tear it up!”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed forward and tore apart the space. A crack, hundreds of meters wide, cut off Saint Wanxin's escape route.

They'd already rushed out of the Ancient Taiyin City and weren't in the range of the Death God's Light. Naturally, he could use spatial crack techniques.

Saint Wanxin forcefully changed his direction to avoid the torn space.

“You can't escape,” Zhang Ruochen thundered.

A black beam of light flew from Saint Wanxin's side. It cut his neck, beheading him. He didn't die, even after losing his head.

His headless body struck with two saintly finger spells, hitting Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Thud.

Zhang Ruochen flew backward. He hit the city wall of Ancient Taiyin City, embedding into it.

Saint Wanxin's two spells hit Zhang Ruochen's heart and lungs. Even with the Ten Saints Blood Armor's protection, Zhang Ruochen still felt horrible pain. There was sweetness in his throat. Blood trickled out of his mouth.

His heart and lungs were badly hurt.

The last desperate attempt by an upper-level Saint is more than terrifying, he thought.

Kaboom.

A thicker bolt of lightning fell from the trial cloud, hitting Zhang Ruochen and Saint Wanxin.

Zhang Ruochen fended off this bolt of lightning, but two explosions sounded in his ears. He looked toward the source. In the near distance, Saint Wanxin's body and head were both struck by lightning and turned into a mist of blood.

A skeleton and skull fell to the ground.

Yet another upper-level Saint had died.

Zhang Ruochen checked his injuries. He was badly hurt. Not daring to fight the other Immortal Vampire Saints, he focused on surviving the trial.

He sat cross-legged on the ground and took a pill. He countered the trial thunders while healing himself. The Death Knight, Yao Sheng, and Sir Yashe had all escaped outside of the trial thunder's area. They were 300 miles away, standing on a mountain and looking at Ancient Taiyin City.

“Saint Wanxin was killed! Zhang Ruochen is truly powerful. He's going through the trial, but he could still kill another Saint.”

Yao Sheng felt terror in his heart. Thankfully, Zhang Ruochen hadn't chased after him. Otherwise, even if he could resist Zhang Ruochen's attack, he would still die from the lightning.

Sir Yashe's expression was solemn. “Zhang Ruochen is only a Second Trial Pre-Saint and he's already so powerful. Once he

undergoes the third Pre-Saint Trial, he'll only improve.”

“Then let us kill him.”

The Death Knight was embarrassed. They were only facing a Pre-Saint, but three upper-level Saints had died.

If he couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen today, he'd become the disgrace of the Death Knights.

He grabbed the blood-red spear and poured all his Holy Qi into it. Then he applied pressure and hurled it toward Ancient Taiyin City. It was like a shooting star flying across the night sky, shining with red flames. It went straight at Zhang Ruochen, who was sitting cross-legged beneath the city walls.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to be stabbed, a black disc appeared before him. It was more than 100 feet wide and looked like a circular shield.

The red spear crashed against the shield. It slowed instantly and finally stopped. All the cultivators in Ancient Taiyin City let out a sigh of relief.

“There really is a formation expert who stopped the Death Knight's full-power attack.”

“It's fortunate that it was blocked. If the spear's attack had landed, half of Ancient Taiyin City would have been destroyed.”

...

Everyone thought that a big figure from the Yin and Yang Sect had hurried over. They quickly discovered that it was a fat cat standing beneath the circular disk.

The fat cat was only a foot tall. It stood on two hind legs and pushed up the disc with two paws. Who would've guessed that it had stopped the Death Knight's attack?

The black cat opened its mouth, revealing sharp teeth. “You really think I'm just a weak cat if I don't do anything?”

The disc that it lifted actually attracted a portion of lightning from the trial cloud. Hundreds of beams of purple lightning appeared on the disc. Then the disc flew up and charged

toward the Death Knight, Yao Sheng, and Saint Yashe 300 miles away.

“Is this the legendary cat that Zhang Ruochen raises?”

Saint Yashe had heard before that Zhang Ruochen had a powerful cat, so he didn't dare underestimate Blackie. He put his forefinger and middle finger together. Strong Spiritual Power surged out of his fingertips and into a bronze plate.

The bronze plate flew in the air and crashed into the thunder disc in mid-air. Blackie and Saint Yashe were hundreds of miles apart, but they dueled with spells, trying to repress one another.

Kaboom.

The bronze plate and thunder disc crashed dozens of times in a row. The land within hundreds of meters was in chaos. Many parts of the land were scorched.

“It's just a cat. How can it be so aggressive? It's actually comparable to the silver-robed elder of the Immortal Pavilion.”

“Has the Yin and Yang Sect not arrived yet?”

“The thunder cloud is getting stronger. Can Zhang Ruochen survive?”

The human cultivators in the city were all worried. They desperately wished that the big figure of the Yin and Yang Sect could hurry over and kill the Death Knight.

However, he still didn't appear. The more they waited, the more disappointed they felt.

Seventy-two bolts of lightning had fallen from the sky. If Zhang Ruochen could survive nine more, he would have survived the third Pre-Saint Trial—the Life-Death Trial.

A female disciple of the Yin and Yang Sect clasped her hands and stopped breathing due to nerves. “I hope Zhang Ruochen can quickly pass through the Life-Death Trial. Then he can use the Fifth Town Destructive Saint Rune and kill all those remaining Immortal Saints. That would be exhilarating.”

While Blackie was busy with Saint Yashe, the Death Knight and Yao Sheng stood 300 miles away and kept attacking Zhang Ruochen.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It transformed into a 10,000-foot-long vine and blocked the Death Knight and Yao Sheng's attack, buying time for Zhang Ruochen to survive the trial.

However, the Death Knight and Yao Sheng's cultivations were above the flower, so it was quickly injured. The vines and leaves were all scorched.

Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo stood in the air outside the trial area. Clouds were under their feet while an ivory moon was above their heads. Under the moonlight, Huang Yanchen's skin was more translucent than saintly jade. Her long blue hair glittered. She gave off a cold and ethereal aura.

Qing Mo pursed her lips. "Princess, let's attack! That fat cat can't stop three Saints at all."

"Let's keep waiting. I want to see where his limit is."

Huang Yanchen's gaze was as calm as water. She stared at Zhang Ruochen, sitting below the city wall. She wanted to know if he could resolve the crisis with his own power.

Below Ancient Taiyin City's walls, the Holy Carnivorous Flower's vine was practically disabled. It could only shrink back into Zhang Ruochen's body.

"Zhang Ruochen... I tried my best... Now...you must rely on yourself..."

The flower's voice was very weak. After speaking, it fell into a deep sleep.

The Life-Death Trial had 81 trial thunders. Now, Zhang Ruochen had already suffered 72 thunders. He would soon survive it all. However, if he continued sitting there cross-legged, he would definitely get killed by the Death Knight and Yao Sheng.

At this point, he could only fight.

Zhang Ruochen stood up abruptly. Locking down on the Death Knight and Yao Sheng's location, he stepped forward. He used the Great Spatial Move to reach 100 miles away instantly.

Then he used the Great Spatial Move again.

“Zhang Ruochen is heavily injured from the trial. He must be very weak now. Go kill him,” the Death Knight ordered Yao Sheng.

Yao Sheng wanted to curse at the Death Knight. They all knew that no matter how weak Zhang Ruochen was, he still had the Fifth Town Destructive Saint Rune. Whoever charged at him first would be the first to die.

It was clear that the Death Knight dispatched him against Zhang Ruochen to use him and disable the Fifth Town Destructive Saint Rune.

Since Yao Sheng knew it was suicide, why would he do it? Ignoring the Death Knight's order, he used a secret escape spell and actually ran away.

“Cowardly fool.”

The Death Knight clenched his fists and let out a furious roar. He didn't go after Yao Sheng. Instead, he charged at the incoming Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1221 - Death by Trial

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Both Zhang Ruochen and the Death Knight wore Ten Saints Blood Armor, fighting each other, trembling the air around them and shaking the earth.

The Death Knight was way more powerful than Zhang Ruochen. After nine exchanges, he knocked Zhang Ruochen away.

Just as the Death Knight rushed forward to kill Zhang Ruochen, the seventy-seventh trial lightning hit both him and Zhang Ruochen.

The trial lightning was very fierce. Even the Death Knight was knocked down.

Zhang Ruochen took a long breath and rushed out of the mud, carrying the Abyss Ancient Sword and triggering thousand-patterns destruction, slashing downwards.

Hong Long.

The Death Knight reached out his iron fist to ward off the attack from Abyss Ancient Sword.

They started to fight each other again.

Trial lightning kept hitting, seventy-eighth, seventy-ninth, eightieth.

Each lightning strike would force the Death Knight and Zhang Ruochen to the ground.

They were more and more wounded and spat blood, and their attacks became slower and milder.

The Death Knight had been severely injured before coming to Taiyin Ancient City, and after the lightning, he was even more so.

Originally, it was easy for him to kill a saint at Xuanhuang realm, but now, he couldn't even defend himself against an upper-class saint.

The eighty-first lightning was about to fall. The Death Knight put back his spear without hesitation and ran away.

Zhang Ruochen didn't chase him as he was more wounded than the Death Knight. He had been powering through with his will.

Hong Long.

The trial cloud kept spinning, and then, the eighty-first trial lightning hit the head of Zhang Ruochen like a spear.

The ground under Zhang Ruochen's feet immediately caved, leading to an abyss.

The temperature from the lightning melted all the rocks, forming crimson lava. There were electric inscriptions flowing in the lava.

The life or death trial was finished?

The trial clouds dissolved, and the stars and the moon showed themselves, giving out mild light.

The forces of sky and land were completely gone.

The human monks in Taiyin Ancient City were all relieved.

"Finally, it's finished. Did Zhang Ruochen pass the third pre-saint trial?"

"Difficult to tell. Even the Death Knight fled at the last moment. Zhang Ruochen was just as injured. How can he still be alive?"

...

Qing Feng Saint flew to beside the abyss, releasing his mind power to investigate.

He didn't detect any life forces.

“Zhang Ruochen failed to pass the life or death trial. He's been killed by the trial lightning,” Qing Feng Saint concluded.

All the monks in Taiyin Ancient City sighed.

Some of the young monks who idolized Zhang Ruochen were in sorrow as they didn't think Zhang Ruochen deserved this.

“Zhang Ruochen has unrivalled talents, and he's able to kill an upper-class saint. How could he fail the life or death trial?”

“The more potential someone has, the fiercer the life or death trial is. It's normal for him to be killed by trial lightings.”

“Many talents in history were killed by life or death trials.” Many monks sighed.

Some of the monks spread the news using signal flares.

Both the news that ‘Zhang Ruochen is Gu Linfeng’ and the news of Zhang Ruochen's death would lead to a sensation in Kunlun's Field.

The Death Knight and Ya She Saint didn't go far. They also paid attention to Zhang Ruochen's life.

Ya She Saint's mind power spread across the sky above Taiyin Ancient City. He didn't detect the forces of Zhang Ruochen. He then retracted his mind power, smiled and said, “Zhang Ruochen must've been killed already. We've finished our job.”

“Zhang Ruochen's dead?” the Death Knight asked.

“Even Qing Feng Saint from Yin and Yang Sect has confirmed this. This should be correct,” Ya She Saint said.

The Death Knight shook his head and said, “Doesn't make sense. Even if Zhang Ruochen was annihilated by the trial lightning, his Abyss Sword and Ten Saints Blood Armor should still be there.”

Ya She Saint's smile froze and he nodded. “You're right.”

“Zhang Ruochen must be alive. That Qing Feng Saint from Yin and Yang Sect must be covering for him. He wants to seize this chance to get away and hide Zhang Ruochen somewhere,” the Death Knight said.

“I’ll contact the Immortal Temple now. They should figure out whether Zhang Ruochen’s alive or not.”

Ya She Saint took out his bronze compass, infused it with mind power and contacted the Immortal Temple.

After a while, Ya She Saint received the message from the Immortal Temple: “Zhang Ruochen didn’t die. He’s in the east now.”

“Zhang Ruochen should’ve arrived in the north through the space worm hole already. Let’s go to the east to kill him.”

“Wait a second.” Ya She Saint then said, “There’s another message from the Immortal Temple. They’ve sent another three Death Knights to the east to kill Zhang Ruochen to prevent him from growing to become a great enemy of immortal vampires.”

The Death Knight was furious. He clenched his fist so hard that there was a cracking sound.

This time, they had completely failed at encircling Zhang Ruochen. They lost three upper-class saints, and Zhang Ruochen passed the life or death trial, improving his cultivation.

Ya She Saint and the Death Knight could feel the indignation from the Immortal Temple. If the other three Death Knights killed Zhang Ruochen before they could, they would definitely be severely punished by the Immortal Temple.

“We have to kill Zhang Ruochen before those three Death Knights,” Ya She Saint said.

The guarding formation of Taiyin Ancient City had been activated. Even Ya She Saint and the Death Knight couldn’t trespass in the city.

Which meant they couldn’t use the space wormhole in Taiyin Ancient City. They had to head to somewhere else to get to the

east.

...

Yin and Yang Sect in the east.

Zhang Ruochen had passed the third pre-saint trial, which severely wounded him. He looked pale and feeble.

At this moment, he was sitting right across from one of the three sword saints in the east, Moon-Burier Sword Saint, drinking some healing tea.

Although it was herb tea, it only had satisfying fragrance instead of the pungent smell of medicine.

Qing Feng Saint was carrying a saint sword, sitting close.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Qing Feng Saint and smiled. "Why aren't you drinking with us, Mr Qing Feng?"

Qing Feng Saint looked sorry and said, "I'm guilty. I can't drink with the hierarch and sword saint."

When the Death Knight had been slaughtering the disciples from Yin and Yang Sect in Taiyin Ancient City, Qing Feng Saint hadn't tried to stop him because of his fear.

Qing Feng Saint knew that he would be punished, so he was tense the whole time instead of drinking tea and making small talk like Zhang Ruochen and Moon-Burier Sword Saint.

Moon-Burier Sword Saint was one of the three sword saints heading to Taiyin Ancient City.

Moon-Burier Sword Saint had arrived in Taiyin Ancient City before Zhang Ruochen started his life or death trial, yet he had never shown up. Moon-Burier Sword Saint took Zhang Ruochen away after he passed the trial and went back to Yin and Yang Sect through the space wormhole.

Also, Moon-Burier Sword Saint asked Qing Feng Saint to tell others that Zhang Ruochen had been killed by trial lightning to help him get away.

Zhang Ruochen had a lot of questions. He looked to Moon-Burier Sword Saint and asked, "I'm confused. If you arrived in

Taiyin Ancient City, why didn't you kill the Death Knight and the silver-caped elder?"

Moon-Burier Sword Saint smiled. "You have a five town saint suppression rune, but the Death Knight also has something like that. If I made attacks, or even just showed up, the Death Knight would have used that to kill me."

"A valuable more powerful than five town saint suppression runes?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"That's right."

Zhang Ruochen was still confused. He said, "But why didn't the Death Knight use the valuable to kill me?"

Moon-Burier Sword Saint said, "That valuable is integrated with the body of the Death Knight. Once he activates that valuable, the Death Knight will also be killed."

Zhang Ruochen understood it now.

It was not that the Death Knight didn't want to use that valuable, but he thought that it was unnecessary to use that kind of valuable to fight Zhang Ruochen.

However, using that valuable to kill a sword saint was more than worth it.

"Isn't that valuable as terrific as the explosion of the lower abdomen and saint source?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Moon-Burier Sword Saint said, "If I want to kill an ordinary Death Knight, I can totally destroy his lower abdomen before he ignites himself, and I can also erase his consciousness before he ignites his saint source.

"But that valuable is different. Even if the Death Knight loses his lower abdomen and consciousness, the destructive power will immediately be released once he's killed."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Which means it's useless to kill the Death Knight."

"That's right." Moon-Burier Sword Saint sighed.

Zhang Ruochen, "Does that mean one will certainly die if they run into a Death Knight."

“That’s why they’re called the Death Knights.”

Moon-Burier Sword Saint smiled. “You might be the only one who can kill a Death Knight and still survive.”

“Me?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Moon-Burier Sword Saint said, “If you can tear the space and send him to the hollow space, then the valuable from the Death Knight won’t affect you.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Only if the Death Knight thinks he can kill me instead of using that valuable. Otherwise, I’ll be killed also.”

Moon-Burier Sword Saint stared at Zhang Ruochen for a while and asked, “You’re not just the hierarch Gu Linfeng of Blood God Sect, but also the disciple Lin Yue from Yin and Yang Sect, aren’t you?”

Chapter 1222 - Revert Back To Oneself

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Yes.”

There was no reason to hide it. Zhang Ruochen admitted directly.

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint didn't find it unexpected and just nodded. “What plans do you have now? If you stay in the Yin and Yang Sect, we will definitely use all our resources to train you. You'll become the next Sword Saint in the shortest amount of time.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his teacup lightly. “Stay in the Yin and Yang Sect? As Lin Yue or Zhang Ruochen?”

“Lin Yue.”

“I don't want to be Lin Yue anymore, or Gu Linfeng. Right now, I just want to be Zhang Ruochen.”

His eyes were very calm, but there was determination deep within his irises. He hadn't revealed his identity in Ancient Taiyin City because he was drunk. Deep down, he desired to revert to Zhang Ruochen.

He didn't want to be anyone else anymore!

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint was silent for a moment. “You must know that Zhang Ruochen is a criminal wanted by the Empress. With the Yin and Yang Sect's current force, we can't go up against the Empress and imperial court. Since you've already become a Saint, there are many times where you have

to compromise. Some large forces are able to destroy a Saint in a second.”

“In that case, why should I stay in the Yin and Yang Sect?” Zhang Ruochen stood up. Cupping his hands, he bowed to the Moon-Burial Sword Saint. “Thank you for saving me, and thanks to the Yin and Yang Sect for helping me grow. In the future, if the Yin and Yang Sect has trouble, I will do my best to help.”

With that, he turned to leave. Blackie transformed into a black shadow and rushed into Zhang Ruochen’s sleeve.

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint knew that the Yin and Yang Sect couldn’t keep Zhang Ruochen anymore. Zhang Ruochen was also becoming more experienced and no longer needed to rely on anyone else.

“Leave after you heal!” the Moon-Burial Sword Saint said.

“No, there’s something else I must do. I’m in a hurry. I’ll definitely visit the Yin and Yang Sect after I complete that. At that time, I hope to learn some knowledge about the Sword Way from you.”

Zhang Ruochen took nine steps. With each step, his sword intent strengthened.

Whoosh!

By the ninth step, his sword intent had risen to a culmination. His body transformed into a beam of sword light and he shot into the air, disappearing in the horizon.

Saint Qingfeng looked at the leaving Zhang Ruochen with envy. “With his attainments in the Sword Way,” he muttered to himself, “he’ll become a Sword Saint very soon. He’s still so young. Will he become the newest Sword Emperor?”

An old cultivator with white whiskers and hair walked out of the forest behind Saint Qingfeng.

The old man wore a white monk robe. It had the Taichi print on the front and the Eight Trigrams on the back. He gave off a spiritual feeling.

Even the Moon-Burial Sword Saint got up from sitting and bowed with Saint Qingfeng. “Greetings, Patriarch Taiyi.”

Patriarch Taiyi had actually come to Ancient Taiyin with the Moon-Burial Sword Saint. He’d wanted to test Zhang Ruochen, so he didn’t let the Moon-Burial Sword Saint help Zhang Ruochen defeat the Death Knight.

The things that the Moon-Burial Sword Saint had said earlier were mostly exaggerations. The Death Knight indeed had an offensive weapon that, when activated, could kill a true Saint. However, it couldn’t kill the Moon-Burial Sword Saint.

In other words, it wasn’t hard for him to kill a Death Knight.

After a short pause, the Moon-Burial Sword Saint said, “I have a question.”

“Ask!” Patriarch Taiyi said.

“Why did you stop me from killing the Death Knight and silver-robed elder of the Immortal Pavilion? Did you want to use them to keep challenging Zhang Ruochen?”

“Indeed,” Patriarch Taiyi said.

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint was very curious and confused. With Patriarch Taiyi’s status, why did he care so much about a young junior?

Zhang Ruochen was indeed talented with limitless potential. However, there were also geniuses in the Yin and Yang Sect that rivaled him. For example, Gai Tianjiao with the Innate Extreme Yang Body was a once-in-a-millennium talent.

However, Patriarch Taiyi didn’t seem to put so much attention on her. The Moon-Burial Sword Saint didn’t believe that Patriarch Taiyi didn’t have a deeper relationship with Zhang Ruochen.

Could it be that Zhang Ruochen really is the Sacred Crown Prince from 800 years ago?

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint knew that 800 years ago, Emperor Ming, one of the nine emperors, had once studied in the Yin and Yang Sect. Patriarch Taiyi was Emperor Ming’s

junior brother. The two were both disciples of the Yin and Yang Sect's legendary figure, Tao Master Yuanfa.

The Moon-Burial Sword Saint naturally didn't say the guesses out loud. Instead, he said, "The Death Knight and silver-robed elder are both much stronger than Zhang Ruochen. What if something happened?"

"If they aren't strong enough, they aren't qualified to be Zhang Ruochen's whetstone."

Patriarch Taiyi spoke indifferently, but the Moon-Burial Sword Saint and Saint Qingfeng both could tell that he was confident in Zhang Ruochen. The confidence was at an incomprehensible level.

After leaving the Yin and Yang Sect, Zhang Ruochen flew above the Fallen-gods Mountain Range. He hurried westward toward Divine Dream Marsh, home of the Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan.

Perhaps all the cultivators in the world thought that Zhang Ruochen had died under the trial, but the Immortal Pavilion would definitely be able to figure out that he was still alive.

The Death Knight would probably hurry over soon. Thus, Zhang Ruochen had to be fast.

Blackie smiled. "The Yin and Yang Sect is really doing the opposite of helping. Zhang Ruochen, the Immortal Pavilion will figure out that you're still alive. You can't escape at all. How about you spread the news that you're still alive? This way, people who care for you won't shed so many tears."

Zhang Ruochen coughed and blood trickled out of his mouth. He flew up in an arc and landed at the top of a mountain, stopping temporarily. He clutched his chest. Circulating Holy Qi, he pushed down his injuries.

"Don't spread it for now."

"Why?" Blackie asked.

"The Immortal Pavilion knows I'm still alive, but they won't spread the news. I have a treasure that they want. If the world

thinks that I'm already dead, they'll be the only ones who'll continue to try and kill me. Only they can take my treasure."

Zhang Ruochen had too many enemies. Merely the Immortal Vampires was a bit too much to handle. If other forces also joined in to kill Zhang Ruochen, he wouldn't have to search for the recipe for the Six Saints to the Sky Wine and Dragon Moon Sun Mix. All his energy would probably be used up on fleeing.

"You're just going to keep hiding it?" Blackie asked. "The entire Kunlun's Field is probably in an uproar now. News will definitely reach the ears of those who care for you."

Zhang Ruochen pulled out four communication runes. He carved down words and then sent them out. He notified the four most important people that he was still alive.

Then he said, "Let's go! Let us continue."

"You're badly hurt. Don't keep pushing yourself. I'll go tame a beast for your ride."

Blackie entered the Fallen-gods Mountain Range. A moment later, he'd tamed a Level-5 upper beast: a four-winged silver crane.

The bird was more than 20 meters long and had silver feathers. It radiated with thick Spiritual Qi. Its speed of flying was enough to catch up to a lower-level Saint.

Zhang Ruochen went to the bird's back. He sat down cross-legged and started healing himself with all his might.

While he was hurrying toward Divine Dream Marsh, news that "Zhang Ruochen has died" also spread to the area. It shocked the higher level of the Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan.

The current clan leader was Ao Yi. He wore a golden-scaled dragon robe. He looked to be around 50 years old and was filled with spirit.

When he received the information, he smiled and shook his head. "This is really an eventful autumn. Big events happen every day. A few days ago, I heard that Gu Linfeng became the newest Hierarch of the Blood God Sect. How many days

has passed? Now there's news that Gu Linfeng is Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant, and he died in the Life-Death Trial."

"Even if Zhang Ruochen died, he killed three upper-level Immortal Vampire Saints. He's definitely the pride of the human race."

The speaker was Ao Jing. He was Ao Yi's eldest and the young chief of the Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan. He was the young chief, but he actually wasn't very young. He was close to 200 years old and had reached the Saint Realm a while ago.

A beautiful and young girl stood behind Ao Jing.

Her skin was as white and translucent as saintly jade. She was tall and had two perky peaks on her chest. Glittery crystals dotted her hair. Just standing there, the water Qi in the air converged naturally toward her. She looked very saintly.

Ao Jing had become a Saint, but standing beside her, all the attention still went to her. She was Ao Jing's eldest daughter and the most beautiful princess of the Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan—Ao Xinyan.

All the top figures of the clan in the room knew that Ao Xinyan was the true heir of the Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan. She was incredibly talented. She was known as the top talent of the past 100 hundred years in the clan.

After refining a divine dragon bone into her body, some claimed that no one in the clan would be as talented as her in the next 10,000 years. It could be said that the love of thousands was on her. She had so many halos around her and countless girls were jealous and envious.

But right now, her eyes were red. As if she'd lost her spirit, her eyes were very listless.

Ao Yi first sensed that Ao Xinyan's mood was off. "Yan'er," he asked caringly, "what's wrong?"

All the top figures in the room looked toward her. They wanted to know why this usually spirited princess was now so down.

Ao Xinyan bit her lips. “Grand...Grandfather,” she said, voice trembling. “Did Zhang Ruochen...really...really die?”

Chapter 1223 - Ancestral Dragon Mountain, Divine Dragon Emissary

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ao Xinyan had strong emotions for Zhang Ruochen.

They both came from the sword master system in the east, and they were the first and the second sword master talents, respectively. Ao Xinyan had challenged Zhang Ruochen before, but she was defeated.

The emotions between them started then.

When they were refining themselves in Wood Spirit Void World, they went through more than one trial of life or death. Ao Xinyan got severely injured once, and Zhang Ruochen used a dragon pearl to heal her. They had intimate physical contacts back then.

Perhaps Zhang Ruochen only treated her as a close friend, but Ao Xinyan idolized him.

To Ao Xinyan, Zhang Ruochen was handsome and easy of mind. He had unrivalled talents and would never show mercy to his enemies, yet he was easygoing with his friends. He was so generous that he was willing to share any valuables he had.

After meeting Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan looked down upon all the other so-called talents.

Ao Xinyan knew Zhang Ruochen had a fiancée and that Zhang Ruochen was very close to his fiancée, so she hadn't been in contact with Zhang Ruochen after he left Yin and Yang Sect.

However, she had been following the news of Zhang Ruochen all the time. She had never forgotten that kiss and everything she'd been through with Zhang Ruochen. Every time she recalled them, she smiled.

Even if she couldn't be with him, she could still think of him.

Ao Xinyan couldn't handle the news that Zhang Ruochen was killed by trial lightning.

Zhang Ruochen was so exceptional. How was it possible that he had failed the life or death trial?

Ao Yi said, "If Zhang Ruochen had found a quiet place to do the life or death trial, he could've passed it, but he's too arrogant and tried to pass the trial while fighting the immortal vampires. He was indeed impressive and killed several immortal vampire saints, but he couldn't withstand the last trial lightning and got killed." Ao Xinyan still found it hard to accept. She walked to Ao Yi to pick up the signal flare.

Ao Xinyan was dazed for a while after reading everything on the signal flare, and then, she smiled with a bit irritation, destroying the signal flare.

"Zhang Ruochen was not an arrogant person. He must've been forced to trigger the trial lightning in a hopeless situation."

Ao Xinyan could imagine that Zhang Ruochen couldn't get any assistance in Taiyin Ancient City. He had to fight his way out of it.

She wished that she had been in Taiyin Ancient City. Even if she couldn't help Zhang Ruochen, she could have at least saved him from being all alone. At least she could have let him know that someone was willing to fight for him no matter what.

Hua La.

Holy Qi emerged on the ground of the palace.

A soldier wearing dragon armor showed up on the ground. He kneeled with one knee and said, "Clan leader, two divine dragons from Ancestral Dragon Mountain want to visit us. They've arrived in God Dream Swamp already."

“Divine Dragon and Half-Human clan cut contact with Ancestral Dragon Mountain a long time ago. Why did they send divine dragon emissaries here?”

Ao Yi frowned, seeing the arrival of divine dragon emissaries as a bad sign.

Did the chaos in the Savage Barren Secret Region spread to the edge?

Not long ago, a Taigu remain had become a supreme saint, which made it the beast emperor, and it wanted to unite all the savage beast races.

The races in the Savage Barren Secret Region fought each other to death. Lakes, forests and mountains were all tainted red.

Divine Dragon and Half-human clan stayed between the east and the barren. They didn't want to get into the chaos at all.

However, the divine dragon emissaries from Ancestral Dragon Mountain chose this moment to come to God Dream Swamp, which worried Ao Yi.

Yin and Yang Ocean was the sacred place of divine dragons.

Ancestral Dragon Mountain was the origin of the dragon race, and it was the holy place of all the dragons.

Even in the Savage Barren Secret Region, Ancestral Dragon Mountain was revered by all the savage beasts, just like ‘Three Paths’ to human monks.

Divine Dragon and Half-human race had part of the dragon blood. It had submitted itself to the first Central Empire and became friends with the human race, but it still had to show respect for Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

“Let them in. Let's see what they want.”

Ao Yi looked sharp. He stood up straight, and thirty-six golden dragon shadows appeared.

Powerful saint might rushed out of the palace, spreading for hundreds of miles.

The divine dragon emissaries were two-winged dragons who had reached the state of saint. They were called Ye Hong divine dragon emissary and Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary looked to the front and said, “Ao Yi is more powerful than I expected. He released his saint might to intimidate us.”

“So what? Does he dare make himself an enemy against Ancestral Dragon Mountain?” Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary sneered.

The two divine dragon emissaries also released their saint might.

They were glowing with black luster, turning the sky and land dark.

Ao!

Ao!

Two dragon sounds were transmitted.

All the people from Divine Dragon and Half-human race were horrified, looking to the sky.

Two dragon shadows that were larger than mountains flew across the sky. They looked blurry, and they had forces that could trump those of Flood beasts.

The two divine dragon emissaries shrunk their bodies and turned into two human males, landing on the ground.

They were wearing black scale armor, walking into the divine dragon palace.

The divine dragon palace turned dark. Only the golden dragon Qi coming from Ao Yi dispelled the darkness so that everyone could see the faces of Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary said, “I come here to send the message of Ancestral Dragon Mountain. We hope that you can establish an army to help Ancestral Dragon Mountain to conquer the east of the savage barren lands. When Quod

Emperor unites all the savage beast races, you will be greatly rewarded.”

Ao Xinyan’s father, Ao Jing, was very candid. He was upset by how divine dragon emissaries gave an order to Divine Dragon and Half-human Race like that.

Ao Jing sneered, ‘Why should we follow the order of Ancestral Dragon Mountain? When Divine Dragon and Half-human Race was almost annihilated, did Ancestral Dragon Mountain offer to help us? If it wasn’t for the empress’s army, we would’ve gone extinct.’”

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary glared at Ao Jing and said, “Who are you to judge Ancestral Dragon Mountain?”

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary formed a print and hit the chest of Ao Jing, knocking him away. Ao Jing hit a golden dragon pillar.

Ao Jing was already a saint, yet he couldn’t even defend himself against Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary.

The attack from Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary broke half the bones in Ao Jing’s body, rendering him immobilized.

Ao Yi had originally wanted to stop Ao Jing from upsetting Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

He didn’t expect the divine dragon emissaries to be so overbearing that they dared injure the young clan leader of Divine Dragon Half-human race.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary wanted to show their might by attacking Ao Jing.

He stared at Ao Jing, who was lying on the ground. “You have great body constitution to be able to survive that attack.”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary said, “Anyone who questions Ancestral Dragon Mountain will be ended.”

And then, Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary pulled out a ten-foot-long black dragon spear and struck toward Ao Jing. He wanted to intimidate the entire Divine Dragon Half-human Race by killing Ao Jing to teach them to follow the orders of Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary paused his attack.

Although he wanted to intimidate the Divine Dragon Half-human Race, he also needed to know how to behave.

If he killed the young clan leader of Divine Dragon Half-human Race, he would infuriate the Divine Dragon Half-human Race. Even if they were the divine dragon emissaries of divine dragon mountain, they wouldn't make it out of God Dream Swamp.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary still wielded his dragon spear.

Pu Chi.

That attack didn't pierce through the head of Ao Jing, instead, it pierced through the chest of Ao Jing.

Ao Jing was severely injured, but he didn't die

“You're so domineering! Do you want Divine Dragon Half-human Race to detach from the dragon race completely?”

Ao Xinyan suppressed the grief from seeing her father nailed to the ground. Her eyes gleamed with anger and she rushed forward.

She pulled the dragon spear out with her power.

“I'll kill you for touching my dragon spear!”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary clenched his fingers, letting out five sharp forces, grabbing toward Ao Xinyan.

He tried to assert himself just now, but he couldn't do it. He wouldn't let this chance go seeing Ao Xinyan rush out.

“She's the Princess Royal of Divine Dragon Half-human Race. Are you killing her too?”

Ao Yi was furious and slapped the desk with his palm.

“She's the princess royal of Divine Dragon Half-human Race?”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary immediately dispelled his sense of killing and put back the claw he had formed.

He took a step back and looked at Ao Xinyan standing in front of him. His eyes gleamed and he thought, It's indeed an unrivaled and exquisite beauty.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary's attitude immediately changed. He smiled and said, "I heard that Princess Yan has refined divine dragon bones and is about to gain true dragon body constitution. You're indeed amazing. You have the charm of a true dragon already."

Ao Xinyan helped Ao Jing up and sneered. She was very irritated by the two divine dragon emissaries.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary wasn't angry. He said, "Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is about to arrive in God Dream Swamp. He wishes to see the princess alone to study the essence of true dragon body constitution."

Chapter 1224 - Consolidating Saintly Look

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The so-called “true dragon” had been a divine dragon before becoming a god. After the divine dragons went extinct, no one dared to call themselves “true dragons” anymore.

However, some descendants with divine dragon blood could awaken the bloodline hidden deep within them. They could cultivate the true dragon form of a young divine dragon.

Ao Xinyan was extremely talented. With Zhang Ruochen and Blackie’s help, she got closer and closer to a true dragon form.

According to the various Saints’ guesses in the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, she could complete the form after undergoing the three Pre-Saint Trials and combining her bloodline with her body.

Under the clan’s full support, Ao Xinyan’s cultivation speed was very shocking. She’d already gone through the first Pre-Saint Trial.

She was the woman that they Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had his eyes on. She may become the new treasure of Ancient Dragon Mountain. The two Saint Dragons naturally couldn’t offend her.

Saint Dragon Ye Hong stepped out. “The Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan is part of the dragon race. We should work for the future of Ancient Dragon Mountain. We will give the clan leader a few days to consider this. When the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon arrives at Divine Dream Marsh, I hope you can give us a satisfactory reply.”

The two Saint Dragons left Divine Dragon Pavilion, but didn't leave the clan. They would stay at Divine Dream Marsh for now.

The upper level figures of the clan were all furious.

“The Dragon Saints of Ancient Dragon Mountain are too authoritative,” a hot-tempered man growled. “He hurt the clan leader without any warning. Clan Leader, are we just going to let them go like this?”

An elder of the clan sighed. “The Ancient Dragon Mountain has existed since ancient times. No one knows how powerful they are. Perhaps they still had fears when the First Central Emperor was at its peak. But now, the Empress has gone missing and the empire is in unprecedented chaos. There are no forces in the entire Kunlun's Field that they fear. If we try to go against them, it'll be like an egg attacking a stone.”

The older figures present were all clear how powerful Ancient Dragon Mountain was. Thus, they also understood the clan leader's difficulty.

It wasn't that they couldn't defeat the two Dragon Saints. It was that the consequences of defeating them may wipe out the entire clan.

“Clan Leader,” a Saint said. “Are we really going to listen to the Ancient Dragon Mountain's orders?”

“They don't even see us as part of the dragon race. They believe that we have lowly bloodlines and only want to use us as cannon fodder. Listening to their orders, we will only walk toward death.”

“Correct. The Ancient Dragon Mountain only wants to turn us into servants and slaves. We can't work for them, even if we die.”

...

This matter pertained to the lives of millions of Divine Dragon and Half Humans. Ao Yi's heart was also in a mess. This was extremely troublesome.

If they didn't listen to the Ancient Dragon Mountain, they would definitely suffer cruel revenge.

If they listened, the future of the clan would still be dark.

“The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Ancient Dragon Pavilion are working hard to develop a new treasure,” someone said. “They'll have a chance to become the second Emperor Bi. How could such a valuable status come to the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan? Did they really come for the princess?”

Ao Yi shot a glance at Ao Xinyan and sighed. “Yan'er, leave Divine Dream Marsh. Return to the Eastern Region Saint Academy to cultivate!”

“No, I'm not leaving.” Ao Xinyan's eyes were determined. “This is the clan's most critical moment. How can I escape as the eldest princess?”

Ao Xinyan wasn't stupid. She already guessed that her grandfather wouldn't surrender to Ancient Dragon Mountain. A huge war would probably erupt soon.

“After the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon comes,” Ao Yi tried again, “you won't be able to leave even if you want to. It's not time for you to be stubborn right now. You should learn to bow when needed.”

“Grandfather, no need to persuade me. I will live and die with the clan.” Ao Xinyan was insistent. Once she made a decision, she would never change her mind.

Ao Xinyan took the injured Ao Jing away from the Divine Dragon Pavilion.

Ao Yi was clear about Ao Xinyan's personality, so he didn't force her to do anything. He just started thinking about the plan.

Only the First Central Empire's imperial court could go against Ancient Dragon Mountain. Thus, he wrote a letter and had someone send it to the Eastern Region Saint King Mansion.

At the same time, he wrote some other letters to invite the forces that the clan was friendly with. He hoped they could aid the clan at the critical moment.

Whether a huge war would erupt or not, it was best to be prepared.

...

Zhang Ruochen sat on the four-winged silver crane. He traveled hurriedly while healing himself.

The four-winged silver crane was shockingly fast. It was comparable to a lower-level Saint. In only one day and night, they'd flown out of the Fallen-gods Mountain Range. They were close to the edge of the Eastern Region, approaching the Savage Barren Territory.

Whoosh—

Zhang Ruochen let out a long breath and stood up, loosening his limbs. After that, he let out a palm print. The air shook violently. A white cloud was pushed dozens of miles away.

“You're all healed?” Blackie asked.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and shook his head. “I was very badly hurt this time. I can't heal this quickly. Right now, I'm only 30 or 40% healed. As long as I don't meet an upper-level Saint, I can defeat any other Saint.”

“You only healed 30 to 40% in one day and night,” Blackie said. “If my Spring Pill is successful, it'll probably only take an hour for you to heal completely.”

The pill furnace that was making the Spring Pill was placed on the four-winged silver crane's back. Strands of dark Pill Spirit spread from it, bringing a heavy fragrance. Zhang Ruochen only took a breath, but he already felt the pain in his heart and lungs subside a bit.

“How much longer will it take to be completed?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“The Spring Pill isn't that amazing of a divine pill, so it won't take that long. It'll be completed soon.”

Divine pills also had different classes: basic, middle, upper, earth, and heaven divine pills.

It was said that there were classes higher than the heaven divine pills. However, pills that reached that level all contained powerful spirits. They had human-like intelligence and could turn into human form. They could unleash destructive combat abilities. Even a Saint wouldn't be able to fight them.

Such a divine pill was extremely rare. They would become undefeatable figures after coming out of the furnace. Who dared to eat them?

The Spring Pill and Divine Origin Pill were both basic divine pills. They were relatively easy to make and didn't take that much time.

Of course, even a basic divine pill was worth a fortune. Even a Saint would be tempted and fight for one.

Zhang Ruochen stopped healing himself. He started testing just how much he'd improved after undergoing the three Pre-Saint Trials.

A cultivator wouldn't immediately become a Saint after the trials. They had to first cultivate a Saint Look and create a saintly source. Then they would finally become a Saint.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was only a Third Trial Pre-Saint. There was still a small distance between him and a Martial Saint.

"After the trial thunders, my Spiritual Power has actually reached the 51st level." Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

For Spiritual Power Saints, they'd be able to counter mid-level Saints after their Spiritual Power reached the 51st level. Some more powerful ones could even fight upper-level Saints.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn't major in Spiritual Power. He hadn't cultivated many advanced spells either. He couldn't unleash such strong combat ability with just his Spiritual Power.

The improvement in Spiritual Power could only strengthen his control of space and time.

After the third Pre-Saint Trial, his combat ability hadn't improved too much. After all, he could already counter upper-level Saints after his physical body became a Saint. He was already crazy. The accomplishments in Martial Way seemed insignificant now.

Zhang Ruochen had to cultivate his Saintly Look. Only then would his abilities truly improve.

After going through the third Pre-Saint Trial, every cultivator had to use the Rules of Saintly Way that they comprehended to make their own Saintly Look. That way, their combat ability would improve greatly. Their power would also be closer to that of a Saint's.

“All cultivators who studied the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture would consolidate the Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look. I wonder just how powerful it is.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't wait. He closed his eyes and entered the right state. All the Rules of Saintly Way that he'd comprehended were placed before him.

Rules of Sword Way, time, space, Palm Way... All the rules appeared before him. Some were thick, some were thin. They lined up all around Zhang Ruochen.

He raised his arms and forced all the rules together. “Consolidate,” he uttered.

Something unexpected happened. The Rules of Palm Way actually separated from the group and formed a Saintly Look alone. This one wasn't human-shaped. It was a dragon and an elephant.

The dragon wrapped around the elephant. It shone with golden light, seeming very sacred.

How can this be? How come the Rules of Palm Way separated alone? Can I consolidate various Saintly Looks?

Zhang Ruochen was surprised, not knowing what had happened. Without thinking further, he forged on. He

manipulated the Rules of Sword Way and tried to create a second Saintly Look.

If it was possible, then he may very well become the first Martial Saint to have two Saintly Looks.

Perhaps two wasn't the limit. Maybe he could have three, four...or even more.

Chapter 1225 - Thirty-three Levels

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen's sword mastery could rival that of the top-tier sword master talents. The sword master rules he refined were more profound than palm master rules.

Rules of sword mastery gathered like spider nets, condensing a saint sword that was dozens of feet long.

It was a sword shaped into a saint look.

It was not a human shape.

Most of the saint looks condensed by monks were giant human shadows that looked exactly like the monks themselves.

Even sword warriors were no exceptions.

Only few of them could condense sword shapes into saint looks.

“Continue.”

Zhang Ruochen separated the rules of fist way and condensed the third saint look.

The third saint look wasn't in human shape either, instead, it was a tumbling saint river above Zhang Ruochen. It looked like a real river.

“Is that the mythical Water Luo?”

Zhang Ruochen knew that he could only perform the fist way saint look because of Luo Water Fist Technique. Luo Water Fist Technique was a fist technique created by Luo Xu, which contained the essence of Luo Water.

It was only a river, yet it had its saint way rules. How could it not be amazing?

“I have to get back to Heavenly Devil Mountain and see the Luo Water,” Zhang Ruochen whispered to himself.

Blackie’s eyes popped and looked at Zhang Ruochen like it was a demon. It said, “What did you do, Zhang Ruochen?”

Four-wing Silver Light Crane was also shocked. It wondered how terrific that human being was.

The more saint looks emerged, the heavier the Four-wing Silver Light Crane felt. Fortunately, it had solid cultivation, otherwise it wouldn’t have enough strength to carry them anymore.

“I don’t know what’s happening either.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. He didn’t dare keep refining saint looks anymore as he was afraid that something might go wrong.

“I thought you were very knowledgeable. Do you know any other creatures who can refine so many saint looks?” Zhang Ruochen asked Blackie.

“No.”

Blackie kept shaking its head and it didn’t know what had happened to Zhang Ruochen.

However, Blackie immediately changed and said, “I’ve learnt of some legends in an ancient classic. It says that some mysterious creatures a long time ago were able to refine more than one saint look and condense several saint sources.”

“What kind of mysterious creatures?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Creatures that don’t belong to any of the five elements,” Blackie said.

Five elements: Gold, wood, water, fire and mud.

Everything in this world belonged to the five elements.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I’ve refined five elements chaotic body, which means I’m still within the five elements. How will you

explain this?”

Blackie smiled, “Those are mere legends. I don’t believe there’re any creatures who can transcend five elements, unless they’re gods.”

“Don’t overthink. If you can refine one more saint look, then you can form one more saintly source. Perhaps it’s better for you to refine your saintly way. Not every creature gets the opportunity you have.”

Zhang Ruochen then talked with Blackie for a while, asking it the questions about turning to saints from half saints.

After all, Zhang Ruochen had been exploring by himself without a proper guide. He’d only learnt some methods to refine saint looks and condense saintly sources from books.

Zhang Ruochen started to refine saint looks again after the talk.

His sword master, palm play and fist way had all been refined into saint looks, and now, he was going to refine time way and space way.

Both time way and space way were shapeless, and the saint looks they were condensed into were also shapeless. Only Zhang Ruochen was able to see them.

Time saint look and space saint look didn’t have any forms. They only looked like two giant whirlpools.

Blackie also noticed that. Its eyes popped, and it took out a hundred-patterns saint weapon and threw it toward the space saint look.

Pi Pa.

The hundred-patterns saint weapon was dragged inside by the whirlpool around the space saint look.

An invisible force twisted that hundred-patterns saint weapon, and then, an iron ball the size of a fist fell from the sky.

“A hundred-patterns saint weapon is very solid, yet it’s been pressed into an iron ball.”

The four-wing silver light crane was so scared that it started to shiver. It feared that the saint look might drag it inside and kill it.

Blackie was a bit surprised. It then took out another hundred-patterns saint weapon and threw it toward the time saint look.

Peng.

The second it touched the whirlpool around the time saint look, it exploded and turned into metal powder.

The four-wing and silver light crane fiercely shook its wing and said, "Can you please stop it, my lord. If you keep doing this, I'll be killed by those two forces."

"Stop talking and fly to God Dream Swamp."

Blackie always thought it was invincible. However, when it saw the time saint look and space saint look, it immediately lost its temper.

Zhang Ruochen could not only outclass everyone at the same level, but also be a huge challenge to those saints who were several levels more advanced than him.

"Acala."

Zhang Ruochen raised his hands above his head, and gleaming golden light shone between his hands.

It seemed as if a sun was rising above the ground, shining upon the mountains and rivers down there, covering the leaves with golden light.

"Is it ever going to stop? A sixth saint look?" Blackie screamed.

After Acala was condensed, four-wing silver light crane felt that it was being pressured by a hundred thousand mountains. It couldn't help falling to the ground.

Hong Long.

The four-wing and silver-light crane fell into the forest, blowing away all the plants.

Four-wing and silver-light crane was a level-six savage beast, which could rival a level-nine half saint, and it was an overlord. It could easily carry a mountain.

However, it was being pressured by the Acala. It had passed out. The saint look of Acala was in a human shape which looked exactly like Zhang Ruochen. It was as large as a mountain, giving out golden light, which had the conception of Buddha.

The savage beasts around all had sensed the forces of Acala saint look. They were all shivering from horror. They knew that a great being was around them, so they all hid in the cave.

“Is ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ related to Thousand Buddha Way to some extent?”

Zhang Ruochen looked confused.

He always knew that ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ was the most advanced scripture of the Zhang family. Only Emperor Ming could refine it.

The last generation of Emperor Ming had been taught in Yin and Yang Sect before. The Sacred Central Empire should be in a good relationship with Taichi Sect.

How was the supreme scripture of Sacred Central Empire related to Thousand Buddha Way? Zhang Ruochen was confused. After thinking for a while, he stopped pondering the reasons. He decided to wait until he checked ancestral records of the Zhang family where he might find some reasons.

Together with Acala, Zhang Ruochen had refined six saint looks in total.

Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized the holy Qi inside him. He raised one arm and pressed toward a mountain thirty miles away.

Acala saint look also raised its hand and pressed toward the top of the mountain, following Zhang Ruochen.

Hong Long Long.

The mountain was leveled.

Only stones and a huge hand print pit were left.

Four-wing silver-light crane was already woken up. When it raised its head and saw this, it was so scared that it fainted again.

Blackie was standing nearby, holding the pill refining furnace. It said, “Zhang Ruochen, the saint look you refined is extraordinary. I saw a monk who refined one of the six extraordinary books, ‘Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription,’ before. Even the Heavenly Devil Saint Look is not at this level. Did you also practice one of the six extraordinary books also?”

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “But perhaps it’s related to one of the extraordinary books.”

“Which one?” Blackie asked.

“Why would I tell you?”

‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ was the biggest secret of the royal Zhang family. Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t tell anyone else about it.

It wasn’t because he didn’t trust Blackie, but the rules in Zhang family were important.

Zhang Ruochen read ‘Emperor King Nine-sky Scripture’ which had talked about one of the six extraordinary books, ‘Thirty-three Levels,’ before.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen reckoned that ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ might be related to ‘Thirty-three Levels.’

‘Thirty-three Levels,’ ‘Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription,’ ‘Godly Fall Scripture,’ ‘Universe Martial Techniques,’ ‘Eight Nine Mysterious Move,’ and ‘Inborn Law.’

The six extraordinary books were the most top-tier techniques within the human race. Each of them had countless legends.

Any monk who obtained even one chapter of the six extraordinary books would have much more power than those at the same level.

However, most of the six extraordinary books were incomplete.

The ‘Taichi Natal Way’ Yin and Yang Sect had was only a part of ‘Inborn Law.’

“Then don’t. I’m not interested in that at all.”

Blackie had part of the ‘Godly Fall Scripture,’ and it thought it was the most invincible scripture in the world. It wasn’t interested in the techniques Zhang Ruochen was practicing at all.

“That saint look you refined is indeed impressive, but when Han Xue refines a Godly Fall saint look, it’ll definitely trump yours,” Blackie said smugly.

Blackie hoped that Han Xue could come back from the nether world as soon as possible. If her power trumped Zhang Ruochen, it would be so amusing.

Blackie reached out its claw and tried to wake up the four-wing silver-light crane on the ground.

The four-wing silver-light crane was very timid. It refused to carry them at all costs. It told them that they’d arrived at the edge of Savage Barren Secret Region, and that they would enter God Dream Swamp very soon.

Chapter 1226 - 80,000-Mile Divine Dream Marsh

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The four-winged silver crane didn't lie to Zhang Ruochen. It flew speedily for 600 miles and the craggy mountains disappeared, replaced by a misty marsh.

The air here was fresh and the scenery was beautiful. It had a blue sky, white clouds, and looked like a paradise.

The clear rivers stretched for tens of thousands of miles. You couldn't even see the end. Islands of various sizes dotted the water's surface.

Zhang Ruochen vaguely felt various strong auras radiating from some of the islands.

He took a deep breath and he had an intoxicated expression. "This is truly a haven for cultivation. No wonder the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan lived here for generations instead of moving to the eastern region."

"The 80,000-mile Divine Dream Marsh is a fertile land," Blackie said. "The divine medications and saintly items born here each year surpass any other land. Countless human and savage beast forces want this land.

"Unfortunately, Divine Dream Marsh intersects with the eastern region and Savage Barren Territory. The geographical location is special. If the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan didn't have blood of both the human and divine dragons, the human race and beasts would probably have upended this place with war."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. Clearly, he had some knowledge of Divine Dream Marsh too.

“How will we look for the wormhole? Break into Divine Dream Marsh directly?” Blackie was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would do it forcefully, so he reminded, “They aren’t like other Half Human Clans. They inherited part of the divine dragon’s power, along with some of their techniques and spells. Their heritage is longer than the others. They’re definitely strong. It’s not just a few Saints.”

“I definitely will not do it forcefully.” Zhang Ruochen took out a badge. Holding it up, he said, “With this, I can become a respected guest of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan.”

The badge had four powerful words—Yin and Yang Sect.

The Yin and Yang Sect were allies with the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan. They often cooperated in strategy and interests.

Soon after Zhang Ruochen entered Divine Dream Marsh, tall waves surged on the river. A surveillance team dressed in armor stopped Zhang Ruochen’s path. There were 20 men riding 20 water beasts.

The man at the front was Ao Zhan. He looked to be around 30 years old. He was the seventh general of the surveillance team.

“Halt. This is the Divine Dream Marsh, only the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan can enter. Humans and savage beasts cannot.”

As the seventh general, Ao Zhan’s cultivation was at the peak of the Ninth Level of the Half-Saint Realm. He had quite a high status in the clan.

Ever since the Dragon Saints came to Divine Dream Marsh, the clan had entered high alert. Ao Zhan personally guarded the entrance. Any creature that entered would be stopped.

Zhang Ruochen was dressed in a robe and looked very calm. He took out the Yin and Yang Sect disciple’s badge. “I am the heir of the Yin and Yang Sect. I came just to visit the Clan Leader.”

Ao Zhan took the badge. After checking it carefully, he confirmed that it was the Yin and Yang Sect disciple's badge.

When he looked back at Zhang Ruochen, his eyes were much friendlier. More importantly, he couldn't see Zhang Ruochen's true form with his cultivation.

This could only mean that Zhang Ruochen's cultivation far surpassed him or that he was strong in Spiritual Power.

No matter what, he was definitely an important figure of the Yin and Yang Sect. He was also an esteemed guest of the clan and couldn't be offended.

Zhang Ruochen didn't change his appearance. He just shrouded himself in Spiritual Power. Only those stronger than him in Spiritual Power could see his true form.

Ao Zhan smiled. "May I know your name or which Saint you are under?"

"My surname is Zhang. I am an unknown figure. I once studied under the Moon-Burial Sword Saint in the Sword Pavilion for a period."

Ao Zhan's expression turned awed. The man spoke humbly, but no one who entered the Sword Pavilion and could study under the Moon-Burial Sword Saint was simple.

"Brother Zhang, welcome."

The water beast under Ao Zhan's feet was a Tide Beast. It was a Grade Six upper beast. It was more than 80 meters long and looked like a huge rhinoceros swimming in the water.

Zhang Ruochen flew to the Tide Beast's back. He stood shoulder-to-shoulder with Ao Zhan and moved to the depths of the Divine Dream Marsh.

Ao Zhan was interested in Zhang Ruochen. Eyes gleaming, he said, "Brother Zhang, if you can cultivate with the Moon-Burial Sword Saint, you must be advanced in the Sword Way, right? Which sword have you reached on the Wordless Sword Manual?"

Zhang Ruochen gazed at the beautiful marsh. Facing the wind with his arms behind his back, he chuckled. "I only studied

with the Moon-Burial Sword Saint for a while. I am not his disciple. How can I be advanced in the Sword Way?"

He obviously didn't dare to speak the truth. Was he supposed to tell Ao Zhan that he'd already completed Sword Six and had studied Sword Seven too?

Ao Zhan was very curious. "Brother Zhang, your cultivation must be advanced, right?" he continued to ask. "How many Pre-Saint Trials have you gone through?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't avoid the question this time. "I just went through the third trial," he answered honestly.

Ao Zhan was envious. He looked at Zhang Ruochen differently now. There was more reverence.

If one could go through three Pre-Saint Trials, he would definitely be able to become a Saint. A Saint and Half-Saint's difference was like an emperor and the court officials. It was a dramatic difference.

Ao Zhan was much more careful when he continued to speak to Zhang Ruochen. He didn't dare be as casual as before.

Along the way, Zhang Ruochen saw many guards and passed by many defensive formations. Each time, Ao Zhan had to show himself so the other party would let them pass.

Zhang Ruochen grew doubtful, but he purposely looked casual. Smiling, he asked, "Is the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan always so heavily guarded?"

"No," Ao Zhan said. "It's just, recently..." Here, he paused before continuing. "Recently, the Savage Barren Territory's chaos has become fiercer and fiercer. We naturally need to be cautious too."

Zhang Ruochen could tell that Ao Zhan wasn't speaking the truth, but he didn't press. He closed his eyes and continued to heal.

Just before entering the Divine Dream Marsh, Blackie's Spring Pills had come out of the furnace. There were 12 pills.

Zhang Ruochen ingested one and refined it while traveling. Now, he was mostly recovered.

The Spring Pill is indeed miraculous, he thought. No wonder it's a healing Divine Pill. Sometimes, a Spring Pill is worth a life.

The Tide Beast was very fast. In four hours, it brought Zhang Ruochen and Ao Zhan to a large island in the heart of the Divine Dream Marsh.

This island was incredibly large. It had 2,000 miles of coastline. It was shrouded in white clouds and gave off a mysterious feeling.

More than half of the clan lived on this island. After reaching Dragon Spirit Island, Zhang Ruochen and Ao Zhan quickly arrived at the Divine Dragon Pavilion. They went straight in.

Zhang Ruochen was a Third Trial Pre-Saint and had studied with the Moon-Burial Sword Saint. He was definitely a powerful figure of the Yin and Yang Sect. The Clan Leader naturally had to welcome him personally.

Zhang Ruochen bowed respectfully. "Greetings, Clan Leader."

Ao Yi studied the young man from the Yin and Yang Sect. It felt like he had a thin layer of mist shrouding him. Ao Yi couldn't see his features even after using a Saintly Look.

"What a powerful young man. You must be a Spiritual Power Saint instead of some Third Trial Pre-Saint." Ao Yi's voice turned colder. "The Yin and Yang Sect only has a few Spiritual Power Saints and I know them all. You are not one of them."

Zhang Ruochen smiled calmly. "The Yin and Yang Sect has such a rich heritage. Even the Saints of the sect do not know how many strong cultivators there are. How are you sure that I am not one of the Spiritual Power Saints?"

"Why did you claim that you're a Third Trial Pre-Saint?" Ao Yi asked. "And you claimed that you studied with the Moon-Burial Sword Saint? Isn't that contradictory?"

"It is not contradictory. In addition to being a Spiritual Power Saint, I'm also a Third Trial Pre-Saint and swordsman."

He put his fingers together, forming a sword technique.

Whoosh!

Thousands of beams of Sword Qi instantly appeared in the pavilion. They whizzed around Zhang Ruochen.

So powerful, Ao Yi couldn't help but praise, even with his mindset and cultivation.

This man was so young but already so advanced in Spiritual Power and the Sword Way. He was definitely the secret heir of the Yin and Yang Sect.

Amazing, truly amazing.

“Why did you come to visit me in the Divine Dream Marsh?” Ao Yi asked.

Before Zhang Ruochen could reply, Ao Zhan ran into the pavilion. He looked anxious. “Clan Leader, the two Dragon Saints went to Heart Moon Lake to see Princess Yan, but they were refused. Now, they actually want to break in. We can't stop them. Even the general was injured by them.”

“How dare they! What are they doing? Forcefully arresting someone?” Ao Yi's anger burst out completely. “Stay to welcome the guest. I will visit Heart Moon Lake personally.”

Roar!

Ao Yi transformed into a huge dragon. He charged off of his throne and left the pavilion.

“Princess Yan...” Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself. Then he asked, “General Ao Zhan, what happened? What Dragon Saints?”

Since Ao Zhan had already leaked the information, he didn't keep hiding it. He told Zhang Ruochen about the Dragon Saints. After all, the Yin and Yang Sect were reliable allies. They weren't outsiders.

Chapter 1227 - : To Be Fair

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I can’t believe the divine dragon emissaries from Ancestral Dragon Mountain came to God Dream Swamp. The chaos in Savage Barren Secret Region has spread really far.” Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin with his fingers.

Ao Jing frowned, looking tense.

Zhang Ruochen tapped his shoulder and said, “Nothing to worry about. The clan leader is heading there now. No matter how overbearing the divine dragon emissaries are, they won’t trespass on Heart Moon Lake.”

Ao Zhan sighed and said, “That’s not what I’m worried about. If we upset Ancestral Dragon Mountain, we might put our entire race in grave danger.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He walked to a chair at the left of the palace, sat down and said, “There’s no need to worry about that. Ancestral Dragon Mountain isn’t the only power in Savage Barren Secret Region. There’re still a couple of other powers that can rival it. Now, there’re wars everywhere in Savage Barren Secret Region, and the powers are fighting each other all the time. Even if you offend Ancestral Dragon Mountain, they can’t send much power to fight Divine Dragon Half-human race.”

Ao Jing said, “Brother Zhang, there’s something you should know. Ancestral Dragon Mountain has an incredible influence in Savage Barren Secret Region. Many savage beasts are their subsidiaries.

“If Divine Dragon Half-human Race doesn’t follow the orders of Ancestral Dragon Mountain, it just needs to ask a couple of

savage beast races around God Dream Swamp to attack us, then we'll be rendered helpless.

“Ancestral Dragon Mountain is too powerful. There're indeed some forces in Savage Barren Secret Region that can rival them, but not Divine Dragon Half-human race.”

Zhang Ruochen had heard of Ancestral Dragon Mountain before, and it had existed for a long time, longer than any human kingdom. Perhaps only First Central Empire at its prime could rival it.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen understood their difficulties. They were furious, yet they had to suppress it, just as a sect had to behave in front of First Central Empire. If they didn't behave, it was very easy for the imperial government to annihilate an entire sect.

After a short while, saint might spread from the divine dragon palace.

The clan leader of Divine Dragon Half-human race, Ao Yi, walked out with his hands behind his back, looking furious. He sat back in the seat at the top.

The two divine dragon emissaries walked into the palace as well, upset.

The seniors from Divine Dragon Half-human race walked out.

One of the mid-class saints from Divine Dragon Half-human race was severely injured. His armor was rugged with bloodstains everywhere.

He was the leader of the patrol team, Ao Chenglie.

Ao Chenglie had tried to stop the divine dragon emissaries from entering Heart Moon Lake, but he couldn't rival the two divine dragon emissaries and got severely wounded.

All the seniors from Divine Dragon Half-human race were indignant, glaring at the two divine dragon emissaries standing in the center of the divine dragon palace, clenching their fists.

They were just divine dragon emissaries from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, yet they were so tyrannical that they kept injuring the saints from Divine-dragon Half-human race.

If it wasn't for the clan leader, the leader of the patrol team would've been killed.

Nobody could put up with this.

The two divine dragon emissaries still looked disdainful. They were only half dragons tainted with human blood, so they had to tolerate it.

If they dared confront Ancestral Dragon Mountain, they would be annihilated in a second.

After which, the wing dragon race could occupy God Dream Swamp, a saint region filled with holy Qi.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary said, "Leader, we just wanted to visit Princess Yan to send a message from Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, yet we were attacked by your saints. What is the meaning of this? Are you upset by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon or Ancestral Dragon Mountain?"

"How dare you still speak like that!"

The vice leader of the patrol team stood out and wanted to crush the head of Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary.

Unfortunately, his cultivation was way inferior to that of Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary. If he tried to make any attacks, he might get humiliated.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary shot a glance at the vice leader of the patrol team and said, "If you want to challenge me, be my guest. I'll definitely give you a chance."

"Step back, Ao Xianyun."

Ao Yi looked mad. He gave an order before looking back at the two divine dragon emissaries. He said, "I've respected you because you're the divine dragon emissaries from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, but respect should be mutual. Don't be too reckless, unless you want me to fall out with you."

Ao Yi had already showed his anger.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary wasn't scared at all. He laughed, "You said that respect is mutual, but have you

respected us? We are, after all, divine dragon emissaries, yet we can't even walk freely in God Dream Swamp?"

A female voice was transmitted from the palace.

"Heart Moon Lake is where I reside. I've never allowed any men inside before. If I don't want to see you, you shouldn't try to trespass."

Ao Xinyan and the young clan leader Ao Jing walked into the divine dragon palace.

Ao Xinyan was indeed exquisite. Every inch of her skin sparkled with holy light, and there was dragon Qi flowing around her arms and waist. She attracted the attention from all monks the second she walked into the palace.

Zhang Ruochen was also in the divine dragon palace, but he was sitting in the corner, watching.

When he looked at Ao Xinyan, his eyes glinted, and he smiled.

Ao Xinyan's face and temperament had drastically changed compared to when she was in the east. She looked holy and regal.

Her immaturity had withered away, and she wasn't as spoiled as before. She looked elegant and mysterious.

That temperament caught Zhang Ruochen's attention immediately.

He had never realized the charm of this princess from Divine Dragon half-human race.

Ao Jing stood beside Ao Xinyan and said angrily, "Even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon won't survive if he tries to trespass in the bedroom of Yan Er, not to mention you."

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary said sarcastically, "You haven't recovered from the injuries, have you, young clan leader? Did you get brain damage from that? You'd better check yourself before saying something like that. We won't bother if you upset me and Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary, but if you offend Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, your identity isn't enough to save your life."

“You...”

Ao Jing spit out saintly blood because of his indignation.

Ao Xinyan was also furious, and her breast shook. She looked cold, “Do you still want to survive God Dream Swamp?”

A blue saint sword flew out of her head. She held it with her hand, pointing at the two divine dragon emissaries.

“Kill them.”

“How dare you swagger around in God Dream Swamp like this?”

The other seniors from Divine Dragon half-human race all took out their saint weapons or mobilized their holy Qi, encircling the two divine dragon emissaries.

Divine Dragon half-human race didn't dare wrong Ancestral Dragon Mountain, but what the two divine dragon emissaries did was too far, and nobody could tolerate it.

Hua.

The two divine dragon emissaries released their saint might, and two giant dragon shadows rushed out of their bodies, forcing the members from divine dragon half-human race who were below the state of saint to step back.

“What are you doing? Many races in Savage Barren want to occupy God Dream Swamp. If you dare hurt me, your entire race will be annihilated instantly.”

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary wasn't scared of the saints from Divine Dragon Half-human race at all.

Killing divine dragon emissaries wasn't a small deal. It had to do with the survival of Divine Dragon Half-human race.

All the saints from Divine Dragon Half-human race looked to Ao Yi, asking for his advice.

Ao Yi looked very tense. He clenched his fist, having a huge struggle inside. It was difficult for him to make a decision. He didn't want to offend Ancestral Dragon Mountain if he had any other choice.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary chuckled and said, “I suggest you suppress your anger. Even if you attack us altogether, you won’t be able to kill us. We’ve carried true treasures coming to God Dream Swamp. It’s easy for us to get out.”

Ao Yi became tenser.

It was dead silent in the divine dragon palace. Everyone’s holy Qi was tumbling, and there might be a war among saints erupting at any time.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly stood up, smiled and said, “Everyone, can I have an honest and fair opinion?”

Everyone looked to Zhang Ruochen.

Only Ao Yi and Ao Zhan knew the identity of Zhang Ruochen, so other monks all looked at Zhang Ruochen, confused.

Ao Yi frowned. He was way too irritated to remember the disciple of Yin and Yang Sect who was still in the divine dragon palace.

“This has nothing to do with you. Ao Zhan, escort our guest out now,” Ao Yi said.

“Brother Zhang, it’s very dangerous here. Let’s leave now.”

Ao Zhan tried to bring Zhang Ruochen out.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t intend to leave.

If the two divine dragon emissaries hadn’t mentioned the name of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Zhang Ruochen might not have wanted to meddle with the issues between Divine Dragon Half-human race and Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

However, since the two divine dragon emissaries were working for Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Zhang Ruochen had to interfere now.

Many human elites died in Blue Dragon Void World because of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Zhang Ruochen could never forget Yingsha City where human bodies lay everywhere. It was a hellish scene.

Chapter 1228 - Might Of Saintly Look

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“And who are you?”

Dragon Saint Ye Hong trained his eyes on Zhang Ruochen. His pupils constricted to the size of needles to see Zhang Ruochen's features clearly. His Spiritual Power hadn't reached level 50 yet. No matter how sharp his saintly eyes his were, he still couldn't penetrate the Spiritual Power barrier surrounding Zhang Ruochen.

“I am only a nameless figure. Even if I answer you, you still will not know my name.”

He walked into the center of the Divine Dragon Pavilion with heavy and steady steps. All the cultivators in the pavilion curiously studied the young man clad in a white robe. They didn't know where he got the courage to stand up and speak to the Dragon Saints.

Ao Xinyan's thin brows furrowed slightly. She felt that this figure was extremely familiar. Unfortunately, his Spiritual Power was too advanced. She couldn't see his features clearly at all.

Dragon Saint Ye Yun scoffed. “You're clearly a Spiritual Power Saint, yet you say you're a nameless figure. You're definitely hiding your identity. It seems that you're famous in the human world. But no matter how famous you are, you better not get involved in the Ancient Dragon Mountain's matters. Otherwise, only death awaits you.”

He could feel that the young man's aura wasn't that strong. He was probably a Spiritual Power Saint who'd just reached level 50.

Plus, with his age, he couldn't be too strong either.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "I am only an outsider. I don't want to get involved. I only want to say something fair."

"Something fair?" Dragon Saint Ye Yun said.

Faced with two Dragon Saints' might, Zhang Ruochen was still very composed. "This territory is under human rule. You two are definitely too offensive and should restrain yourselves."

"This is under human rule?" Dragon Saint Ye Yun's eyes turned dangerously cold. "You want us to restrain ourselves?"

He laughed directly, seemingly mocking Zhang Ruochen's ignorance. Then he wiped his smile away instantly. He spat out icy Qi accompanied by a thunderous voice.

"Who do you think you are to tell a Dragon Saint of the Ancient Dragon Mountain like this?"

Crackle, crackle.

Ice formed over the ground, pillars, and tiles. Sharp icicles poked out.

Ao Yi knew that Zhang Ruochen was the heir of the Yin and Yang Sect. Afraid that something would happen to him, he ordered, "Ao Zhan, hurry and take the guest away."

"You think leaving is that easy?"

Dragon Saint Ye Hong stepped forward. With his foot as the center, a ring of icy power surged forward, sending Ao Zhan flying away.

He was already an upper-level Saint. Even a casual attack was unbearable for a Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Ao Zhan's armor had a layer of ice on it. He crashed into the metal wall with a crack. Fissures opened up all over Ao Zhan's armor. Blood flowed out of the cracks.

“How dare you hurt someone?”

Holy Qi flooded out of Ao Xinyan’s body. It went into the saintly sword. She was about to attack Dragon Saint Ye Hong. However, her expression turned shocked. With a boom, Dragon Saint Ye Hong arched back by a palm and flew into the air.

Ao Xinyan quickly steadied herself and dodged to the right.

Dragon Saint Ye Hong brushed past her. He flew out of Divine Dragon Pavilion and crashed onto the ground outside.

What just happened?

The upper level figures of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan all looked in unison at the young robed man in the center.

He’d really sent a Dragon Saint flying with one palm? Where did he get this courage? Where did he get this power?

The other Dragon Saint, Ye Yun, was taken aback as well.

Zhang Ruochen pulled his hand back. The strands of strong Holy Qi flowed back into the seven apertures of his palm.

“You dare to attack me secretly? You’re looking for death.”

Dragon Saint Ye Hong rushed back into the pavilion. Black light scattered from him. He held a black spear and stabbed straight at Zhang Ruochen’s heart.

Roar!

A flood dragon’s shadow appeared on the long black spear, letting out a deafening roar.

The upper level figures of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan all retreated to the edge of the pavilion. They activated the defensive formation and hid inside it.

Only the stronger Saints remained standing in the pavilion. They stared nervously at Dragon Saint Ye Hong who was charging at Zhang Ruochen. They didn’t attack. After all, that young man could send Dragon Saint Ye Hong flying with one palm. He was definitely stronger and may even be able to fight with Dragon Saint Ye Hong.

Ye Hong's true form was a winged dragon. He was a pure dragon. Thus, he was very powerful.

Zhang Ruochen stood straight and tall in his spot. Grabbing in the air, he said softly, "Lend me the sword."

Ao Xinyan's sword broke free from her control. It flew away and appeared in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Instead of grasping the hilt, Zhang Ruochen pushed Sword Intent into the saint sword.

Clang!

The saint sword spun rapidly, producing many grating sounds. It crashed against the black spear.

The two forces were both strong. The various Saints of the clan all retreated from the shockwave and had to hide in the defensive formation.

Saintly might in the Divine Dragon Pavilion tossed like boiling water. Only Ao Yi could remain steady, still sitting on his throne.

"What a powerful young man. He can actually counter a Dragon Saint."

It was their first meeting, but Ao Yi had already praised Zhang Ruochen countless times. He'd already thought highly of Zhang Ruochen's abilities, but now, he realized he'd still underestimated the man.

Ao Zhan was very badly hurt. Sitting inside the defensive formation, he stared at Zhang Ruochen and chuckled wryly. "So he is this powerful in the Sword Way. I can only look up to him."

"He's so young but so strong. Who can he be?" Ao Jing, young leader of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, was also shocked. How could someone so strong be a nameless figure?

Ao Xinyan bit her lips. The more she stared at Zhang Ruochen's back, the more familiar he seemed. "How can his back be so familiar?" she murmured to herself. "He... Didn't he die from the trial thunder? It can't be him!"

Right now, Ao Xinyan was nervous and also excited for some reason. Her heart beat extremely quickly. She really wanted to run over and tear apart the Spiritual Power barrier around the man to see who he truly was.

“You’re quite powerful, huh? Let me exchange some blows.”

Dragon Saint Ye Yun saw that it was difficult for Ye Hong and Zhang Ruochen to determine a winner. Instead of continuing to wait, he also joined the battle.

“Thunder God Tripod.”

A tripod flew out of his forehead, appearing in his hands. There were more than 100 bolts of thunder on the tripod. Crackling with shocking power, it went for Zhang Ruochen’s back.

Eyes gleaming, Zhang Ruochen looked back. Sword Way Saintly Look, he thought.

Whoosh!

Tens of thousands of Sword Way rules poured out of Zhang Ruochen’s back. It formed a huge sword’s shadow and cut down on Dragon Saint Ye Yun.

Kaboom!

Dragon Saint Ye Yun flew back. The dragon scales on his arms were sliced open by the Sword Qi. Red blood flowed out.

“How is this possible? He actually has a sword-shaped Saintly Look...” Dragon Saint Ye Yun was a bit shocked.

Once again, Zhang Ruochen controlled the Saintly Look and cut down, sending Dragon Saint Ye Hong flying. The sharp Sword Qi left bloody gashes on Ye Hong’s chest.

Zhang Ruochen had hurt two Dragon Saints by himself. This combat ability dumbfounded all the cultivators present.

Dragon Saint Ye Hong became truly furious. “The space is too small here and I’m cramped. If you dare, let us go fight outside!”

“Fight outside?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “What if you aren’t my match and escape?”

“Escape?” Dragon Saint Ye Hong echoed. “What a joke. The noble dragon race will never escape.”

Ye Yun scoffed coldly. Electric light shot out in all directions. “Let us fight outside!” he said boldly. “Whoever escapes is a bastard. How about that?”

“Fine! Let us have a good fight outside.”

Zhang Ruochen seemed very carefree. Transforming into a blur, he flew out of Divine Dragon Pavilion first.

Dragon Saint Ye Hong and Ye Yun exchanged glances and smiled evilly. They’d suggested going outside because they couldn’t reveal their huge true forms inside the pavilion.

Without a doubt, a dragon was strongest when they were in their true forms.

“He dared to challenge the authority of the Ancient Dragon Mountain. I will rip him to pieces and devour him.”

Dragon Saint Ye Hong acted as if he had a sure victory. Letting out a dragon roar, he charged out of the pavilion and chased after Zhang Ruochen.

Dragon Saint Ye Yun followed close behind.

Ao Xinyan walked out of the defensive formation. She looked outside and then looked away. “Grandfather, what do we know?”

Ao Yi seemed very composed. “Activate the defensive formation. No matter what their result is, we cannot let the two Dragon Saints leave alive.”

“Why don’t we kill them directly with the formation?” Ao Xinyan asked.

Ao Yi shook his head. “We will not do it personally if we do not have to. If we can use the Yin and Yang Sect heir to take out the two Dragon Saints, it will only benefit us.”

“The Yin and Yang Sect is our ally. What if the heir isn’t the Dragon Saints’ match and dies? How will we explain this to the Yin and Yang Sect?”

Ao Xinyan was worried because she suspected that the Yin and Yang Sect heir was the one she was thinking about.

They were too similar!

“Right now, we can only hope that the Yin and Yang Sect heir is strong enough to help us resolve this crisis.” Ao Yi sighed.

“If it is truly necessary, I will kill the two Dragon Saints.”

Chapter 1229 - Kill Both the Dragons

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen flew out of Dragon Spirit Island and stood on the vast lake. His Taoist cape looked spotless, waving in the air. He had an elegant bearing.

Ao!

Ao!

The dragon sounds came out of the island.

The water in the lake started to tumble.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary flew out. One of them was holding a thunder god trident while the other one was holding a dragon bone spear. They attacked Zhang Ruochen from both sides.

The holy Qi was trembling in the sky and land, making cracking sounds.

Hua La.

Zhang Ruochen drew a circle with his saint sword.

A circular water wall was formed on the lake. It had a diameter of thirty miles and was more than one hundred feet tall. The space in the water wall was divided into day and night, which looked like a Yin and Yang Taichi world.

It was formed by sword Qi and sword intent.

The monks from Divine Dragon Half-human race all rushed out of Dragon Spirit Island and came to the lakeside, looking at the black-and-white sword Qi domain in the distance.

“Day and night are alternating. The sword intent changed part of the rules. Is he performing Sword Two?”

“How can Sword Two be that powerful?”

“The same technique performed by different people will definitely have different power.”

Sword Two performed by a sword saint was way more powerful than that performed by a monk who had just completed sword Two.

Zhang Ruochen had already begun to comprehend Sword Seven, which was the highest level of sword warrior under sword saint, which was why Sword Two performed by him had a tremendous amount of power.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary both had solid cultivation. They weren't scared by that at all and dashed into the black and white sword Qi domain.

“If you didn't fight us, you might become the new sword saint of the human race. Unfortunately, you've lost that chance,” Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary said.

“Unfortunately for you,” Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary said.

He wielded his thunder god trident. Hundreds of lightning bolts gushed out and hit toward Zhang Ruochen's head.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary's power was so terrific that it trembled the black and white sword Qi domain as if it were breaking the domain.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arm, then the black and white sword Qi domain started to spin.

It looked like a Taichi print spinning, giving out the power of whirlpool. The destructive Qi was spread five hundred miles away.

The attack from Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was crushed by the black and white sword Qi.

“How can he be so powerful?”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary couldn't even balance himself under the sword Qi. He wanted to escape the black and white sword Qi domain.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't give him the chance to leave. He flew toward Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary with his sword.

“Dragon Soul Print.”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary opened his arms. A black dragon soul rushed out of his chest, spinning, forming a dragon shadow.

Just as the saint sword touched the dragon shadow, it formed a shield print.

Peng. The shield print was crushed.

The dragon shadow reticle couldn't resist that saint sword at all. It caved, and the tip of the saint sword got closer and closer to the head of Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary.

Even Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was terrified facing death. He started to sweat and mobilize the holy Qi in his body, trying to ward it off.

Zhang Ruochen also used all his strength. He opened all the one hundred and forty-four apertures in his body, releasing light that could rival that of stars.

Chi!

Gradually, the tip of the saint sword started to pierce through the head of Ye Yun Dragon Emissary.

Just as Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was about to be killed by Zhang Ruochen, Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary rushed toward him and yelled, “Die!” He wielded the dragon bone spear and hit toward the head of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. Although the saint sword he was using was a thousand-patterns saint weapon, it was still nothing compared to Abyss Ancient Sword.

If it were Abyss Ancient Sword, Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary would've been killed now.

Zhang Ruochen twisted his wrist, and then, the saint sword started to spin rapidly, escaping the dragon soul reticle.

And then, Zhang Ruochen slashed toward the reticle, knocking away Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary.

After which Zhang Ruochen turned around and started to fight Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary.

Pu Tong.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was knocked out of the black and white sword Qi domain, falling into the lake and splattering the water.

All the human monks on Dragon Spirit Island saw that fight.

“Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary seems to have been severely injured.”

“That heir from Yin and Yang Sect is indeed impressive. He’s able to suppress the two divine dragon emissaries by himself.”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary flew out of the water. He looked awkward with blood-red wounds on his face, from the space between his eyebrows to his nose.

His head was also cut in half by the saint sword.

“Turn into dragon!” Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary yelled, and then, dragon scales emerged from his face, his neck, and his head.

His human head immediately turned into a giant dragon head.

In the next moment, a body which was larger than a mountain showed up. Half of the body was in the water while the other half was above it. It reached out a ferocious dragon claw and slapped toward the black and white sword Qi domain.

Hong Long.

The black and white sword Qi couldn’t handle the power from the dragon claw. It was cracked, splattering the water on the lake.

Zhang Ruochen and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary flew out of the chaotic sword Qi.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary landed on the back of the winged dragon, breathing heavily. There were eight wounds on his body, but they were all minor injuries.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the sky a hundred feet above the lake, holding his sword. He looked calm.

“Who are you? How can you be so powerful as someone so young?” Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary was intimidated by Zhang Ruochen.

He could tell that Zhang Ruochen’s strength was not his match, yet he was able to fully utilize all his strength and injure him. Ao Yi and the other seniors from Divine Dragon half-human race were also pondering the power of that heir from Yin and Yang Sect, as he was way too powerful.

Out of the young saints of the human race, there might be less than ten at that level.

Who is he? Is he really the secret heir from Yin and Yang Sect? Ao Yi thought.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to waste time talking to the two divine dragon emissaries. He formed his sword way saint look again, forming a giant sword phantom and yelling, “I’ll kill the dragons today.” The sword saint look rushed out of the water and slashed toward the winged dragon in front of him.

After Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary showed his real body, his power indeed surged. However, he wasn’t able to dodge the attacks from Zhang Ruochen as he was too giant.

Pu Ci. The sword saint look slashed the head of the wing dragon, cutting a huge amount of flesh. Blood gushed out of the wound, tainting the lake red.

“I’ll tear you apart today.”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary showed the shape of a dragon and a human being, respectively. One of them was attacking Zhang Ruochen while the other was defending.

Zhang Ruochen had to defend himself.

The fight was fierce. Dark clouds tumbled, and thousands of sword Qi formed sword rain. After three hours, they were stuck in a stalemate.

Hong Long Long.

The monks below the state of saint couldn't see their moves at all. They could only hear the sound of thunder coming from the lake.

Zhang Ruochen was also injured.

He had to hide his identity so he couldn't wield many of his skills. He could only use sixty percent of his strength.

Zhang Ruochen wielded the sword to ward off the attacks from the divine dragon emissaries. "I have to use the power of time and space to end this fight."

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary said, "Impressive that you could fight us for so long, but it's going to end now. Die."

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary spit out a black dragon pearl as if it were a black sun flying in the sky, striking toward Zhang Ruochen.

The black dragon pearl was the source dragon pearl of Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary, and it was also his most powerful skill.

The dragon pearl gave out black light, turning the area dark, which scared all the people from Divine Dragon Half-human race.

Ao Xinyan looked to Ao Yi and said, "Grandpa. He won't be able to ward that off."

Ao Yi sighed and said, "He's tried his best. Those two divine dragon emissaries are too powerful. I have to do something now."

Ao Yi knew that if he killed those two divine dragon emissaries, he would leave some traces no matter what.

If Divine Dragon Mountain found something out, it would be catastrophic for Divine Dragon Half-human race.

"Wait, whose power is that?"

Ao Yi sensed that two weird energy ripples showed up around the heir, which looked like two giant whirlpools.

However, the whirlpools were blocked by mind power, so he couldn't sense the power at all.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary couldn't hurt Zhang Ruochen with his black dragon pearl. Instead, he was sucked into the whirlpool formed by a time saint look. The dragon pearl exploded.

Pu!

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary spit and lost all his energies.

“You are Time...”

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary was very close to the time saint look, so he could feel the ripples from the time power. He figured out Zhang Ruochen's identity, shocked.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give him a chance to speak. He wielded his saint weapon and cut Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary into four pieces.

Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary was killed before he started to flee.

In the other direction, the space saint look flew toward the wing dragon and hit it. Half the winged dragon's body caved, turning into a cluster of bloody mist.

The winged dragon struggled his way out and turned back into a human shape, trying to run away.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary only had half of its body: one head, one arm and one leg left. His dragon pearl wasn't broken yet, so he still had great life force.

“Power of space. He's Zhang Ruochen.”

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary sensed the power of space and figured out the identity of that white-caped man. He was terrified and shocked.

“No wonder even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was defeated by him. Perhaps even the great emperor of the human

race wasn't as powerful as he was at the same age."

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary wanted to run out and try to tell Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon the news that Zhang Ruochen had arrived in the Savage Barren lands.

"You said before that whoever tries to run away is a bastard. Stay and fight."

Zhang Ruochen wielded his saint sword and rushed forward.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary kept flying, yet Zhang Ruochen got closer and closer.

"I have to use ancestral dragon print now."

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary knew that he had no power to run out of God Dream Swamp. He stopped and raised a hand, slapping his head.

Hua! A dragon shadow print flew out of his head, winding around his rugged body. He then flew away like a light shuttle.

"No! Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was carrying an ancestral dragon print. Even the formation of God Dream Swamp can't stop him now."

Ao Yi was scared. He regretted not killing those two divine dragon emissaries and letting them live.

Nobody expected one of the emissaries to be carrying an ancestral dragon print.

Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary became much faster and invincible after using the ancestral dragon print. He broke sixteen formations, but he wasn't slowed down at all.

"I have an ancestral dragon print. Other than saint kings, who can stop me from leaving? Zhang Ruochen, Divine Dragon Half-human race, after I get back to Ancestral Dragon Mountain, you'll all be ended."

Ye Yu Divine Dragon Emissary was filled with grudges, but he was guffawing, as he didn't think anyone could stop him now.

Suddenly, his eyes popped with horror as a white-caped man was standing right in front of him.

It was Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and teleported himself in front of Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary.

“It’s ending now.”

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword, forming a beautiful sword Qi.

The body of Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary was cut into halves, falling into the lake.

Chapter 1230 - Beautiful Princess

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The two corpses turned into two huge broken pieces of dragon corpses. They plopped into the river.

Two Dragon Saints had both died.

Zhang Ruochen collected their weapons—the Thunder God Tripod and Dragon Bone Spear. Then he descended from the sky. He landed on a 300-meter-long dragon corpse fragment and dug out a black dragon pearl.

It was able to change in size.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Right then, the dragon pearl shrunk to the size of a man's head. Zhang Ruochen held it in his hand with strands of electricity flowing over it.

Blackie climbed out of Zhang Ruochen's sleeve. Staring at the dragon pearl, it said, "A Dragon Saint's pearl is a priceless treasure. When you create a saintly source and enter the lower Saint Realm, you can absorb this dragon pearl. It'll be worth decades of hard work. You'll be able to reach the pinnacle of the lower Saint Realm in a few days."

"It's that powerful?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that the dragon pearl was very valuable, but he didn't think it could be so beneficial to cultivation.

It was ten times harder to make a breakthrough in the Saint Realm than Half-Saint Realm. Going from the beginning to the pinnacle of the lower Saint Realm was a huge distance.

Other lower-level Saints had to cultivate for decades to have such an accomplishment.

“It’s a pity that Dragon Saint Ye Hong’s dragon pearl was shattered by the time Saintly Look.” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

If he could have two dragon pearls, he might be able to break into the mid-level in a short time.

Whoosh!

A golden cloud rushed over. It appeared above Zhang Ruochen’s head with many dragon shadows flying inside it.

Ao Yi walked out of the cloud, standing on a dragon shadow. He looked down at Zhang Ruochen with a troubled expression.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had used the Great Spatial Move. He’d used Spiritual Power to fool the Saints of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, but he couldn’t fool Ao Yi.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and met Ao Yi’s eyes. Merely seeing those eyes, Zhang Ruochen realized that the other man knew his identity.

He’d indeed helped the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan earlier, but the Time and Space Descendant was a huge figure. If Ao Yi captured him, he could ask for recognition from the imperial court and explain to Ancient Dragon Mountain.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t sure if Ao Yi would attack him or not.

Of course, even if he did, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t afraid. He could escape from Divine Dream Marsh with the Great Spatial Move.

A moment later, Ao Yi said, “It was completely unexpected for you to come here.”

“You must be surprised to see me alive, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked, smiling.

“I am indeed surprised.”

Ao Yi was more and more impressed by Zhang Ruochen. This man could remain composed no matter the situation or strong

cultivator he faced.

More importantly, he wasn't dead. He was standing right before Ao Yi.

Whoosh!

A willowy figure traveled over on waves. Like a fairy, her skin was as translucent as saintly jade. Water vapor surrounded her, giving her supernatural beauty.

Ao Xinyan's starry eyes stared hard at Zhang Ruochen. She bit her red lips in excitement and joy.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. The four eyes met.

Can she recognize me?

Shock flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

"Thank you, Princess, for your saintly sword. I will return it now."

Zhang Ruochen loosened his fingers and the sword flew back automatically. It circled Ao Xinyan's slender frame and then rushed into her forehead.

"Grandfather," Ao Xinyan said. "Lord Zhang is an esteemed guest of the Yin and Yang Sect. He just arrived and experienced such a horrible battle. He must be exhausted. I wish to welcome him personally and thank him for ridding our clan of two great enemies."

Ao Yi had lived for centuries and was very wise. How could he not see what Ao Xinyan wanted? He nodded and chuckled.

"Alright, you youngsters definitely have more to talk about. You can welcome Lord Zhang. However, he is a Saint. You can't offend him."

Ao Xinyan pressed her pretty lips into a smile. Then she made a welcoming gesture and led Zhang Ruochen back to Dragon Spirit Island. They went straight to her cultivation residence, Heart Moon River.

All the cultivators were shocked by this.

“Did I see incorrectly? Princess Yan actually brought the Yin and Yang Sect heir to Heart Moon River? Men are never allowed there.”

“That heir is a top young talent. Does our beautiful Princess Yan have feelings for him?”

Many young men in the clan all thought that Princess Yan was a goddess. Marrying her was the lifelong goal that they worked hard toward. Now, they naturally felt heartbroken but couldn't do anything about it.

The Yin and Yang Sect heir was too powerful and excellent. They could only gaze from afar.

Ao Jing widened his eyes, finding this unbelievable. “Father, that Yin and Yang Sect heir is very strong. Yan'er is still too young. She might not be able to welcome someone so powerful. I will go to Heart Moon River too...”

“What are you going there for?” Ao Yi asked.

Ao Jing froze and quickly processed this. Smiling, he asked, “Father, did you plan this purposely? That Yin and Yang Sect heir is quite a figure. He is at Yan'er's level.”

Ao Yi's eyes were deep.

Nowadays, there was a large group of talents in Kunlun's Field. A large number will definitely rise up in the chaos and replace the older generation of strong cultivators, becoming rulers of their own accord.

There were countless talents, but Zhang Ruochen was definitely the lead figure. If he really could become the prince of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, it would be beneficial to the clan's future.

...

Heart Moon River was a blue river in Dragon Spirit Island. It was only around 200 miles long, but it was rich with Spiritual Qi and very scenic.

There was a crystal palace at the bottom of the river. It looked like a dragon palace. Colorful corals, strange fish, glimmering

spiritual grass, translucent stones and more could be seen everywhere.

This was Ao Xinyan's palace, as well as her cultivation residence.

Zhang Ruochen sat inside the crystal palace, observing the underwater scene. "Beautiful," he said.

Ao Xinyan changed into a jeweled dress, showing off all the right curves on her. Her plush chest, slender waist, and slim and long legs were filled with noble and elegant aura.

But when she went to Zhang Ruochen's side, that elegance disappeared. Instead, she smiled a bit proudly. "Group Leader, you think that the top beauty of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan can't be compared to the scenery outside?"

Zhang Ruochen looked away and smiled. "You really did recognize me."

Ao Xinyan was a bit resentful. "If I didn't, you'd just keep hiding from me."

"Knowing that I'm alive might not be a good thing for you."

Ao Xinyan huffed and walked over to Zhang Ruochen. "I know many things happened to you, but you should know that I'm not a girl who's easily scared. I was actually really sad when I learned that you died under the trial thunder. After learning that you were alive and in Divine Dream Marsh, you can't imagine how excited and happy I was."

She regretted it the moment she spoke. She felt like she'd revealed her inner feelings and was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would laugh at her.

Oh no. Group Leader must know that I have feelings for him and that I like him... What should I do... What should I do... Ao Xinyan, how come you can't control your mouth? Why do you have to say everything?

Ao Xinyan hadn't controlled her feelings because she was too overjoyed. Right now, her heart beat quickly, thumping.

She didn't look like a Pre-Saint or a talent with a decisive personality. She was like a little girl with her first crush.

“Oh...really?”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. Looking at Ao Xinyan’s perfect and flawless face, he smiled.

Ao Xinyan grew shy from getting looked at. A blush emerged on her cheeks. “We’ve gone through life-and-death experiences,” she said softly. “We have a deep friendship. I naturally worry about you.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No, what I meant was, you really aren’t a girl who’s easily afraid?”

“Of course not.”

Ao Xinyan let out a breath, thinking, So Group Leader’s focus isn’t on this. At the same time, she was also disappointed.

“In that case, I have a request. I don’t know if you’re willing to help.”

“What request?” Ao Xinyan was clear that Zhang Ruochen hadn’t come just to see her. He must have something very important to do.

“I must visit Yin Yang Sea,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I heard that Divine Dream Marsh has a wormhole that leads there?”

Ao Xinyan was taken aback. “Why are you going to Yin Yang Sea? That’s a forbidden zone by the Divine Dragons. It’s also a place of death. You can’t get in at all.”

“Just answer this,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Does Divine Dream Marsh have a wormhole to the Yin Yang Sea?”

Ao Xinyan was silent for a moment. “Yes.”

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed. “I really do have an important matter at Yin Yang Sea. Can you help me?”

“Since you asked me, how can I say no?” Ao Xinyan fluttered her lashes. “But I will go with you.”

“No, it’s too dangerous!” Zhang Ruochen said.

“I once trained outside Yin Yang Sea. I will definitely be more familiar than you. And if you don’t agree...” Ao Xinyan revealed her proud side. Crossing her arms before her chest,

she smiled and continued, “If you don’t agree, I won’t take you to the wormhole.”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged. Smiling, he shook his head. He was truly powerless. When Ao Xinyan was acting stubborn, no one could control her. Even if Zhang Ruochen didn’t bring her to Yin Yang Sea, she would definitely follow by herself.

Tap, tap.

A 16-year-old girl walked in and bowed respectfully to Ao Xinyan. “Princess, the surveillance guard sent a message that they’ve captured a crazy alcoholic that tried breaking in. He claims to be Lord Zhang’s drinking friend.”

“Drinking friend?”

Ao Xinyan’s eyes were filled with confusion. She turned to look at Zhang Ruochen.

“That old man actually chased me from the central region to Divine Dream Marsh. How did he know where I went?”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Chapter 1231 - Dragon Flame Wine

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen rushed toward the patrol team camp, led by Ao Xinyan. He saw the alcohol maniac who looked like a beggar and dragged him out of the camp.

The alcohol maniac was exhilarated after seeing Zhang Ruochen. He gave Zhang Ruochen a wine pot and said, "This is the wine I just made. Do you want to try some?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't take the wine pot as he was careful about that alcohol maniac. He said, "I'm curious how you knew I was in God Dream Swamp."

Only the Immortal Temple could reckon his traces.

Zhang Ruochen was alerted as the alcohol maniac suddenly showed up.

The alcohol maniac sipped the wine seeing Zhang Ruochen not pick it up, "You've drunk my wine. I can follow you with that smell."

Alcohol maniac had a great sense, which was witnessed by Zhang Ruochen before. It was likely he could track Zhang Ruochen with that smell.

However, Zhang Ruochen was still confused. He said, "We've only met once. Why did you come all the way here to look for me?"

"Even though you've drunk with me once, you're my drinking friend. You should know that not everyone's qualified to be my drinking friend. I've only got a few."

Alcohol maniac continued, “I just want to get wasted, which is why I came all the way here to look for you. Let’s get wasted tonight.”

Zhang Ruochen, “How can you only have a few drinking friends?”

The alcohol maniac sat on the ground and said, “It’s not that easy to find a drinking friend. Some people don’t have a high tolerance, some people misbehave after they’re drunk, and some people are not brave enough. You need to have all three to be my drinking friend, otherwise, it’s just going to be torture for me.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “That means I have a high tolerance, behave well after getting drunk and am brave enough? I don’t drink that much actually.”

“If you become friends with me, you’ll become friends with drinks as well. You’ll gradually realize how great alcohol is,” the alcohol maniac said.

“How great?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The alcohol maniac glanced at Ao Xinyan and said, “Greater than the beauty beside you.”

Zhang Ruochen found the alcohol maniac to be very rude. How could he say something like that? She was the princess of Divine Dragon Half-human race after all.

Ao Xinyan wasn’t angry. She said, “Then I want to drink the wine you made now.”

“Okay! You’re brave enough, but let’s see whether you have a high tolerance or not,” the alcohol maniac said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’ve only brought one pot. Perhaps it’s not enough.”

The alcohol maniac pointed at Zhang Ruochen and said, “This is God Dream Swamp. There’re lots of great wines in the vault here. Dragon Flame Wine is the most famous one, and it’s ranked the eighth in the world, much stronger than Dragon Spirit Wine.”

Zhang Ruochen had tasted Dragon Wine Mad Bull Wine before. It was indeed very strong. If he drank more, he might get wasted and black out.

Yet Dragon Spirit Mad Bull wine was only ranked seventeenth.

How strong could Dragon Flame wine be?

Ao Xinyan shook her head and said, “No you can’t do that. Dragon Flame Wine’s been stored there since ancient times, and there’s not much left. Even the clan leader can’t drink it without asking. Besides, Dragon Flame Wine is very strong. Not many people can withstand that.”

The alcohol maniac said, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re not very close to her, are you? She doesn’t want to serve you Dragon Flame Wine.”

Ao Xinyan tried to explain, “It’s not that I don’t want to take the Dragon Flame Wine. It’s just too strong for saints to withstand it. A half saint snuck a sip of Dragon Flame Wine before, and he was burned into ashes.

“That’s alright. Where’s the alcohol maniac?”

Zhang Ruochen looked around, but he couldn’t find the alcohol maniac anymore.

“He was just here.”

Ao Xinyan was shocked too as she didn’t know when the alcohol maniac had left.

“That girl is too petty. I’ll go to the vault of the Divine-dragon half-human race and bring some Dragon Flame Wine back.” The alcohol maniac’s voice spread from somewhere.

Ao Xinyan frowned and said, “Who is that alcohol maniac?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and smiled. “I don’t know who he is, but I’m sure that he’s not just some random person. He might be a great being in secret. Let’s go find him. He doesn’t even know where the vault is. If he just roams this place and runs into the killing formation, he might be in grave danger.”

Ao Xinyan didn't believe that the wine maniac could find the vault that stored the precious Dragon Flame Wine. Even if he found it, nobody could break the formation that protected the vault.

The alcohol maniac had completely gone. Not even the mind power of Zhang Ruochen could find him.

"Let's notify the patrol army to close all the killing formation," Ao Xinyan said.

Just as Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan rushed to the patrol army, the alcohol maniac was holding a wine tripod, rushing out and laughing.

"There's indeed not much left. Zhang Ruochen, we got lucky. Let's share this."

Ao Xinyan's eyes popped.

She could recognize the tripod held in the alcohol maniac's hand, and it was one of the tripods used to store dragon flame wine.

How was it possible?

How did he find the vault? And how did he break the formation?

And how did he do it so soon.

"This one is for you."

The alcohol maniac threw the wine tripod toward Zhang Ruochen.

The tripod was made of bronze. It was ten feet tall. God knew how much wine there was inside.

Zhang Ruochen was dazed. He found the alcohol maniac to be too reckless, as he had stolen the only two tripods of wine that the Divine-dragon half-human race had.

"Dragon Flame Wine is a valuable of the Divine dragon half-human race. You're stealing."

Ao Xinyan rushed toward the alcohol maniac, trying to grab the Dragon Flame Wine back.

Dragon Flame Wine was ranked the eighth not just because of its strength, but also because it was an object that could be used to refine bodies and improve refinement.

Each tripod had at least thirty jugs.

Each jug of Dragon Flame Wine was as effective as an elementary saint pill, which meant the Dragon Flame Wine was incredibly valuable.

The alcohol maniac saw Ao Xinyan flying toward him. He sighed, moved his body and tapped her shoulder.

Ao Xinyan blacked out and fell on the ground.

The alcohol maniac didn't even look at Ao Xinyan on the ground. He tapped on the shoulder of Zhang Ruochen and said, "Go! Let's find a hidden place for drinks."

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was keen on Dragon Flame Wine as well. Now that he had it, he'd love to try it.

Certainly, he couldn't just leave Ao Xinyan here, so he grabbed Ao Xinyan and left with the alcohol maniac.

They didn't have anywhere else to go, so they had to hide under Heart Moon Lake and enter the crystal palace.

Zhang Ruochen put Ao Xinyan on her bed before he started to drink with the alcohol maniac again.

He opened one of the tripods, and crimson light gushed out of it, releasing heated waves.

The dragon flame wine was a lot like lava. Ordinary people didn't even dare try it.

The alcohol maniac couldn't be more excited, more excited than when he saw an exquisite beauty. He finished a bowl of wine and started to pour himself a second one.

Zhang Ruochen didn't binge like the alcohol maniac. He picked up the bowl and sipped it.

The Dragon Flame Wine was indeed hot. He felt a fire burning in his stomach.

With the alcohol flowing in his body, the flames also flooded into his veins, rushing into his one hundred and forty-four apertures.

Zhang Ruochen kept drinking the Dragon Flame Wine, and the one hundred and forty-four apertures in his body became brighter and brighter. He could feel his body constitution getting stronger.

Sanctifying bodies was the first goal of monks, but it wasn't the ultimate goal.

Every creature who had sanctified his body wanted to refine it to reach the supreme saint level. As long as he could open and sanctify all the one hundred and forty-four apertures, he could sanctify his entire body. If he wanted his body to be at the supreme saint level, he needed to complete all his apertures.

To all the body monks, each aperture was like sand at the beginning. They needed to keep enlarging the sand, turning it into a stone, a mountain, and then a star before it was completed.

One hundred and forty-four grains of sand certainly was nothing compared to one hundred and forty-four stars. The gap between creatures who had just sanctified their bodies and creatures whose bodies were at supreme-saint level was also like that.

Zhang Ruochen drank twenty-three bowls, which was half a jug of the dragon flame wine. His cape was burnt into ashes, and he couldn't even stand up straight.

"I'm done now... I need to go back. You keep going..."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't even speak properly. He had no idea where he was. He climbed up and stumbled toward the door.

The alcohol maniac had a high tolerance, but he was also tipsy and couldn't think straight. He waved at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Yeah you can go back now. I'll drink a bit more."

Zhang Ruochen didn't know he was naked. He opened a door and stumbled in.

Peng.

He fell on the bed. He could feel something very soft, but he had no idea that he was sleeping on a curvy body.

“Smells so good. So soft...”

Zhang Ruochen had a huge headache, but he had never felt so relaxed before. His right hand was touching something perky, soft and warm, so he squeezed it with more strength.

It was so comfortable.

He slept with his head on the neck of that smooth body, completely losing his consciousness. He blacked out.

Chapter 1232 - Drinking Causes Trouble

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen had always had his nerves pulled taut. It was very rare for him to be able to lower all guard and sleep comfortably.

Drinking the Dragon Fire Wine with the Crazy Alcoholic yesterday was his first time getting drunk. He slept, losing track of time. When he woke up in the morning, he actually had no clue what he'd done.

The moment he woke up, he took quite a hit to his mind.

He was actually naked with Ao Xinyan in the same bed, and they were hugging each other. Ao Xinyan's dress was in a mess. Large patches of her snowy-white chest, stomach, and thighs were exposed. There were also red fingerprints as if she'd been in battle.

There was a strawberry-like mark on her slender neck.

What is this? What did she do to herself? Why did she come into my bed?

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to be responsible for this. He wanted to escape before Ao Xinyan woke up.

However, his head was extremely dizzy and his limbs were all weak. He couldn't gather any strength. He struggled for a long while but couldn't climb out of bed.

“Hmm...”

Ao Xinyan's lashes fluttered and she opened her eyes. She was a bit dazed. Then pain registered from some places on her

body. Her eyes flashed.

There was a naked man sleeping beside her. One could figure out what had happened even without guessing.

A scream escaped from her mouth.

Ao Xinyan was furious and tears flowed out of her eyes. Her purity had been tainted after she lost consciousness.

How would she face Zhang Ruochen from now on?

Could she still face him?

Thinking of this, Ao Xinyan grew even more furious. Anger surged out of her, causing her to lose all reason.

Who in the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan dared to do this to her? She couldn't resolve her hatred without killing him!

She flipped over. Using her finger, she guided a blue saintly sword out of her forehead and cut down on the man on the bed.

Seeing the man's face clearly, she froze. The flying saintly sword also froze in mid-air.

"Group Leader..." Ao Xinyan said. "Zhang Ruochen...you... How can it be you?"

Zhang Ruochen was exhausted. "Ao Xinyan, what are you doing? Why did you run into my room and lay in my bed? Why do you have so many injuries on your body? What did you do?"

"This is my room!" Ao Xinyan was completely done.

"Your room?" Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked around. He slapped his forehead. Understanding the general situation, he cried out inside, Oh no!

Ao Xinyan wasn't a regular woman. She was the princess of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan. She was the future heir of the clan.

It was great luck that he was still alive after this happened.

To Ao Xinyan, it looked like Zhang Ruochen was just pretending to be stupid. Not only did he want to avoid responsibility, he also wanted to blame her.

How could he be like this?

Ao Xinyan bit her lips. “Why did you break into my room last night? What did you do to me?”

“I don’t know.”

“How can you not know?”

“I really don’t know...” Zhang Ruochen thought hard. “Oh, I remember! I drank with the Crazy Alcoholic last night. I drank a lot and then I wanted to find a place to rest. I was very drunk and lost consciousness after lying down. I don’t think...I did anything.”

Ao Xinyan felt the pain coming from her chest and looked at the red marks on her arm, thighs, and waist. How could he not have done anything?

He was lying straight through his teeth.

“If you continue insisting that you didn’t do anything, we’ll die together today.”

Ao Xinyan’s eyes turned red as she grasped her sword. Her emotions were unstable.

She liked Zhang Ruochen, but she couldn’t bear how irresponsible he was. He’d done everything, but he just wouldn’t admit it.

Seeing the marks on Ao Xinyan’s body, Zhang Ruochen almost broke down inside. Even he suspected that he’d done something last night when he was drunk.

Drinking caused problems.

“Calm down. Let me try to remember.”

Zhang Ruochen really was worried that Ao Xinyan’s sword would cut down. With his current state, he might not be able to block it. While thinking, he circulated his Holy Qi to dissolve the alcohol.

Outside, a servant's voice sounded. "Princess, the Young Clan Leader sent someone to ask about Lord Zhang. He wishes to speak to Lord Zhang alone."

"I know," Ao Xinyan said coldly. "Leave now."

The servant was a bit terrified. The princess was usually very friendly. How come she was so angry today?

The servant didn't dare to ask and retreated hurriedly.

A while later, Zhang Ruochen had dissolved most of the alcohol. He recovered some of his strength and he stood up. He took a robe out of the spatial ring to wear.

This entire time, Ao Xinyan stood on the side without feeling any shame. Her sword was still pointed at Zhang Ruochen.

"Do you remember or not?"

Zhang Ruochen had a thoughtful expression. Meeting her eyes, he said, "I think that this is a misunderstanding. I couldn't have done anything in my state at that time!"

"In other words, you don't plan on admitting or taking responsibility for this."

"You probably saw how I was too weak to even climb out of bed," Zhang Ruochen continued to explain. "How could I have done anything?"

Ao Xinyan was heartbroken. Clenching her jaw, she stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's chest. "Then let's die together!"

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen stood in place without moving, but dozens of Sword Qi beams rushed out of him. They formed a shield and stopped Ao Xinyan's saintly sword.

Seeing that she couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan threw down her sword. She crouched on the ground and tears flowed out of her eyes. She started sobbing.

Zhang Ruochen was the type to be moved by emotions. Seeing Ao Xinyan like this, he felt bad.

The door opened with a bang.

The Crazy Alcoholic rushed in, cackling. “Zhang Ruochen, let’s continue drinking... Hey...what happened here?”

Blackie also rushed in. It jumped and landed on the bed. Its round cat eyes looked in all directions.

“Zhang Ruochen, no wonder you left halfway through. You came to have fun with Princess Yan. I’m quite impressed by you.”

The Crazy Alcoholic grew serious. “Zhang Ruochen, how can you make a girl cry? Did you have drunk sex and not want to take responsibility?”

“No way. I have no clue what happened last night.” Zhang Ruochen thought that the Crazy Alcoholic and Blackie’s appearance made things even messier.

The Crazy Alcoholic was more serious than he’d ever been. “So it’s drunken sex. Zhang Ruochen, if you don’t treat her well, then that means you have bad drinking manners. I will end things with you.”

Zhang Ruochen still felt innocent, but the Crazy Alcoholic’s words shocked him awake. Perhaps he didn’t know what had happened, but this was a huge matter to Ao Xinyan.

Merely the fingerprints on her body proved that he wasn’t completely innocent.

“In the future, I’ll end things first if you make me drink with you again.”

Zhang Ruochen glared at the Crazy Alcoholic. Then he walked over to Ao Xinyan and murmured some things to her.

Gradually, Ao Xinyan pressed her lips together and stopped crying. She looked up and said, “Really?”

“Since I said it,” Zhang Ruochen said gently, “I’ll definitely keep my word.”

Zhang Ruochen always tried to stay away from girls that he shouldn’t be involved with. However, when he ran into situations like this, he had to give an explanation.

After getting Zhang Ruochen's promise, Ao Xinyan recovered quickly. She even looked proud.

She wasn't a three-year-old kid. After her emotions stabilized, she checked her body. She obviously knew that Zhang Ruochen hadn't actually done anything.

However, he'd indeed taken actions that were beyond that of a friend and had damaged her purity. He had to take some responsibility.

Thankfully, it was Zhang Ruochen. If it was any other man, Ao Xinyan would rip him to shreds no matter what he said.

“Let's go! We'll go to Yin Yang Sea now.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to meet that Young Clan Leader. After all, he'd slept with Ao Jing's daughter last night. It would be awkward to meet him now.

“Wait, give me a spatial treasure first,” the Crazy Alcoholic said.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't stingy. He took out a spatial ring and handed it over. After getting it, the Crazy Alcoholic played with it carefully and then flipped in happiness. Then he disappeared to some unknown place.

Ao Xinyan packed up simply. Then she led Zhang Ruochen and Blackie to the wormhole that reached the Yin Yang Sea.

Along the way, Blackie asked Zhang Ruochen softly, “What did you say to her? How come she suddenly stopped crying and instead grew happy?”

“She was happy?” Zhang Ruochen had been dissolving the alcohol within and didn't notice other things.

“Didn't you see how overjoyed she looked?” Blackie asked.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Ao Xinyan's backside. “I only promised to do something for her.”

“Anything?”

“Yes.”

Blackie sighed. “No wonder she’s so happy. You really dug yourself a trap this time. Don’t drink with the Crazy Alcoholic again. You might cause more trouble.”

“I know.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, feeling this deeply.

The wormhole wasn’t in Divine Dream Marsh. Instead, it was in a vast and boundless ancient forest. It wasn’t far from Divine Dream Marsh though and was very hidden. Other than the upper level of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, few people knew its specific location.

Just as Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan, and Blackie entered the forest, approaching the wormhole, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and a group of savage beasts finally entered Divine Dream Marsh.

Chapter 1233 - First Time in Yin and Yang Ocean

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was the strongest new being in Ancestral Dragon Mountain, so he had an extraordinary status.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had become a saint some time ago, so he was at his prime in Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

All the seniors from Divine Dragon Half-human race stood up to greet him.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't show his real body. Instead, he turned into a human shape with a handsome face. He looked ferocious and overbearing, wearing black scaled armor.

The forces of a Taigu creature intimidated all the seniors from Divine Dragon Half-human race.

That was the pressure from a purer bloodline.

“Both Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary are dead? Who killed them?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said it calmly, yet his eyes were glinting with fire. Everyone could feel his anger.

Ao Yi said to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, “A mysterious being. He not only killed the two divine dragon emissaries, but also took away Princess Yan. We've sent many great beings to search for him.”

“A mysterious great being?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn't believe what the Divine Dragon half-human race said. He sneered, "I'll have to examine their bodies myself, and then I'll see who killed them. If they were really killed by some mysterious great being, I'll find him no matter where he is, and I will kill him."

The death of the two divine dragon emissaries had nothing to do with Divine Dragon half-human race?"

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon would never believe that.

"Please."

Ao Yi brought Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon to God Dream Swamp. Many great beings from Ancestral Dragon Mountain went with him.

One of the saint beasts came from the mysterious hedgehog race, and it had been alive for more than a thousand years. It had immense mind power, and its senses were far greater than other saint beasts.

The mysterious hedgehog beast turned into a human shape, which was an emaciated elder.

He checked it for a while and reported it to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. It said, "Both the divine dragon emissaries were killed by the same sword master strength. I can tell from the bodies that the person is almost at sword saint level."

"Almost at sword saint level? Then that person's an exceptional being."

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's eyes gleamed. He put one of his palms on the corpse.

After a while, he put his hands back and said, "That saintly way force is a bit familiar. Have I met that guy before?"

Mysterious hedgehog saint beast said, "Your highness, if you want to go kill that person, I can track him with some of the leftover forces he has."

"Doesn't matter. I mean to go to Yin and Yang Ocean. I'll deal with him after I came back," Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said.

The mysterious hedgehog's pupils turned gold, and it looked toward a direction in the sky. It started to sniff.

After a short while, it said with a hoarse voice, "Perhaps he went to Yin and Yang Ocean. I can see his figure and smell him."

"Really? Then let's head to go to Yin and Yang Ocean now."

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't even hesitate, leading the great beings from Ancestral Dragon Mountain toward Yin and Yang Ocean.

He then turned around and said to Ao Yi, "Mr Clan Leader, I suggest you follow the will of Ancestral Dragon Mountain and form a team to help Ancestral Dragon Mountain to finish off the savage barren lands. I'll talk to you about this after I come back from Yin and Yang Ocean."

After all the great beings from Ancestral Dragon Mountain left, Ao Jing started to look upset and said, "That Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is more overbearing than those two divine dragon emissaries. He treated us as if we were his servants."

"He's supported by Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Quod Emperor. He also has pinnacle-level body constitution and talents. Of course he's that arrogant."

Ao Yi put his hands behind his back and said, "Did Zhang Ruochen really go to Yin and Yang Ocean with Yan Er?"

Ao Jing frowned and said, "Zhang Ruochen and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon are both leaders among the young saints. They wouldn't just head to Yin and Yang Ocean for no reason. There must be some powerful valuables. Should we send a group of great beings there?"

Ao Yi waved his hands, shook his head and said, "Yin and Yang Ocean isn't just a place of death, it's also a bizarre place. After someone reaches the state of saint. It'll be easier for them to die as they grow stronger. Besides, even for those who haven't reached the state of saint, their chances of surviving that place are also thin."

Ao Yi had tried to venture into Yin and Yang Ocean before and find some valuables left by the divine dragon race.

However, he had to flee away every time he reached the borderline.

Ao Yi had never gone deep into Yin and Yang Ocean. However, after going there so many times, he knew Yin and Yang Ocean better than anyone else.

“That means it’s the best for a monk to enter Yin and Yang Ocean right after he reaches the state of saint?”

“That’s right.”

Ao Jing said, “No wonder Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon chooses to head to Yin and Yang Ocean right after he reaches the state of saint. He must know well about Yin and Yang Ocean, and he knows that some exceptional treasures are hidden there.”

Ao Yi nodded, took a deep breath and said, “This is also an opportunity for Yan Er. Let’s see who will prevail, Zhang Ruochen or Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.”

...

The space wormhole to Yin and Yang Ocean was located in a group of yellow mountains, floating thirty feet above the valley.

There were no guards.

Yin and Yang Ocean was already a forbidden place. Those who dared venture into it were all refugees. Besides, more than ninety percent of them couldn’t even make it back, so there was no need for Divine Dragon half-human race to guard that place.

Zhang Ruochen stood under the space wormhole, smiled and said, “Do you think the Death Knight will come here?”

“Not just the Death Knight, but also Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon,” Blackie said.

Ao Xinyan warned Zhang Ruochen, “There’re some races among the savage beasts that have extraordinary senses.

They're terrifically great at tracking. Even if that Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon catches us, it wouldn't be a surprise."

Zhang Ruochen smiled, "No one's better at tracking than that alcohol maniac. Where is that alcohol maniac?"

Blackie smiled, "That elder might be too much of a coward to come here."

"Who said I'm a coward?"

A hoarse voice came from afar.

And then, Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan saw the alcohol maniac walk out of the yellow stones, holding a space ring. He looked joyful.

"Where did you go?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The alcohol maniac shot a glance at Ao Xinyan, but he was reluctant to answer Zhang Ruochen's questions. He said, "Let's go. I've been wanting to see Yin and Yang Ocean. We can go together."

Ao Xinyan found the alcohol maniac abnormal. She took a look at the space ring in his hand and asked, "Did you steal something else from Divine dragon half-human race?"

"No." The alcohol maniac said, "I only went to the vault to get some wine. I'll definitely pay you back. Don't use the word 'steal!'"

Shua!

Blackie turned into a black shadow, flying into the sky and grabbing the space ring from the alcohol maniac.

It infused its mind power to inspect the space ring, then it said, "Some wine? I reckon you've already emptied the entire vault."

"Give it back to me!"

The alcohol maniac was furious and ran toward Blackie, seizing the ring from it.

He feared that someone else might steal the space ring, so he swallowed the entire thing.

The alcohol maniac waved at Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan. He said, "That fat cat is talking nonsense. I wouldn't have emptied the vault of divine dragon half-human race. I would never do such a thing."

Neither Ao Xinyan nor Zhang Ruochen believed what he said.

Ao Xinyan pulled out her saint sword and pointed it at the alcohol maniac. She said, "All the drinks in the vault are precious. Give them back to me now, otherwise, I'll fight you to death."

The maniac sighed and said, "Why are you so fixated on a maniac like me? I saw a large group of great beings from Ancestral Dragon Mountain coming here just now. Let's go to Yin and Yang Ocean first, and as for the wines, we'll talk about it later."

Zhang Ruochen opened his heavenly eyes and looked to God Dream Swamp. He indeed saw a cluster of dark clouds rushing toward him.

"Indeed, a large group of great beings is heading here."

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to confront the savage beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain at the moment, so he ran into the space wormhole with Ao Xinyan first.

And then, the alcohol maniac and Blackie also walked in.

Hua La.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen and the others arrived in a space three million miles away, which was in the deep of savage barren lands. They showed up in the sky above Yin and Yang Ocean.

Just as they walked out of the wormhole, they felt piercing coldness attacking them.

Even Zhang Ruochen was frozen right after he stepped out.

Pa!

Zhang Ruochen broke the ice and released the saint soul domain to protect his body, warding off the coldness coming at him.

“So cold. Monks who haven’t reached the half-saint level might be frozen instantly,” Zhang Ruochen said.

This wasn’t the first time Ao Xinyan came to Yin and Yang Ocean, which was why she activated saint soul domain the second she walked out of the wormhole.

She said, “This isn’t Yin and Yang Ocean yet, only the periphery. The real Yin and Yang Ocean will only be colder.”

Blackie said, “During the daytime, Yin and Yang Ocean is like a pot. During the nighttime, even half saints will freeze to death. It must be the night of the Yin and Yang Ocean now.”

The alcohol maniac was shivering because of the coldness. His hair and beard were covered with frost. He said, “It’s said that the last divine dragon opened the forbidden formation and cut off the road to Yin and Yang Ocean. Why are you still here? Are there any valuables?”

The alcohol maniac’s eyes gleamed.

Chapter 1234 - Ancient Dead Soul Ship

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Crazy Alcoholic had no restraint. He might've really emptied the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan's wine cellar. Knowing this, Zhang Ruochen obviously couldn't reveal his true motive at Yin Yang Sea.

"Yin Yang Sea is very dangerous," he said. "Senior, you don't need to take risks with us. Please return!"

Zhang Ruochen insisted on going to Yin Yang Sea. This meant that there must be a rare treasure there. How could the Crazy Alcoholic not go?

"Don't leave me behind!" He hurried over and shamelessly followed Zhang Ruochen. At the same time, he took out a pouch and drank some Dragon Fire Wine. "Feels great! Do you want to drink some? You won't feel cold anymore!"

Ao Xinyan's eyes turned menacing. She felt like this Crazy Alcoholic was provoking her.

He'd stolen it from the clan, but he actually dared to drink it in front of her like this. If it was not provocation, then what was it?

However, Ao Xinyan also knew that even though the Crazy Alcoholic acted frivolous, he actually had immeasurable abilities. Her cultivation wasn't enough to counter him at all. Thus, she worked hard on controlling her emotions, not letting them burst out.

The Crazy Alcoholic seemed not to see the anger in Ao Xinyan's eyes. He got close, saying, "Girl, would you like

some? Drinking it can help you against the cold and also challenge your physical body, improving your cultivation.”

“Go away,” Ao Xinyan said impolitely.

The Crazy Alcoholic didn't get angry. He just shook his head sadly, thinking that Ao Xinyan's temper was too bad. He kind of understood why Zhang Ruochen didn't want to be responsible for her.

If you got involved with a bad-tempered girl, you'd have bad luck for the rest of your life.

Thus, he went toward Zhang Ruochen again.

After causing trouble while drunk, Zhang Ruochen didn't dare drink wine again, so he refused.

“Senior,” Zhang Ruochen said, smiling. “If I remember correctly, I should have a tripod of Dragon Fire Wine saved with you, right?”

Last night, Zhang Ruochen had only drunk half a jar. It was only a bit of the tripod. Dragon Fire Wine was comparable to a divine pill. It had extraordinary effects in both raising cultivation and training the body.

Zhang Ruochen had only drunk half a jar, but he could clearly feel that his physical strength had improved. He didn't plan on drinking anymore, but he wanted to get the wine back and gift it to his friends. He couldn't let the Crazy Alcoholic get the advantage.

“I always keep my word. The wine that I give you is forever yours.”

The Crazy Alcoholic didn't go back on his word. He quickly took out Zhang Ruochen's wine and gave it to him.

Ao Xinyan just huffed. She felt that the Crazy Alcoholic was even more shameless. He talked as if the wine was his.

The land was completely covered in ice and snow. It was all white and devoid of any living creatures.

Whoosh, whoosh. Cold wind blew past, sharper than blades.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen's group came to the edge of Yin Yang Sea. A boundless sea appeared before their eyes. The calm surface and dark blue water stood in stark contrast with the white snow on the land. It was extremely beautiful.

"This is Yin Yang Sea? It doesn't look that scary." The Crazy Alcoholic laughed and walked toward the sea.

Ao Xinyan didn't like him, but she still yelled, "Don't touch the water. The Yin Yang Sea's water is piercingly cold. Even a Saint can freeze to death if they step into it."

The Crazy Alcoholic's smile froze. Gasping, he retreated hurriedly. "How can it be that cold? If even a Saint will freeze, then what creature can go into it?"

"No living being can enter the Yin Yang Sea ever since the forbidden formation was activated," Ao Xinyan answered. "Otherwise, why would it be called a forbidden zone?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe this. After all, Saints were the strongest existences in this land. They could overturn mountains and seas; they were invincible. If even a Saint's cultivation and physical body couldn't withstand the coldness of the seawater, then that was a bit too dramatic.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the edge of the water.

"Group Leader," Ao Xinyan called. "Be careful. Don't go."

"Don't worry. I know what I'm doing."

Zhang Ruochen came to the water. He lifted a foot and stepped into it.

Crackle, crackle. Thick ice formed where his ankle was and quickly snaked up. It went past his calf, knee, thigh, waist... Soon, Zhang Ruochen's entire body was covered in ice.

It kept thickening, transforming into a 70-meter-tall mountain of ice that was still getting bigger.

"No!"

Ao Xinyan summoned her saintly sword. She was about to hack open the ice mountain to save Zhang Ruochen.

With a boom, the ice mountain shattered first. Fragments the size of a man's head fell into the sea. A shadow flew out quickly, consolidating into Zhang Ruochen's body.

He let out a long breath. When he looked back at the water, there was more fear in his eyes. "Such powerful cold Qi. It can invade your meridians and Saintly Meridians, slowing down the speed of your Holy Qi's circulation. A regular Saint really might die if he falls into the water."

Zhang Ruochen estimated in his mind. Even with his physical strength, he might only be able to survive for 15 to 30 minutes if he fell into the water. The cold Qi of the water was very strange.

"It's clearly extremely cold," Blackie said. "But it hasn't frozen over. Clearly, the icy Qi is only part of the formation of the Divine Dragons."

The Crazy Alcoholic was a bit disappointed. "So the path into Yin Yang Sea is really cut off? We can't go in?"

"It might not be so complete," Ao Xinyan said.

Everyone looked toward her.

"Dusk and dawn of every day is when Yin and Yang interchange," she continued. "If you use an ancient spell of the Divine Dragons, you can summon an ancient dead soul ship from the sea. If you board it, you can pass through the formation and enter the depths of the sea."

"From what you're saying, there's an ancient ship floating on the sea. But it's been preserved since the ancient times without decaying?" The Crazy Alcoholic shook his head, not believing Ao Xinyan at all. He found it ridiculous.

"No, not only one. There are many of them. Apparently, these ships are made out of Divine Dragon bones. Each one is different too. They contain mysterious power that even a Saint cannot comprehend."

Ao Xinyan spoke very seriously. She didn't seem to be joking as she continued, "Some ships are relatively safe. Others are extremely eerie. Boarding those ships is even more dangerous than jumping into the sea."

“A ship made out of Divine Dragon bone? Isn’t that a divine corpse?” The Crazy Alcoholic laughed loudly. “If that’s true, then the various ancient human sects and savage beast tribes would’ve come long ago to steal the ships. Getting one is like getting an awesome saintly weapon.”

“How do you know that the top strong cultivators haven’t tried to steal the ancient dead soul ships?” Ao Xinyan asked in return.

“There really have been strong cultivators who’ve tried?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ao Xinyan nodded. “According to the ancient records of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, not long after the last Divine Dragon died, large groups of humans and beasts came to Yin Yang Sea. They tried to break in and steal the Divine Dragon relics. They also had their eyes on the ships, wanting to take one away.”

“What happened?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

The Crazy Alcoholic stood to the side. He listened carefully with his ears perked.

“They all died!” Ao Xinyan said. “I heard that the human and beast emperors died and countless Saints died as well.”

“I have heard of this too,” Blackie said. “At that time, many Supreme Saints died. The Divine Dragons died and became corpses, but the Yin Yang Sea was a saintly land of the Divine Dragon race. Their corpses floating on the surface might contain remnants of power. We cannot counter or even imagine how that power is. So if we really do board a ship, we must be respectful.”

The Yin Yang Sea was once a saintly land for the strongest tribe of Kunlun’s Field. Now, it was the most terrifying and forbidden zone.

No creature could be arrogant here. They could only survive by being careful.

“I am skilled in Divine Dragon spells,” Ao Xinyan said.

“When dawn comes, I can help you summon an ancient dead soul ship.”

“There’s still some time before dawn,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I will first create a spatial transfer formation.”

After coming to Yin Yang Sea, Zhang Ruochen felt extremely restricted. Even though he’d become a Saint, he still felt very insignificant and fragile.

Creating a spatial transfer formation beforehand would give him an escape route.

First, Blackie set up an invisibility formation that covered ten miles in diameter. Everyone went into the formation, disappearing from the coast of Yin Yang Sea.

While Zhang Ruochen was building the spatial transfer formation, the strong cultivators of Ancient Dragon Mountain also came to Yin Yang Sea.

The 12 saintly beasts were all in human form. The handsome man at the front was the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. His eyes were extremely sharp and radiated with thick murderous Qi as he observed the surroundings.

A beautiful woman around 20 years old had a human body but a dozen-meter-long snake tail. “Your Majesty,” she said coldly. “Do you think they’ve already gone into Yin Yang Sea?”

“No. You can only summon an ancient dead soul ship at dawn. They can’t enter the sea without the ship. They must be hiding nearby.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon looked at Saint Beast Xuanwei. “Can you find them?”

Saint Beast Xuanwei shook its head and sighed. “After coming to Yin Yang Sea, I’m restricted by a mysterious force. Both my vision and smell have decreased greatly. I can’t find them at all.”

“No matter. Let them continue to hide. When I enter Yin Yang Sea and take that item out, I’ll take my time dealing with them.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon closed his eyes and started cultivating with all his might.

After the war in Blue Dragon Void World, he realized that he wasn't undefeatable in his realm. There were some powerful figures who could counter him. He felt pressure, because he could only race against time and cultivate with all his might. He couldn't waste a single second.

He could only improve faster by pressuring himself.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's race had been invincible figures during the ancient period of gods fighting. There was no reason why he had to be defeated by some lower races now.

If he wanted to become undefeatable, he had to work harder.

Chapter 1235 - The Dawn Is Coming

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After setting up the space transportation formation, Zhang Ruochen stopped caring about Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

Being invincible among those at the same level and cultivating both martial and deity way only gave him an edge among his peers.

Only those who had enough cultivation were the real great beings, no matter who they were compared to.

Zhang Ruochen was trying to refine his martial way to the saint level.

He was one step away from sanctifying his martial way.

He needed to condense his saint source.

Saint source was made of saint look and holy Qi, together with his comprehension and knowledge.

Zhang Ruochen had six saint looks in total, which meant he could make six saint sources.

“I achieved much more highly on sword master than other saints. Perhaps I can condense a sword master saint source now.”

If he could condense one saint source, Zhang Ruochen would officially become a saint, differentiating himself from a third-trial pre-saint.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't wait to become a saint in martial way.

“Sword way saint look.”

He put his hands together and yelled.

Gleaming black light gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's back. A giant sword form saint look was formed in the light.

And then, Zhang Ruochen opened his arms.

The sword form saint look flew between his hands, turning smaller and smaller. Eventually, it turned into a dagger ten inches long, spinning.

Hua.

The fourteen apertures on his palm were opened with holy Qi gushing out.

He infused the dagger with holy Qi, which further solidified the dagger as if it were made of black crystal with sword rules flowing inside.

Shua Shua.

Cracking sounds came out of Zhang Ruochen's body as if tens of thousands of swords were spinning around him, but nobody could see the sword shadows from the outside.

Ao Xinyan, the alcohol maniac and Blackie all retreated and stared at Zhang Ruochen who was condensing the saint source.

Ao Xinyan was amazed. She said, “Is that Thousand Swords toward Sect? Is our group leader about to become a sword saint?”

Ao Xinyan was also a sword warrior. Her ultimate goal was to become a sword saint.

She couldn't be more excited to see a young sword saint being born.

Meanwhile, she admired Zhang Ruochen more. They were both at the same age, yet Zhang Ruochen had already far surpassed her.

Blackie shook its head and said, “He couldn’t condense ten thousand swords. They’re only sword intents, which means Zhang Ruochen is still not there yet.”

“If he can condense the sword intents of the ten thousand swords, that means group leader can become a sword saint. He’s at least half a sword saint now,” Ao Xinyan said.

Just as Zhang Ruochen refined the sword way saint source, a crimson cloud showed up above the ocean.

The air started to get warmer.

The ice and snow started to melt, and the yellow land was revealed. The water in Yin and Yang Ocean turned from blue to crimson.

“The dawn is coming!”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon suddenly opened his eyes and looked to Yin and Yang Ocean. It looked keen.

The eleven saint beasts also stood up and walked to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“Can we summon the ghost ancient boat now, your highness?” Mysterious hedgehog saint beast asked.

“Let’s begin now.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon raised his arm and pointed at the sky. He closed his eyes and started to chant.

Ao Xinyan, Blackie and the alcohol maniac were all paying attention to the saint beasts in Ancestral Dragon Mountain. They all stared at Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“Can’t believe Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is proficient in ancient spells as well.” Blackie was surprised.

Ao Xinyan said, “Even if Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn’t know in the beginning, Ancestral Dragon Mountain would’ve taught him.”

She then said, “Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wouldn’t just go to Yin and Yang Ocean for no reason. Perhaps he’s going there for the same reason.”

“The same reason.”

Blackie’s pupils constricted, “I’ve got to get that object. I’ll kill anyone who dares stand in my way.”

Ao Xinyan shook her head and said, “We might not be their match. That Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon alone is already a handful, not to mention those terrific beasts following it.”

Ao Xinyan had never seen the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, but she had heard their names.

She could recognize three of the saint beasts following Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“That elder with black thorns on its body is Mysterious Hedgehog Saint. Its mind power is at least at level fifty-two. Even the saints at Xuanhuang Realm are not its match. I heard that it’s killed more than ten saint beasts.

“That beautiful woman with a snake tail is called Xue Zhen Devil Beauty. She reached the state of saint five hundred years ago and mastered millions of savage beasts in Yuan Kong Mountain. She’s definitely an overlord.

“That bald giant ten feet tall is called Mang Shisi. It’s ranked the fourteenth in the bull beast race. It has special body constitution and has great proficiency in fist techniques and palm techniques. It can rival Taigu remains who’re at the same level. Before Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon becomes a saint, it was the one who’d been protecting him.”

Ao Xinyan knew that Zhang Ruochen and Blackie were powerful enough to rival upper-class saints.

However, they still couldn’t compare to saints at Xuanhuang level, which was why she was worried.

If they dared confront the great beings from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, they would definitely be annihilated.

Hong Long Long.

Waves were splattered on the lake, making deafening sounds.

The waves were originally only three feet tall, and then, they became fifteen feet tall, thirty feet tall. In the end, they were

more than a thousand feet tall, forming a water wall that connected the sky and land.

The waves looked like moving mountains from afar.

An ancient boat was sailed far off, and the boat was more than ten times taller than the water wave mountain, giving out ancient and overbearing forces.

The ancient boat looked like a giant dragon with a head, claws and a tail, giving out silver light, looking holy.

Led by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, all the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain kneeled on the ground, saluting the silver ghost ancient boat.

The sky and the water all turned silver, covered by the godly light.

The alcohol maniac opened his mouth wide with his eyes gleaming. He said, “There’s indeed an ancient boat, and it looks so sacred. Is that a boat made of the remains of the divine dragon? I heard the body of a god will never decompose. Can I eat the flesh and blood of the divine dragon?”

Ao Xinyan was kneeling on the ground. After hearing what the alcohol maniac said, she was scared and shot a glare at him. “Don’t be disrespectful. If the soul of that divine dragon hears you, he’ll punish us.”

Blackie said, “That’s right. That ghost ancient boat is too incredible. Perhaps it is indeed made of the remains of the divine dragon. If we infuriated the soul of the divine dragon, he can kill us with a slight trace of consciousness.”

The silver ghost ancient boat got closer and closer to the ground, and the force became larger and larger.

The alcohol maniac was intimidated by the forces coming out of the ancient boat. He stopped talking.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the other saint beasts boarded the ghost ancient boat, and then, the giant boat sailed off on the ocean, disappearing from sight.

“If Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is looking for the same thing, we must go catch up with them now. We can’t let him get the object first.”

Blackie looked to Zhang Ruochen and was worried. It thought, Zhang Ruochen, quickly condensed a saint source. We need to leave now.

The ghost ancient boat would only come at dawn and at dusk.

Once the dawn passed, they needed to wait until dusk to take off, which was half a day later than Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Everything could happen in half a day.

Zhang Ruochen’s body was covered by tens of thousands of sword shadows.

Nobody knew what was happening to him now.

How was the process of condensing sword saint source going?

Blackie’s eyes popped. It couldn’t be more anxious. It said to Ao Xinyan, “Go summon the ghost ancient boat now. We have to leave at dawn today.”

“But group leader’s still refining.”

“We can’t deal with that now. Just summon the ghost ancient boat. If he hasn’t condensed a saint source, we’ll carry him to the boat directly.” Blackie couldn’t be more worried that Sky-swallowing Demonic Drago would take away the sun and moon chaos tower.

Blackie had saved Ao Xinyan before, and he gave her more than one ancient techniques, so Ao Xinyan respected his decision.

She walked out of the formation and walked to the ocean. She reached out her arms and started to chant.

After a while, black clouds showed up in the sky with lightning shuttling in the clouds.

Hong Long Long.

Waves splashed on the ocean again.

A ghost ancient boat sailed from the black mist, looking like a giant skeleton.

Ao Xinyan, the alcohol maniac, and Blackie were all horrified and couldn't help trembling when it showed up.

The ghost ancient boat summoned by Sky-swallowing Dragon had glowed with silver light, yet the ghost ancient boat summoned by Ao Xinyan looked like the boat of death from hell.

Blackie looked terrified and said, "What's happening? Why are there human and savage beast corpses everywhere on that boat? And there're thousands of ghosts walking on the deck."

Ao Xinyan's face paled seeing the horrific scene on the ghost ancient boat. She said, "I've said before that the ghost ancient boats on Yin and Yang Ocean are all different. Some of them are safe, but some are very dangerous. Apparently, the boat we summoned is a ghostly boat full of evil spirits and corpses. We can't board this boat. Let's just wait until dusk and summon another boat, shall we?"

Blackie seemed to have ignored what Ao Xinyan said. It looked behind itself and said, "We can't wait. Enemies are coming!"

A dragon that was three hundred feet long flew toward the ocean, trampling and shaking the ground.

Three beings were standing on the dragon.

At the front was a human-shaped being who was holding a black spear. He stood straight, wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor. It was a Death Knight from the Immortal Temple.

Chapter 1236 - Becoming A Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The earth dragon was huge. When it ran, it was like a mountain was moving. It created various ten-meter-long footprints.

The Death Knight was surrounded by a blood-red halo. Paired with the icy blood armor, he looked extremely menacing.

Boundless saintly might spread from his body. It surged toward Ao Xinyan, the Crazy Alcoholic, and Blackie, forming icy wind.

“Such a terrifying figure. How did Zhang Ruochen offend such a horrible enemy?”

Ao Xinyan was shocked. The figure standing on the dragon’s back was like a god of death from Hell. He could probably destroy everything in the world.

“He caught up quickly.” Blackie laughed.

Saint Yashe wore a long silver robe. Standing behind the Death Knight, he rasped out, “Fat cat, you thought you could escape by faking your death? You really underestimated the Immortal Pavilion.”

“Where is Zhang Ruochen?” the Death Knight asked coldly. “Tell him to come out to die.”

The Death Knight’s injuries had healed completely. He’d returned to his peak. He couldn’t be compared to how he was in Ancient Taiyin City.

“Zhang Ruochen has already entered the Yin Yang Sea. I only have to extend a claw to destroy all of you.”

While speaking so arrogantly, Blackie sent a secret message to the Crazy Alcoholic. “Old alcoholic, you should have advanced cultivation, right? I’ll give you a chance to kill them.”

The Crazy Alcoholic shook his head seriously. “No, no. I swore that I wouldn’t kill anymore, or else I won’t be able to drink for the rest of my life. Not being able to drink is worse than death.”

“You don’t have to kill them,” Blackie said patiently. “Just restrain them.”

“No, no, what if I accidentally kill them? I won’t risk it.” He shook his head like a rattle-drum.

Blackie wanted to kill this Crazy Alcoholic. “Then what use do you have?”

“No use.”

The Crazy Alcoholic seemed very calm. He walked to a nearby stone and sat down. Pulling out a pouch, he started drinking alone. He really didn’t plan on fighting.

Blackie’s previous words had angered the Death Knight and Saint Yashe.

“What an arrogant cat,” Saint Yashe said in a low voice. “I’ll cut off your four claws first and see if you can still be arrogant.”

He knew that Blackie was Zhang Ruochen’s battle pet. Killing it would be like cutting off Zhang Ruochen’s limb.

“That cat isn’t easy to deal with,” the Death Knight said coldly. “Yao Sheng, you go with Saint Yashe. You must take it down and force it to reveal where Zhang Ruochen is.”

“Yes.”

Yao Sheng jumped off of the dragon and strode toward the sea. He’d escaped from Ancient Taiyin City but had been captured by the Death Knight again.

This time, instead of making him submit, the Death Knight turned him directly into a blood slave.

Right now, Yao Sheng's four eyes shone with red light. Eerie patterns emerged on his skin. His Saintly Way aura was even stronger than before.

Blackie was actually only around Zhang Ruochen's level.

In Ancient Taiyin City, it'd been able to fend off Saint Yashe because of the formation. It was actually much weaker than Saint Yashe.

But even if there was a difference in ability, it couldn't lose in appearance.

"Let's fight. Who's afraid?" Blackie stood up like a human and walked forward to Yao Sheng and Saint Yashe.

"You're looking for death."

Saint Yashe took out a bronze disc and poured Spiritual Power into it. It instantly grew to the size of a stone mill. Spinning, it flew toward Blackie.

Boom!

The disc crashed forward and sent Blackie flying. It fell into the Yin Yang Sea.

As the Yin and Yang interchanged, the water became scalding hot. It was red and gold like lava. When Blackie fell in, there were sizzles and then it sank to the bottom.

"Can't even take a hit."

Saint Yashe looked scornful. He collected the disc and held it in his hand. Then he gazed toward Ao Xinyan and the Crazy Alcoholic.

"Speak! Where is Zhang Ruochen?"

Yao Sheng approached from the other direction with the Ghost King Chain. Ao Xinyan had a strong physique, but she could only fight against lower-level Saints. Faced with people as strong as Yao Sheng and Saint Yashe, she'd be lucky to escape.

“Old alcoholic, what do we do?” Ao Xinyan stared at the Crazy Alcoholic. All hope was on him now.

The Crazy Alcoholic stared at the invisibility formation. Eyes squinting, he said happily, “Zhang Ruochen has become a Saint!”

Saint Yashe and Yao Sheng were surprised. They followed the Crazy Alcoholic’s eyes.

Nothing was there.

Saint Yashe clenched his fists in extreme anger. “Old thing, you dare to fool us...”

Before he could finish, the ground shook.

Boom!

A large mass of Sword Qi flew out of the invisibility formation. Like sword rain, it crashed down on Saint Yashe and Yao Sheng.

“Zhang Ruochen is actually nearby.”

In a panic, Saint Yashe could only push up the copper disc to block the Sword Qi. Yao Sheng waved his arm and sent the Ghost King Chain flying. It spun without stop, scattering all the dense Sword Qi.

When the Qi had all dissipated, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the invisibility formation. He wore a white robe and had his arms behind his back.

Seventy-two rings of saintly light wrapped around him.

“Group Leader really entered the Saint Realm?” Ao Xinyan wondered.

Zhang Ruochen’s Holy Qi ripples were much stronger than before. Merely standing there, he gave off a sharp aura.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’ve finally appeared. Today will be the day of your death.”

Features menacing, Yao Sheng stepped forward and flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

The Ghost King Chain flew out first. It was like a long metal dragon. There was a true Saint's head at the tip. It shone with green ghostly fire, surging with shocking power.

Yao Sheng's abilities ranked at the top of upper-level Saints. He was able to fight for short periods with Saints who'd just entered the Xuanhuang Realm.

The Death Knight felt that Yao Sheng could defeat Zhang Ruochen, so he stood in the distance and didn't attack. He wanted to use Yao Sheng to use up Zhang Ruochen's Fifth Town Destructive Sacred Rune.

Zhang Ruochen stood in place, calm and composed. "I wanted to kill you long ago but dragged it out until now. Today, I will let you return to ashes and dirt."

Whoosh!

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out automatically, hovering before Zhang Ruochen. He extended a finger and pointed. The Abyss Ancient Sword immediately cut down with a trail of arcing light.

Crack!

The Ghost King Chain couldn't withstand the Abyss Ancient Sword's attack and cracked into dozens of segments.

"How can it...not withstand a sword..."

Yao Sheng was shocked. Throwing away the broken Ghost King Chain, he clenched his hands into claws and cast a saint spell. Two huge blood-red claw prints appeared. They hovered before Yao Sheng and attacked.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward calmly. He waved his finger and the Abyss Ancient Sword cut down again. It easily tore through the two claw prints and went for Yao Sheng's waist.

Yao Sheng's saintly body was cut in half.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen stepped on Yao Sheng's head, crumbling his skull. He didn't give Yao Sheng a chance to rejoin his body.

Saint Yashe hadn't even gotten to attack and Yao Sheng had already died. He inhaled sharply, eyes filling with shock.

Zhang Ruochen had improved too terrifyingly fast. Only a few days had passed, but Yao Sheng at his peak state had been killed so easily.

The Death Knight's pupils constricted. "You've just entered the Saint Realm, but you're undefeatable below the Xuanhuang Realm already. It seems that I must kill you today. I can't let you escape again, lest you become so strong that even I can't kill you anymore."

The lord of the Earth Heavenly Palace had been at the peak of the Xuanhuang Realm, but he couldn't take the Death Knight's one hit. Zhang Ruochen was still far from that level now. The Death Knight was confident in killing him.

Zhang Ruochen stood against the Death Knight while sending a message to Ao Xinyan and the Crazy Alcoholic. "Board the ship."

"We cannot," Ao Xinyan said. "That's a ship of death. We won't be able to return once we board it."

"I don't care. Board it and then we'll see." The Crazy Alcoholic had been wanting to board an ancient dead soul ship. Hearing Zhang Ruochen's decision, he was even more impatient.

Grabbing Ao Xinyan's arm, his legs bent. Like an arrow, he shot into the sky and flew toward the ship's deck.

"You think it's that easy to leave?"

Saint Yashe pushed upward, sending out the copper disc. It grew bigger and bigger, radiating with boundless power. It flew in the air, wanting to strike down the Crazy Alcoholic and Ao Xinyan.

The Crazy Alcoholic reached out a hand and grabbed the disc as if it was a huge pancake. He stuffed it into his robes.

He and Ao Xinyan landed on the deck of a ship. They immediately rushed into the black mist. "Run!" he screamed. "The powerful enemy is chasing after us!"

When Saint Yashe realized that he'd lost connection with the copper disc, he froze on the spot.

What was this? The disc was a Spiritual Power saint weapon even stronger than a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. It was so strong. How could that Crazy Alcoholic just take it away?

Had Saint Yashe met a powerful figure? But if he was so strong, then why did he escape?

Saint Yashe felt like he'd been toyed with. He shook in anger and his face turned beet-red. He wished he could cut the Crazy Alcoholic apart.

The moment that the Crazy Alcoholic and Ao Xinyan boarded the ship, thousands of blood-red lightning bolts appeared in the sky above it. The black mist that covered the ship was also surging quickly.

Then the ship started sailing again, charging into the depths of the Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen stopped fighting the Death Knight too. He used a physical technique and charged at the ship.

Chapter 1237 - Unknown Ghosts

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Don’t even think about leaving.”

The Death Knight jumped up from the dragon and threw the spear toward Zhang Ruochen.

A blood-red light shuttle flew out.

The power from the spear was horrific. Halos were formed, centering on the light shuttle, making cracking sounds in the sky.

“Spatial move.”

Zhang Ruochen vanished to dodge the blood-red light shuttle.

Hong Long.

The area where Zhang Ruochen had just stood was attacked by the blood light shuttle. It caved and collapsed into the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen showed up again in the sky above the ancient ghost boat, sliding on the deck.

The Death Knight landed on the ground, staring at the white-caped being on the ancient ghost boat. His eyes gleamed with ferocious light. “Power of space again.”

Zhang Ruochen had escaped the Death Knight once, so the Death Knight wouldn’t let him flee again.

“Even if you have the power of space, today is still the day you die.”

The Death Knight stuck the spear into the ground, mobilizing the holy Qi inside him and infusing it into the Ten Saints Blood Armor. And then, ten saint shadows emerged, standing at ten different directions.

Meanwhile, he raised his arm and clenched his fist.

“Hundred Miles Fist.”

With the power of ten saints, the Death Knight performed fist techniques at the saint spell level, which was forty-two times stronger than he actually was.

Fist prints the size of two hills flew out, and the water between the ground and the ancient ghost boat started to tumble as if it was surging to the sky.

To Zhang Ruochen, they were no fist prints, but two burning aerolites.

“How terrific the saint spell is. Even saints at Xuanhuang realm might be killed.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't use his five town saint repression rune, instead, he wanted to use his own power to ward off the attacks from the Death Knight.

It was indeed dangerous, but it was worth trying, after all, he was a martial arts saint now. He was way stronger than before.

“Time saint look.”

“Space saint look.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms, and then, time saint look and space saint look showed up on his sides, and they looked like two giant whirlpools.

He pushed his arms forward, then the time saint look and space saint look flew out, clashing with the two fist prints.

Hong Long.

The two fist prints crumbled and turned into two clusters of blood-red clouds.

Zhang Ruochen felt a tremendous amount of power pushing his body backwards, and he hit the ancient ghost boat.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know what he'd hit. A giant sound came from that black devil Qi.

And then, the thousands of ghost shadows seemed to have been frightened. They all woke up and made ear-piercing noises.

"He's strong enough to ward off my Hundred Miles Fist." The Death Knight found it hard to believe.

The Death Knight had great body constitution, which could rival the saint bodies of human beings. He was definitely a top-tier being among those at the same level.

The Death Knight was at pinnacle Xuanhuang realm, and with the power of Ten Saints Blood Armor, ordinary saints at Xuanhuang realm would be killed by him with one strike.

However, Zhang Ruochen, who had just become a saint, was able to survive one attack from him.

How could that not be surprising.

"The power of time and space is indeed inexplicable. No wonder the Immortal Temple wants us to kill him no matter what. If he matures and gets stronger, he'll definitely be a forceful enemy of my race," Ya She Saint said.

"Go chase him."

The Death Knight and Ya She Saint spread their blood-red wings and flew toward the ancient ghost boat like two traces of blood-red light.

The shore of Yin and Yang Ocean wasn't dangerous. After flying for a while, the Death Knight and Ya She Saint boarded the ancient ghost boat.

Although he had survived the Hundred Miles Fist, Zhang Ruochen was still slightly injured.

Zhang Ruochen stood up, and he was surrounded by black fog. He couldn't see anything more than thirty feet away.

"The fog is poisonous, and it has very strong cold and evil Qi."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his holy Qi, and then, seventy-two layers of holy light emerged.

Each layer of holy light was like a defense cover. Any creature who wanted to kill him needed to pierce through the seventy-two layers of holy light first.

Thanks to the seventy-two layers of holy light, Zhang Ruochen was able to ward off the strike from the Death Knight and only got slightly injured.

Only those who refined special techniques could form guarding holy light when they reached the state of half-saint or saints.

The black fog couldn't get close to Zhang Ruochen with the holy light protecting him. However, the holy light was so bright that it attracted a ghost shadow.

It wasn't a ghost, but a shadow.

Zhang Ruochen felt forces from him that were more terrific than those of the Death Knight.

“What's that?”

Zhang Ruochen held his breath, holding Abyss Ancient Sword, and was completely alarmed.

Ga Ga.

The shadow made thrilling laughing sounds, and suddenly, it disappeared.

Actually, it didn't disappear, but it was moving so fast that Zhang Ruochen couldn't see it at all.

Zhang Ruochen immediately wielded his sword and slashed above his head.

Hong Long. Zhang Ruochen felt that he'd slashed an iron wall, and his hands became numb.

And then, twelve black tentacles dived from the sky, winding around the sword, trying to seize it.

The power from the black tentacles was enormous. Zhang Ruochen immediately infused holy Qi into his sword and used

thousand-patterns destruction to cut off the twelve black tentacles.

Zhang Ruochen then retracted his seventy-two layers of holy light and activated ten-saints blood armor, trying to run as fast as possible.

That shadow kept following Zhang Ruochen and hit Zhang Ruochen's back with a tentacle.

Zhang Ruochen felt that his organs were being crushed. He kept bleeding, but he didn't dare stop. He kept running.

Ga Ga.

That shadow made an attack again. It spread all its tentacles and completely encircled Zhang Ruochen.

“Spatial move.”

Zhang Ruochen jumped and escaped from the tentacles.

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen showed up in another space, arrived at a close cabin, kneeled on the ground and breathed heavily. He was sweating everywhere.

“It is indeed a boat of death. A random shadow can be that powerful. What is that?” Zhang Ruochen was intimidated.

That shadow was beyond Zhang Ruochen's knowledge. He had no idea what it was.

It wasn't a living being, but it wasn't a ghost either.

Zhang Ruochen hid in a cabin and took a spring spill. After a short while, he recovered.

“I chose a random direction to perform spatial move. Where am I now?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and released his mind power for inspection. He found that even his mind power was suppressed on the ancient ghost boat. He could only inspect things less than ninety feet away from him.

Instead, he sensed where Blackie was.

That sensing had nothing to do with mind power.

That fat cat didn't die. Instead, it had boarded the ancient ghost boat. However, it was more than two hundred miles away from Zhang Ruochen.

The ancient ghost boat was more than seven hundred miles long. It looked like a dragon corpse on the water. There were buildings on the dragon corpses, like decks, cabins, and palaces.

That boat looked like an island, or a mountain.

After the ancient times, no creatures at this size were born in Kunlun's Field. Even the ancient remains dug out from the underground couldn't compare to it.

Perhaps only the bodies of divine dragons could rival it.

"Two hundred miles is too far. I shouldn't go out. If I run into another ferocious beast, I might not be able to get away."

Zhang Ruochen didn't go meet Blackie. Instead, he stayed in the cabin to improve his cultivation.

At least the cabin was relatively safe.

Zhang Ruochen was able to rival some weak saints at Xuanhuang realm if he fully utilized the power of ten saints blood armor, time and space.

However, it wasn't enough.

When he ran into great beings like the Death Knight, he still couldn't fight them.

"I've already comprehended the first level of Sword Seven. If I can complete Sword Seven, my power will surge to a new level."

If he could complete Sword Seven, he would become a sword saint.

Which meant the power of sword seven was much higher than that of sword six.

There were ten levels of sword seven, and Zhang Ruochen had just finished the first level.

“My mind power is enough to handle the memories and saintly way comprehension of ‘Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Picture.’”

If Zhang Ruochen could merge the sixth lifetime, his sword mastery would be greatly improved.

“Master, give me a saint source first. I need to absorb nutrition to improve my power.” Carnivorous Holy Flower’s voice was smooth, transmitted into Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t need to worry about Carnivorous Holy Flower swallowing him back as he had become a saint. He gave it the three saint sources.

Carnivorous Holy Flower said with exhilaration, “Thank you, master. As long as I absorb the three saint sources, I’ll be powerful enough to rival a saint at Xuanhuang realm.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t pay attention to Carnivorous Holy Flower. He devoted his mind to memories and saint way comprehension of the sixth lifetime.

Chapter 1238 - Evil Saint

Intent Body

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

In the sixth life of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, Ling Feiyu turned into a white fox. Zhang Ruochen became a hermit cultivator who acted as her guide. He helped open up Ling Feiyu's mind and guide her onto the path of cultivation.

In this life, Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen accompanied each other for 300 years. They turned from one fox and one human into one woman and one man. The entire time, they lived in a secluded spiritual mountain.

As time passed, their relationship grew ambiguous. They were like master and disciple, but also like a fairy-like couple. They had memories that couldn't be described clearly, and faint sentiments.

The world was vast and boundless in that life, but they still lived in their two-person world.

After melding the memories and knowledge from the sixth life, Zhang Ruochen didn't feel a bit of joy. Instead, he sank into a long silence.

The memories and feelings of the 300 years were too complicated. There were so many changes in emotion that even with Zhang Ruochen's level 51 Spiritual Power, he still couldn't really separate reality from fantasy. He was quite affected by it all.

A beat later, Zhang Ruochen let out a long breath. He walked out of the daze but sank into even deeper frustrations.

I actually had feelings for her in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map! Thankfully, the feelings weren't that deep. I didn't sink fully into them. I should still be able to survive and leave, right?

Zhang Ruochen was worried because the sixth life wasn't the end.

There was still a seventh life.

He couldn't predict whether their feelings for each other would expand further to a point that he couldn't end it.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu weren't from the same world. They'd only had interactions and feelings because of coincidences. If this feeling bloomed, it might not be a good thing.

Zhang Ruochen thought back hard. When he and Ling Feiyu had stepped out of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, Ling Feiyu seemed very indifferent. She didn't look like she'd sunken into feelings.

I must be overthinking. I'm sure nothing happened in the seventh life.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, trying to think more positively. At the same time, he was also curious. Ling Feiyu's cultivation was very advanced. But how could she not be moved at all when she'd combined the memories of all seven lives?

Had she purposely repressed her emotions?

I'm truly curious what she thought of our experiences in the seventh life.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, moving on from those matters. Thinking about them would only worsen his frustrations.

In the worst-case scenario, he would visit her personally in the Demonic Sect headquarters after the seventh life.

Combining the memories and knowledge of the sixth life, Zhang Ruochen's attainments in the Sword Way reached the fifth level of Sword Seven. He also had big improvements in

the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique, the third level of the time sword. Every move and technique became more mature.

He closed his eyes, releasing his sword intent.

Whoosh!

Dense sword images emerged in the cabin. At first, they were very faint, like shreds of mist.

Gradually, the sword images grew clearer and clearer. They surrounded Zhang Ruochen, bowing toward him. They produced grating clangs. It was like thousands of swords bowing to the emperor.

These sword images weren't created from Holy Qi or Sword Qi. Instead, it was sword intent.

Yes, it was sword intent.

Sword intent was a type of thought or intent. It was very intangible. Being able to create sword images out of sword intent proved that a swordsman's attainments were very close to that of a Sword Saint.

The sword images created by the sword intent were completely different from those created from Qi. Apparently, a true Sword Saint could use sword intent to form a solid saintly sword. The power produced were a whole other level.

Sword Seven has ten levels in total. I'm only at the fifth level. Becoming a Sword Saint isn't an easy thing.

If another swordsman could hear Zhang Ruochen's thoughts, they would definitely die from anger. After all, most swordsmen only comprehended Sword Seven when they reached the True Realm or Supreme Realm. Then they could become a Sword Saint. Only the best of the best swordsmen could become a Sword Saint.

Zhang Ruochen was only a lower-level Saint, but his attainments in the Sword Way were close to that of a Sword Saint's. Yet he still wasn't satisfied. How could he not anger others?

In addition to improvements in the Sword Way, Zhang Ruochen's comprehension of the Saintly Way also far

surpassed other lower-level Saints.

In other words, Zhang Ruochen didn't need to waste time in comprehending the Saintly Way alone. As long as he had enough precious resources, his cultivation would improve naturally after absorbing the resources.

Zhang Ruochen took out the dragon pearl from his spatial ring and held it in his palm.

Refining this dragon pearl should push my cultivation to the pinnacle of the lower Saint Realm.

Zhang Ruochen was impatient about increasing his cultivation. He had to strengthen his combat ability so he could fight the Immortal Pavilion's Death Knight by himself.

Every bit of improvement would increase his chances of victory.

Zhang Ruochen closed his hands, flattening the dragon pearl. The pearl had been the size of a skull. Now, it was as big as a pigeon's egg.

He swallowed it. The Holy Qi circulation path of the seventh level of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture appeared in his mind. He refined the dragon pearl with all his might.

It turned into a cloud of Qi in his body.

Various Rules of Saintly Way flew out of it. They rushed into his Sea of Qi, following the Saintly Meridians.

Zhang Ruochen's Sword Way saintly source hovered in his Sea of Qi. It was a palm-sized crystal that shone with dazzling light.

The Rules of Saintly Way from the dragon pearl entered the Sea of Qi and immediately spun around the saintly source. They circled it nine times and then rushed inside the saintly source.

The Rules of Saintly Way in the saintly source grew denser and denser.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was also improving rapidly. Every 15 minutes was like a month of

cultivation for other lower-level Saints.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen had absorbed 80% of the dragon pearl's essence. His cultivation reached the peak of the lower level. His body was filled with Holy Qi and was almost bursting at the seams.

Zhang Ruochen quickly stopped absorbing the dragon pearl's essence. He worked to repress the aggressive Holy Qi within him.

After stabilizing, he became slightly relieved. I've finally reached the pinnacle of the lower level. I can wait until I fully control the power within me to refine the remaining 20%.

He moved the remaining 20% through his Saintly Meridians into the Sea of Qi to store temporarily.

He'd reached the pinnacle of the lower Saint Realm. Before reaching the middle level, it seemed difficult to have any other improvements. However, Zhang Ruochen felt like he still had great room for improvement. He hadn't truly reached the limit of the lower level yet.

Both the Rules of Saintly Way in the Sword Way or Holy Qi were from the dragon pearl. They weren't pure. If Zhang Ruochen continued to fortify and exercise it, he would definitely improve further.

Cackle, cackle.

Suddenly, strange noises sounded outside the cabin. It was like the laugh of an eerie shadow. The strange noise got closer and gradually grew clearer.

Oh no, it's that eerie shadow again.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel a cold and eerie current blow into his face. He'd witnessed the power of this shadow, so he quickly collected his Qi. He curled up within the Ten Saints Blood Armor and lay on the ground like a dead corpse.

Cackle, cackle.

The creepy laugh got closer and paced outside the cabin.

Zhang Ruochen had never seen such an unpredictable thing before. He had no clue how he should deal with it. He could only continue to pretend to be dead in hopes of fooling it.

The Ten Saints Blood Armor was quite a treasure. It could actually fool the creepy shadow.

A while later, the shadow's laugh gradually went into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen stood up from the ground. He'd just let out a relieved breath, when crackles came from outside the cabin. It was like someone sawing the cabin's metal door with some sharp weapon.

It didn't leave?

Zhang Ruochen raised his hands. He activated the power of space, preparing to use the Spatial Move to escape.

Thud.

The cabin's door was torn apart. Blackie rushed in and cackled. "Zhang Ruochen, I spent so many days and finally found you. How come you're hiding in the lowest level of the ship?"

"Oh, it's you." Zhang Ruochen put away the power of space. "I'm hiding from the ghostly shadows. You should know what they are, right?"

Blackie nodded its fuzzy and round head. "It's the Evil Saint Intent Body."

"Is it living or dead?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Neither living nor dead." Blackie thought about how to explain it to Zhang Ruochen. A moment later, it finally said, "Every Half-Saint or Saint has a saint intent. No one can explain clearly what exactly that is. I believe that the so-called saint intent is a Half-Saint or Saint's perceptions.

"Many Half-Saints and Saints have died on this ship. Along the way, I've seen countless skeletons. Their saint souls have already disappeared. But for some reason, their saint intents have actually been combined and turned into cruel Evil Saint

Intent Bodies. Both living and dead souls will be attacked by them.”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows. “Saint intents are only a Saint’s thoughts. You can cultivate thoughts and unleash power even more terrifying than a Saint?”

“That’s why I said that this ship is very odd,” Blackie said. “Anyway, the best thing to do when faced with an Evil Saint Intent Body is to hide. Coming to the lowest level of the ship is a very smart choice.”

Zhang Ruochen was about to inquire about a way to deal with them when Blackie asked first, “Zhang Ruochen, why is someone sitting behind you? Who is he? The Crazy Alcoholic?”

“Someone? There’s someone here?” Zhang Ruochen thought that Blackie was speaking nonsense, so he didn’t take it seriously.

Blackie reached out a claw and pointed behind Zhang Ruochen. “Can’t you see? There really is someone sitting there.”

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had used the Spatial Move to come to this sealed cabin. He’d been cultivating with all his might and didn’t even check his surroundings.

Seeing that Blackie wasn’t joking around, he finally turned around and looked toward the corner. He instantly felt a chill run down his spine and goosebumps rising all over. There really was a person sitting in the corner.

More accurately, it was a dead person.

Chapter 1239 - Dragon Fire Island

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The human being was sitting in the corner without moving. It didn't have any life force. It was a corpse instead of a living being.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't a coward. However, he didn't even notice it after sitting in front of him for several days, which was terrifying.

There were many weird things on the ancient ghost boat. Even saint thoughts could be refined into evil thoughts. Everything was possible.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen was careful even facing a lifeless corpse. He got close to it with caution.

Nobody knew how long that corpse had been sitting there. It was covered with dust, but it hadn't rotted yet.

There was a small bloody hole between its eyebrows, and there were cracks everywhere, which made its head look like cracked china.

The blood hole between its eyebrows was what had taken its life.

"It's been dead for such a long time, yet it still hasn't rotted yet. It must have once been a great being," Blackie said.

"If he really was a great being, his body should release terrifying forces even after he died so that ordinary creatures can't get close. However, I've been in the cabin for a long time, yet I couldn't detect anything."

Zhang Ruochen pinched his chin and felt confused. And then, his eyes gleamed. He said, “There must be some valuable with him that covers his forces.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't afford to be reckless at all in a place like the ancient ghost boat. He released his mind power and made sure there were no dangers before walking to the corpse.

There was a white token hung on a silver thread.

Zhang Ruochen took the token off and wiped away the dust.

There were eight sword inscriptions on the token, and each inscription had different conception.

Zhang Ruochen released his mind power and infused the token with it.

All of a sudden, the eight sword inscriptions released white light. They gushed out and turned into eight daggers that were three inches long, wielding eight different sword techniques.

All the eight sword techniques looked mysterious, but Zhang Ruochen could feel that their forces were different, especially the seventh and the eighth sword techniques, which were changeable and intricate. Even Zhang Ruochen had to back off from them.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out his mind power and said in a thrilled tone, “‘Celestial Sword Technique’ of Wan Xiangcheng?”

Wan Xiang City was called ‘Sword City, which was ranked one of the four sword master holy places, together with Sword Pavilion of Taichi, Pluto Sword Tomb of Wang family, and Martial God Mountain.

Wan Xiang City's ‘Celestial Sword Technique’ was world-renowned, so Zhang Ruochen also knew something about it.

It was said that the founders of Wan Xiang City created it by comprehending ‘Wordless Sword Manual.’

The first level of the sword techniques corresponded to Sword One.

The second level of sword techniques corresponded to Sword Two.

Hence the eighth level of sword techniques corresponded to Sword Eight.

Compared to ‘Wordless Sword Manual,’ ‘Celestial Sword Technique’ was easier to comprehend. Besides, the sword master conception could be transformed into sword techniques directly.

A sword warrior could also comprehend Sword One, Sword Two and Sword Three.

Eight hundred years ago, Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen added level nine and level ten to ‘Celestial Sword Technique,’ which made it the most powerful sword technique in Kunlun’s Field.

Zhang Ruochen turned the token around, and ‘Wan Xiang City’ was crafted on it.

“This person was carrying the eight-sword token of Wan Xiang City, which means he refined the eighth level of ‘Celestial Sword Technique.’ He must be a terrific person,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie said, “I reckon this person’s been dead for three hundred years.”

“Three hundred years ago, there were nine sword saints in Wan Xiang City. It crushed the other three sword master holy places and was ranked the first. Out of the nine sword saints, six of them were disciples of Sword Emperor. Three of the sword saints died, and two went missing.”

“That person must have been the most powerful being in Wan Xiang City three hundred years. He was the second disciple of Sword Emperor, Xue Lanshan.”

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen figured out who that was.

Sword Emperor only admitted females as his disciples, yet he was willing to admit Xue Lanshan, which showed the potential of Xue Lanshan.

All the monks thought that Xue Lanshan was the heir of the Sword Emperor.

Xue Lanshan didn't let the Sword Emperor down. After the Sword Emperor went missing, he quickly became the first being in Wan Xiang City.

If he hadn't died here three hundred years ago, he might've comprehended Sword nine and become the most powerful sword warrior in the world.

"Xue Lanshan was mighty. Perhaps only a few beings below supreme saints could rival him, yet he was killed on the ancient ghost boat. Is there something more terrifying than the evil saint thought bodies?"

Zhang Ruochen's face paled as he realized he had underestimated the danger of the ancient ghost boat.

Zhang Ruochen had heard from Ao Xinyan that after someone reached the state of saint, the more profound his cultivation was, the easier it was for him to die in Yin and Yang Ocean. He hadn't believed that before, but now it all made sense.

Zhang Ruochen took the eight sword token and kept searching the corpse. He took out a palm-sized hexagonal stone.

The stone looked rugged. It was crimson with dragon inscriptions on.

Blackie looked at the hexagonal stone in Zhang Ruochen's hand. It looked excited and said, "This is the print of Dragon Fire Island. I know why Xue Lanshan came to Yin and Yang Ocean now. He wanted to go to Dragon Fire Island to get the Nan Spirit Dragon Fire to use it to refine his saint body. He wanted to become a supreme saint."

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased and said, "Is there really Nan Spirit Dragon Fire in Yin and Yang Ocean?"

Nan Spirit Dragon Fire was superior to Wuliang Divine Fire. It came from the divine dragons, and it could burn the sky and the ocean.

Blackie said, "Only Dragon Fire Island has Nan Spirit Dragon Fire in Kunlun's Field. A long time ago, the youngsters of the

divine dragon race would go to Dragon Fire Island to bring Nan Spirit Dragon Fire into their control after they reached the state of saint.”

“Zhang Ruochen, you should also go try to bring Nan Spirit Dragon Fire under your control. You can use Nan Spirit Dragon Fire to fight the evil saint thought bodies. Besides, Nan Spirit Dragon Fire can also be of great use when you try to seize the Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower.”

Zhang Ruochen had decided to take it after learning about Nan Spirit Dragon Fire.

Nan Spirit Dragon Fire had way more functions than described by Blackie.

However, it wasn't an easy task to get onto Dragon Fire Island. One needed to use a door print to get in.

Zhang Ruochen put the door print into his space ring.

And then, Zhang Ruochen kept searching. He eventually found the reason why the scent of the body didn't spread.

It was because of the Buddhist beads on his right wrist.

“There are Buddhist Emperor forces on those beads. Is that a mind power valuable made by the Buddhist Emperor?”

Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with the forces of the Buddhist Emperor, so he easily recognized it.

Blackie nodded and said, “Xue Lanshan carried this strong of Buddhist beads in Yin and Yang Ocean because he wanted to cover his forces to avoid the dangers in Yin and Yang Ocean. Unfortunately, he was killed on the ancient ghost boat before he could reach Dragon Fire Island.”

The Buddhist beads were much more advanced than those given to Zhang Ruochen by Yintuoluo.

If I wear this string of Buddhist beads, I can avoid the evil saint thought bodies, and the Immortal Temple won't be able to track me anymore, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen had been at a great disadvantage because the Immortal Temple was able to figure out where he was. No

matter where he ran to, he would be caught up with.

As long as he could avoid that, he could better hide himself.

Just as Zhang Ruochen took out the Buddhist beads, the corpse suddenly opened its eyes and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

At the same time, a rumbling noise came from the body, and its skin started to gleam with holy light.

The powerful holy Qi ripples were spread through the entire ancient ghost boat.

After Xue Lanshan died, his holy Qi had gathered in his body, but at this moment, it burst out.

All the evil saint thought bodies were shocked, making ear-piercing sounds, rushing toward the center of the saint power ripples.

“Sir Xue Lanshan, I just wanted to borrow two things you have. After I leave Yin and Yang Ocean, I’ll definitely return your body and your remaining objects to Wan Xiang City.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to rip off a dead person, and besides, it was already very rewarding for him to find the door print and Buddhist beads on Xue Lanshan.

He needed to return the two treasures to the young generation of Xue Lanshan.

After hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, the corpse closed his eyes.

Blackie was relieved. It stared at the body and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you might’ve been killed already if it wasn’t for what you just said.”

“Really?”

“For someone like Xue Lanshan, he could leave something behind even after he died.”

Blackie said, “With the protection of Buddhist beads, the saint soul of Xue Lanshan might not wither away completely. Even if there’s only one trace of soul left in his body, he could easily kill you.”

Zhang Ruochen was relieved and said, "Let's go. I can feel a large group of evil saint thought bodies coming here."

Zhang Ruochen saluted Xue Lanshan's body and put the body back into the space ring and left the cabin with Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen met more than ten evil saint thought bodies. He was wearing twelve Buddhist beads, but he was able to dodge them all.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go look for Ao Xinyan and the alcohol maniac. It would be impossible to find them here.

Zhang Ruochen kept solidifying his cultivation in the following three days and refined the essences from the dragon pearls.

On the same day, Zhang Ruochen saw another ancient ghost boat on the ocean. That ancient ghost boat gleamed with silver light.

It was the silver ancient ghost boat taken by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

"Finally, we've caught up with them."

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and smiled.

The silver ancient ghost boat was moored beside an island.

Blackie jumped on the shoulder of Zhang Ruochen and pointed at the island in the distance. It said, "That's Dragon Fire Island."

Chapter 1240 - Exchanging Blows Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was a dark purple island. It was barren without an inch of grass. There was only a towering volcano in the center that was extremely eye-catching.

This was Dragon Fire Island, representing the Yang center of the Yin Yang Sea.

The dragons had set up protective formation around the island in ancient times. It formed a barrier around 500 miles from the island, stopping other creatures from breaking into it.

You could only go through the formation's barrier by riding the Dead Soul Ancient Ship and approaching Dragon Fire Island.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon rode the silver ship and stopped at the north side of the island. The black ship that Zhang Ruochen was on also steered toward Dragon Fire Island. Finally, he stopped at the east side.

“The Dead Soul Ancient Soul Ship must have a specific passage,” Blackie said. “There are many stopping points in the sea. Each one must have an extraordinary significance.”

No one steered the ship, but they cruised down similar paths and stopped at Dragon Fire Island. This obviously made people wonder if there was some mysterious power hidden in Yin Yang Sea that controlled the ships.

“The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon has become a Saint,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Since he's come to Dragon Fire Island,

he'll definitely go in to take the Nanling Dragon Fire. We must use this chance to kill him.”

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had improved greatly. He wouldn't be afraid even if he met the saint beasts of Ancient Dragon Mountain. He naturally wouldn't give the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon a chance to mature further.

If the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon knew that the mysterious figure who'd killed two Saint Dragons was Zhang Ruochen, he would definitely do his best to kill Zhang Ruochen. He wouldn't be acting like this right now.

“Look, who's that?” Blackie pointed at Dragon Fire Island.

Zhang Ruochen looked over. Hundreds of miles away, a beautiful figure flew off of a Dead Soul Ancient Ship. Dozens of Dragon Qi beams wrapped around her, like a cloud of Dragon Qi. She flew toward Dragon Fire Island.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Ao Xinyan.”

“How come there's only Ao Xinyan? Where's the Crazy Alcoholic?” Blackie was confused.

“Get onto Dragon Island First and reunite with her. Then you'll just have to ask to find out.”

A pair of dragon wings unfurled on Zhang Ruochen's back. He flew off of the ship and flew at a high altitude across the sea. He charged toward Dragon Fire Island.

Ao Xinyan wore a green dress. She reached the outside of Dragon Fire Island first and landed on a 30-foot-tall rock. A shield of fire appeared before her. It reached from the sea to the heavens.

She just touched it lightly and a loud boom sounded immediately. A cloud of fire plummeted from the barrier.

Whoosh!

Ao Xinyan quickly used a saintly physical technique of the Divine Dragons. Transforming into 36 dragons, she flew dozens of miles away. The next moment, the 36 dragons consolidated back into her beautiful figure.

The fire cloud fell into the Yin Yang Sea, boiling the surrounding waters.

“Is this the legendary Gate of Fire? It seems that we can’t enter without the imprint.” Ao Xinyan sighed, feeling extremely disappointed.

She naturally knew that the island contained Nanling Dragon Fire. She’d wanted to go and take one to exercise her physical body and complete her True Dragon Body.

It seemed that she didn’t have the chance now!

Suddenly, she sensed something and turned around. Seeing Zhang Ruochen flying above the sea, she instantly grew happy.

Zhang Ruochen flew to the vicinity and approached the fire barrier. “Where’s the Crazy Alcoholic?” he asked.

“Shortly after we boarded the ship, he ran into trouble and escaped alone. He seemed to be avoiding some terrifying creature.”

Zhang Ruochen thought of Xue Lanshan, who’d died on the ship, and furrowed his brows. “The higher your cultivation is, the more dangerous the Yin Yang Sea is. I hope nothing will happen to him.”

Blackie peeked out of Zhang Ruochen’s sleeve, confused. “You were able to survive the ship with just your cultivation after the Crazy Alcoholic escaped?”

Blackie was still alive because it had been with Zhang Ruochen. It had been forced into the Yin Yang Sea.

Ao Xinyan was surprised, but she didn’t ask. Instead, she just said, “Maybe it’s because I’d refined a divine dragon bone and awakened the Divine Dragon Blood within me. I didn’t run into much danger on the ship.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, thinking that Ao Xinyan’s guess was reasonable. If she didn’t have the Qi of the Divine Dragon race protecting her, she couldn’t have survived until now with her cultivation.

“We’ll enter the Dragon Fire Island first and take the Nanling Dragon Fire,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“No, you need the door print of the Divine Dragon Race to enter.” Ao Xinyan shook her head and sighed again.

“I have the print.”

Zhang Ruochen took a six-sided stone from his spatial ring, holding it in his hand. Ao Xinyan’s eyes widened in shock. Her group leader was indeed full of surprises. Even she was impressed. He could even find the print to enter Dragon Fire Island.

“Oh, no.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt a great sense of danger. He reflexively lifted Ao Xinyan with one hand and moved to the right.

Boom.

A beam of blood-red light cut across the sea. It passed through where Zhang Ruochen had been standing and hit the fire barrier around Dragon Fire Island. A large mass of flames exploded. The shockwaves hit the sea, creating a dozen-meter-high wave that curled backward.

Then an icy voice came from the direction of a Dead Soul Ancient Ship. “Zhang Ruochen, I knew you were going to enter Dragon Fire Island. I’d like to see where you’ll escape to today.”

The Death Knight wore the Ten Saints Blood Armor and had a pair of huge blood wings on his back. He flew out of the ship and rushed toward Dragon Fire Island.

The previous beam of blood-red light had come from him.

Other than him, Saint Yashe also rode Spiritual Power and waves. Each step he made would push the wave before him higher.

The higher the wave became, the stronger the power consolidated.

“How come they’re on the ship too?”

Ao Xinyan paled. She'd witnessed how strong the Death Knight and Saint Yashe were. She naturally knew that she, Blackie, and Zhang Ruochen weren't their match at all.

What could they do?

Zhang Ruochen tossed the door print to Ao Xinyan. "Go open the gate to Dragon Fire Island. I'll stop them."

"Okay."

Ao Xinyan caught the print and immediately rushed to the fire barrier. She knew that with Zhang Ruochen's cultivation, he wouldn't be able to last long. They only had a chance to survive if she quickly opened the gate.

Zhang Ruochen activated the Ten Saints Blood Armor and yelled, "Power of Ten Saints."

Whoosh!

Ten saintly figures rushed out of the armor, surrounding Zhang Ruochen. Each one radiated with an aura that was like a true Saint.

The power of ten Saints were grouped in Zhang Ruochen's arms, combined with his own power. It transformed into two golden palm prints.

This was the seventh palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm—the Dragon Elephant Divine Furnace. The palm force had extreme Yang Masculine power. It was boundless. With the addition of the Power of Ten Saints, even a Xuanhuang Saint might not be able to take it.

"Your abilities have improved this much?" The Death Knight felt ineffable shock. He just felt like Zhang Ruochen was a monster. Only a few days had passed, but his cultivation had improved greatly.

This speed was terrifying. Of course, even if Zhang Ruochen had improved greatly, the Death Knight was still confident in killing him.

"You have the Power of Ten Saints and so do I."

The Death Knight scoffed. He clenched his fists and ten beams of Blood Qi rushed out of the armor, converging at his fists. He punched and the sky exploded as if ripping apart.

Zhang Ruochen's two golden palm prints shattered instantly, but the fist was still there. It rushed toward him.

The sky trembled and Zhang Ruochen disappeared from the spot.

“The Spatial Move again?”

It wasn't the Death Knight's first time fighting with Zhang Ruochen. He instantly realized what tactic Zhang Ruochen had used, so he pulled out a black spear.

“Light of Death God!” he yelled.

Boom!

A ring of blood-red light radiated from the black spear. It expanded quickly, wanting to restrict the space.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the space first. Holding a sword with both hands, he released all his Sword Intent and called out, “Sword Seven.”

More than 3,000 runes emerged on the Abyss Ancient Sword. He activated the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns. The black light that shone from the sword shrouded the entire space.

Whoosh!

Pounding Sword Intent formed thousands of sword images within the black light. It grouped into a sword river, snaking around Zhang Ruochen.

When he stabbed forward, the ringing of the sword could be heard thousands of miles away.

A Sword Saint could shock thousands of miles with one strike.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't a Sword Saint yet, but his full-power strike could actually create such a scene.

Boom.

The Abyss Ancient Sword cut through the sky powerfully, penetrating the Light of Death God.

The Death Knight was shocked. With his cultivation, he wasn't afraid of Zhang Ruochen, but this attack was too amazing. He was forced to retreat instead of taking it.

But after he retreated, Saint Yashe was exposed. Zhang Ruochen's sword kept going, shooting straight at him.

The wave before Saint Yashe was hundreds of feet tall now. Dense electric light was interwoven on the water's surface. Seeing Zhang Ruochen charging, Saint Yashe was still fearless. He laughed loudly. "Good."

Saint Yashe pushed forward with his ancient hands. He produced a wave to devour Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen actually broke through the waves and stabbed Saint Yashe's chest.

"Im...possible..."

Up until his death, Saint Yashe still couldn't believe that Zhang Ruochen could break through his full Spiritual Power attack.

Rip.

Saint Yashe's physical body was so weak. Faced with the sharp Sword Qi, he was instantly ripped into several pieces.

Chapter 1241 - Enter the Island

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The death of Ya She Saint infuriated and shocked the Death Knight.

Ya She Saint could rival saints at Xuanhuang Realm, yet he wasn't able to ward off the attack from Zhang Ruochen.

How powerful that strike was.

Even he might be injured if he confronted that strike directly.

After performing Sword Seven, Zhang Ruochen felt a bit tired. Just as he began condensing holy Qi again, the Death Knight threw the long spear in his hand again, striking towards Zhang Ruochen's chest.

The Death Knight seized this great chance, as Zhang Ruochen didn't have the time to perform spatial move. He had to resist the long spear by himself.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the holy Qi inside him and moved it to his arms. He grabbed the sword handle with one hand and pressed it with the other, trying to resist it.

Hong Long.

The tip of the spear clashed with Abyss Ancient Sword.

It knocked Zhang Ruochen dozens of miles away.

Zhang Ruochen was still injured, even wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor. Almost all his organs were cracked, and half of his body caved.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen had sanctified his body, so he was only injured.

If he were only an ordinary lower-class saint, he would've been annihilated, and his saint soul would've been gone.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could only use his mind power to stay conscious.

“How powerful that strike was. Even with my cultivation, I can't rival him with all my skills. I might only rival him after becoming a mid-class saint.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth, trying to support his broken body.

Only body monks' bodies would be solidified every time their bodies were broken.

“Time to end, Zhang Ruochen!”

The Death Knight didn't give Zhang Ruochen any chance to recover. He threw the long spear again, hitting toward the head of Zhang Ruochen.

Just at this moment, Zhang Ruochen used spatial move again and arrived at the edge of Dragon Fire Island.

Blackie rushed forward and turned into a giant black cat that was more than a hundred feet tall, holding Zhang Ruochen's body and rushing toward Ao Xinyan.

Ao Xinyan also had great pressure. She was holding the door ping, and her arms were shaking. She yelled, “Open, door of flames!”

The fire protective screen that covered Dragon Fire Island started to open.

Blackie, Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan went through the crack and went into Dragon Fire Island.

Hong Long.

Just as they went into Dragon Fire Island, the attack from the Death Knight hit the fire protective screen, which splattered the water and led to ripples.

“I let him run away again!”

The Death Knight couldn't be more indignant, as Zhang Ruochen had escaped again.

Besides, every time after Zhang Ruochen escaped him, he became stronger.

The Death Knight was worried about whether he could suppress him next time.

The more failures you went through, the stronger you got.

Such enemies were the most fearsome ones!

The Death Knight wanted to get to Dragon Fire Island too.

However, all the attacks he made at the fire protective screen bounced away, and he was slightly injured.

The Death Knight stopped making attacks. He had to stay at the periphery of Dragon Fire Island.

He stared at Zhang Ruochen in distance. “You're not going to hide on the island forever. I'll kill you when you come out.”

Zhang Ruochen had already taken a spring pill and supported his seriously wounded body with Ten Saints Blood Armor. He looked pale, but he still smiled calmly. “When I walk out of Dragon Fire Island, you'll be the one who dies.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan and Blackie turned around, walking to the deeper area of Dragon Fire Island.

At the center of Dragon Fire Island.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was standing at the top of the volcano, watching Zhang Ruochen and the Death Knight fight. He looked confused. “Two teams came into Yin and Yang Ocean. Is it the human race, or some savage beast race?”

Mysterious Hedgehog Saint Beast stood to the right of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and said, “That must be the mysterious sword warrior who killed Ye Yun Divine Dragon Emissary and Ye Hong Divine Dragon Emissary. You heard that sword sound, which traveled more than one thousand miles, which means that person's highly proficient in sword mastery. Even if he's not a saint, he's close.”

Xue Zhen Demon had a human body and snake tail. She was standing at the left side of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. She said, “The sword warrior who killed the saint dragon emissaries isn’t some peerless great being. How can he be so proficient in swords?”

“It means that the person is a sword way talent,” Saint Beast Xuanwei said.

“Sword way talent?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon’s eyes gleamed. He said, “Is that Xue Wuye, the human heir who’s ranked fourth on the ‘Half-Saint Rank?’ Or is it Zhang Ruochen?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn’t stay calm anymore.

Both Xue Wuye and Zhang Ruochen were great enemies to the savage beast race. He would have to kill them.

All of a sudden, Saint Beast Xuanwei said, “Someone opened the door of fire and trespassed on Dragon Fire Island.”

“Great. I’ll go kill him now.”

A great sense of hostility gushed out of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and his blood was heated.

Saint Beast Xuanwei said, “It was difficult for that person to kill the two saint dragon emissaries. He’s definitely not some great being. Your highness, you don’t need to fight him yourself. I’ll go catch him with Xue Zhen Demon.”

Xue Zhen Demon smiled seductively and said, “Your highness, the most important thing is to get the Nanling Dragon Fire. As for that mysterious sword warrior, I’ll take care of him with Saint Beast Xuanwei.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon thought for a bit and said, “Okay, I’ll go get the Nanling Dragon Fire now, but I need to warn you that you need to be extra careful if that mysterious sword warrior is Zhang Ruochen.”

Saint Beast Xuanwei and Xue Zhen Demon said, “We understand.”

However, they didn't take what Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said seriously. After all, that Time and Space Descendant had only been a half saint a short while before. No matter how powerful he was, he was just a lower-class saint.

They didn't need to fear a lower-class saint at all.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the other nine saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain jumped down to get the Nanling Dragon Fire.

Saint Beast Xuanwei and Xue Zhen Demon rushed to the east side of Dragon Fire Island, trying to find the creature that had trespassed on Dragon Fire Island.

Zhang Ruochen was severely injured after the fight. He was absorbing the pill Qi from Spring Pill and saying to Blackie, "I must've alerted the saint beast on Dragon Fire Island during the fight against the Death Knight. They'll come for me soon."

"So what? I can kill them with one strike," Blackie said.

Ao Xinyan said, "Every saint beast from Ancestral Dragon Mountain is at least as powerful as you and Zhang Ruochen. Perhaps you can fight against one, but if two attack us at the same time, Zhang Ruochen and I will be killed here."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Give me an hour. When I recover, I'll kill however many saint beasts come for us."

Actually, Blackie was just bluffing. It didn't underestimate the enemies at all. It then took out its saint stone and spirit crystal and buried them underground, starting to set up the formation.

Dragon Fire Island wasn't small. Instead, it was vast with rocks and mountains of all sizes. In some of the areas, rocks had been melted into lakes.

Some terrific creatures were born in some of the hazardous places on Dragon Fire Island.

Saint Beast Xuanwei and Xue Zhen Demon walked forward carefully. If they awakened some of the powerful creatures on Dragon Fire Island, they would also be killed.

Saint Beast Xuanwei had a great sense of smell. It detected the vague human force in the air and said, "They're close."

Xue Zhen Demon looked around and smiled. “If they hide in the dark, I’ll annihilate everything around here using my ancestral weapon.”

Xue Zhen Demon opened her mouth and breathed out a delicate jade mirror.

The jade mirror was originally the size of a nail. As it ascended into the sky, it grew larger and larger. In the end, the jade mirror was like a moon hung in the sky a thousand feet high.

Xue Zhen Demon was the queen of savage beasts from Yuan Kong Mountain. She had become a saint five hundred years ago, and she had great cultivation. The saint might coming from her intimidated Blackie, who was hiding in its formation.

“Do you know who she is, girl?”

Blackie was a bit worried, as it was slightly weaker than Xue Zhen Demon. It could only stall her, but who would fight Saint Beast Xuanwei?

Saint Beast Xuanwei was powerful enough to kill both Ao Xinyan and Zhang Ruochen, who had been severely injured.

Ao Xinyan then told Blackie the identity of Xue Zhen Demon.

Blackie laughed and walked out of the formation. It yelled, “Queen Xue Zhen, put back your ancestral weapon. I’m from Nine Li Cat Race. I mean you no harm.”

Xue Zhen Demon was a bit surprised seeing a cat walk out of the stones. She didn’t use her ancestral weapon and said, “Are you really a saint beast from Nine Li Cat Race? How did you trespass in Yin and Yang Ocean?”

Nine Li Palace was one of the few powers in Savage Barren Territory that could rival Ancestral Dragon Mountain, which was why Xue Zhen Demon didn’t dare underestimate Blackie.

Blackie tried to stall. It sighed. “Let me tell you what’s happening. It’s a long story...”

Saint Beast Xuanwei was suspicious of Blackie’s identity. It interjected, “I smelled human beings, which means there’re human masters around.”

Blackie felt like a failure after his lie was exposed this soon. It remained calm and said, "You're right. I've captured two human beings. I was going to eat them by myself, but now that you've discovered them, I'll share them with you."

Saint Beast Xuanwei and Xue Zhen Demon had lived almost a thousand years. They would in no way believe what Blackie said.

"Kill it."

They gave each other a look, and they attacked Blackie at the same time, trying to suppress it.

Chapter 1242 - Saint King Dragon Pearl

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blackie was so angry that it wanted to curse. However, it wasn't afraid when faced with these two saintly beasts. The cultivations of Saint Beast Xuanwei and Demoness Xuezhen weren't enough to kill it.

“Fighting Fire God Formation.”

Holy Qi flooded out of its four paws and dug into the ground. The Holy Qi traveled underground, rushing into the 36 saintly stones and 743 spiritual crystals buried underneath.

Kaboom!

Red runes appeared on the ground. Interwoven like spider webs, they formed a 300-foot-wide formation.

The Fighting Fire God Formation was a grade seven attack formation. If it was fully set up, it could wrap around the entire Dragon Fire Island. Even Heaven Pass Realm Saints could be forced away with this formation.

Time was too tight, so Blackie only set up a corner of the formation. Of course, Fire Dragon Island's geographical location was special. It was in the Yang center of the Yin Yang Sea and filled with fire Spiritual Qi. It complemented the Fighting Fire God Formation. Even a corner of the formation had boundless power.

Sizzle, sizzle.

The land within 300 feet in radius turned into a zone of fire. Strands of fire formed into a 120-foot-tall giant in the center of

the formation. It was clad in armor and held a three-foot-wide sword. It was like the god of fire.

The giant wielded the sword, shattering the attacks from the Saint Beast Xuanwei and Demoness Xuezhen. Then it strode forward, charging at them.

“It can set up such an advanced formation. What a powerful cat.”

The Saint Beast Xuanwei took a dark wooden scepter from his left eye. The scepter was like a three-foot-long root. It radiated with powerful water and wood elemental Qi.

As he poured his Spiritual Power into the scepter, the water and wood elemental powers grew thicker. He stuck the scepter into the dirt. Branches and leaves grew out. It transformed into a towering saintly tree.

Water Qi in the air formed a celestial river. It flew out from the saintly tree’s leaves and attacked the fire giant.

Kaboom.

The powers of water and fire clashed violently.

The firelight from the Fighting Fire God Formation dimmed. It was about to be extinguished by the tumbling water Qi.

“This old guy’s Spiritual Power is truly strong.”

Blackie activated all its Spiritual Power and Holy Qi, sending them underground. It continued to maintain the formation and fight against the Saint Beast Xuanwei.

“This fat cat is yours. I’ll go look for the hiding human.” The Demoness Xuezhen used a jade mirror to lead her. She ripped open a hole and rushed out of the formation.

Holding the jade mirror, she shone it in all directions and quickly found a place with abnormal Spiritual Qi waves.

She pursed her red lips and chuckled with a gentle voice. “You think that I won’t be able to find you in an invisibility formation?”

She pointed forward with a jade-like finger.

Whoosh!

White light flew out, shattering the invisibility formation. Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan were instantly exposed.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting cross-legged on a huge rock, trying his best to heal. Ao Xinyan stood before him. She held a saint sword and glared at the Demoness Xuezhen, battle intent surging.

Demoness Xuezhen could feel the Divine Dragon aura on Ao Xinyan. Guessing her identity, the Demoness smiled. "It's Princess Yan of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan."

Then the Demoness looked at Zhang Ruochen. Light flashed past her pretty eyes and she murmured, "What a handsome and beautiful man. It seems like the princess wasn't taken forcefully but went with him willingly, right?"

"So what?"

Ao Xinyan was very indignant. Hundreds of Sword Qi beams were created automatically. They hovered around her, ready to attack at any moment.

"Ha! Princess, be careful. Your mistake might bring catastrophe to your entire clan."

The Demoness' snake tails waved lightly in various arcs. She crept closer to Ao Xinyan and Zhang Ruochen. Smiling, she said, "Your body is very strong and even fused a divine dragon bone. If you're willing to submit to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, you'll definitely become a member of the upper level of the Ancient Dragon Mountain one day. Your clan will also benefit from it. Why must you choose a human and go on a suicidal route?"

"The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon only wants my Divine Dragon blood," Ao Xinyan said. "He won't truly help my clan. Do you think I'm a three-year-old girl?"

"You think you can protect your blood by not submitting? With your cultivation, you can only be nourishment for the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, helping him become an unstoppable figure."

The Demoness swatted her tail, shattering the hundreds of beams of Sword Qi. It whipped Ao Xinyan. Like hitting a scarecrow, she flew back and crashed against the metal-like stone wall with a thud.

Ao Xinyan felt like her bones were all broken. She collapsed onto the ground, unable to stand up. She could only watch as the Demoness approached Zhang Ruochen.

“No, don’t...”

Ao Xinyan’s eyes were bloodshot. Clenching her white teeth, she spat out a dragon pearl and attacked the Demoness.

This was the dragon pearl that a Saint King ancestor of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan had cultivated. It was a true treasure.

Ao Xinyan was able to cultivate so quickly because she’d been refining the Dragon Qi within this pearl.

The Demoness was surprised. She quickly reached out two slender arms and drew a circle. She formed hundreds of vortex-like Qi to dissolve the dragon pearl’s power.

The next moment, she reached out and grabbed the pearl. Sensing the horrifying Dragon Qi within it, the Demoness was pleasantly surprised. Her hands started shaking uncontrollably.

The Demoness Xuezheng had cultivated for close to 1,000 years but had only reached the Xuanhuang Realm. It was fortunate that she was a beast and her lifespan was far longer than a human’s. Otherwise, she would’ve died long ago.

Of course, if a savage beast never improved, they would die from old age too.

Great, she thought. If I refine this dragon pearl, my cultivation will definitely reach the Heaven Pass Realm. I might even become a true Saint.

The higher one’s cultivation was, the longer their lifespan. Both Heaven Pass Saints and True Saints were existences that the Demoness looked up to. She’d never thought that she could reach that level too.

Receiving the Saint King dragon pearl gave her a bit of hope. She quickly collected the pearl and glanced at Ao Xinyan.

“This pearl is indeed a great treasure, but it’s a pity that your cultivation is too low. You can’t hurt me at all.”

Losing the dragon pearl, Ao Xinyan grew even weaker. There wasn’t any color in her face. “As long as you let him go,” she whispered. “I’ll give you the dragon pearl and submit to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.”

“Too late!” the Demoness exclaimed. “You didn’t want it when I offered it earlier. Now, you want to negotiate. Who do you think you are?”

She was much happier after getting the dragon pearl and grew cocky too.

“It’s easy to get the Divine Dragon blood in you. I just have to imprison you and feed you like feeding a dog. When you complete your True Dragon Body, I’ll naturally be able to keep extracting blood from you. That’s the consequence for betraying the Ancient Dragon Mountain! Hmph!”

The Demoness stopped talking to Ao Xinyan. She swooped toward Zhang Ruochen as a streak of white light and pointed at her forehead.

Rustle.

A thick saintly vine suddenly shot out of Zhang Ruochen and whipped toward the Demoness. The vine was covered in electricity.

The Demoness never would’ve imagined that a heavily injured human would have this hidden card. Taken by surprise, she was sent flying backward.

She quickly steadied herself. When she landed, she looked cautiously at the vine growing out of the man. The power that the vine had unleashed was comparable to a Xuanhuang Realm’s full-power strike.

“The legendary Holy Carnivorous Flower?”

The Demoness’ expression changed. How could someone in the Saint Realm not have heard of the Holy Carnivorous

Flower before? Even some Ancient Taigu Remains had to be careful when facing it.

A cold feminine voice rang out of the flower at the top of the vine. “Since you know I’m the Holy Carnivorous Flower, why haven’t you fled yet?”

Looking up from the ground, one could vaguely make out a beautiful figure standing at the center of the flower. Perhaps because the flower had fused with Empress Moran’s saint soul, the figure looked identical to her. Even the seductive aura was similar.

However, it was only a shadow and not a tangible body.

The Demoness shook her sleeves and chuckled. “So what if you’re the Holy Carnivorous Flower? You’re only in the mid-Saint Realm. Why would I fear you?”

“What if I also join?”

Sitting on the huge rock, Zhang Ruochen suddenly opened his black eyes and stared coldly at Demoness Xuezhèn.

The Demoness knew that his cultivation wasn’t very strong, but seeing those eyes, her heart still jumped. She felt danger.

“Who are you?” she asked.

Zhang Ruochen stood up slowly with a proud aura. “Zhang Ruochen,” he said.

The nervous expression on Demoness Xuezhèn’s face disappeared. Instead, she smiled mesmerizingly. There was a cruel color to her smile too. “That’s great! If I kill you, I’ll definitely have accomplished something great.”

“It was such a stupid decision for the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon to send you after me.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Reaching out, he said, “Give the dragon pearl to me, and I might give you a painless death. Otherwise, you can only be nourishment for the Holy Carnivorous Flower. It’ll suck all your Blood Qi and Holy Qi first. And then you can die slowly.”

Hearing this, the beautiful figure standing in the flower let out a laugh like windchimes. “Thank you, master, for your

reward.”

Chapter 1243 - Xuanhuang Qi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Zhang Ruochen, do you really think you can intimidate a saint at Xuanhuang Realm as a lower-class saint? You’re being a joke.”

Demoness Xue Zhen wasn’t arrogant, but she didn’t believe that a lower-class saint could rival her.

Few could fight those who were one level higher than them at the state of saint.

Those who could fight saints that were two levels superior were some incredible creatures like Carnivorous Holy Flower and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and some of the very few Taigu remains.

She had never heard of anyone who could fight saints three levels superior to them.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to waste time on talking. He murmured, “Abyss.”

Hua La.

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out and floated above Zhang Ruochen.

Holy Qi gushed out of the one-hundred and forty-four apertures of Zhang Ruochen’s body, turning into one-hundred and forty-four airflows, filling the sword.

Inscriptions emerged on the surface of the black sword. One thousand, two thousand and three thousand...

There were more than six thousand inscriptions on the Abyss Ancient Sword. It was a top-tier thousand-pattern saint weapon.

Zhang Ruochen could only utilize four thousand inscriptions with his cultivation. He couldn't wield the true power of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Hong Long Long.

Thousand-patterns destruction gushed out of the Abyss Ancient Sword. All of a sudden, tens of thousands of sword Qi were formed in the sky and land.

“Four thousand inscriptions... No wonder you dare challenge me. You have such an impressive saint weapon.”

Demoness Xue Zhen's turned stiff, as she wasn't as positive as before.

It was difficult for even upper-class saints to trigger four thousand inscriptions at the same time, yet Zhang Ruochen was able to do so as a lower-class saint.

Which meant he was indeed exceptional.

Demoness Xue Zhen knew that she couldn't underestimate Zhang Ruochen. She raised her hand, and Yu Jing Saint Mirror flew up from her palm, getting larger and larger as if it were a moon hanging above everyone's head.

“Zhang Ruochen, you could barely trigger the four thousand inscriptions, could you? Do you know what this is?”

Demoness Xue Zhen held Yu Jing Saint Mirror with no effort, yet the savage barren ancient forces from the mirror were more powerful than the thousand-pattern destruction from the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen had indeed used all his power to trigger the four thousand inscriptions on the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen said, “What do you have to be proud of? The only edge you have is Xuanhuang Qi.”

“It seems you've never fought a creature at Xuanhuang Realm. You have no idea how forceful Xuanhuang Qi is.” Demoness

Xue Zhen gave a snort a contempt.

When a saint reached Xuanhuang Realm, their holy Qi would turn into Xuanhuang Qi.

Xuan was the sky, and Huang was the land.

The so-called Xuanhuang Qi was Qi of sky and land. It was holy Qi, but it was purer.

Even a trace of Xuanhuang Qi was more powerful than all the holy Qi in a lower-class saint combined.

Besides, the thousand-patterns saint weapons wielded by Xuanhuang Qi were more forceful.

Which was why the gap between upper-class saints and saints at Xuanhuang Realm was enormous. It was difficult for an upper-class saint to fight a Xuanhuang saint, which was why Demoness Xue Zhen didn't even consider Zhang Ruochen to be her equal.

Little did she know that Zhang Ruochen had both the Abyss Ancient Sword and Ten Saints Blood Armor. He could use the power of ten saints to rival a Xuanhuang saint.

Demoness Xue Zhen pointed forward, and a trace of Xuanhuang Qi gushed out of her finger, filling Yu Jing Saint Mirror.

The savage barren forces coming from Yu Jing Saint Mirror became stronger. They crushed toward Zhang Ruochen and crushed all the sword Qi around him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't use spatial move to dodge it. Instead, he wanted to ward off that attack directly to see how powerful a Xuanhuang saint beast was.

Hua.

the Abyss Ancient Sword flew forward and clashed with Yu Jing Saint Mirror, making a deafening metal sound.

Yu Jing Saint Mirror dissipated the thousand-patterns destruction force from the Abyss Ancient Sword, knocking the sword down.

The barren savage destruction force formed a savage barren world where there were dozens of ancient mountains and tens of thousands of phantoms of savage beasts, which tried to annihilate Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to defend himself against that force.

He had to activate Ten-saints Blood Armor to cover his body. He yelled, "Power of ten saints, Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look."

Ten saint shadows rushed out of the armor and stood in ten different directions around Zhang Ruochen.

At the center of the ten saint shadows was a human being which was as large as a mountain. He stood up like a God.

The Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look and the power of ten saints were combined and formed a palm print, clashing with Yu Jing Saint Mirror, diving.

Hong Long.

Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look and Ten Saints Phantom were all crushed, turning into eleven saint Qi clouds.

Zhang Ruochen moved a hundred feet back, and he barely balanced himself, ending up right beside Ao Xinyan.

"I've underestimated the power of a Xuanhuang saint. I've used all the forces, yet I still failed to ward it off."

Zhang Ruochen now had a new understanding of the power of Xuanhuang saints.

"He survived the first strike of Yu Jing Saint Mirror. That person is strong enough to rival some weak Xuanhuang creatures."

Although Demoness Xue Zhen was surprised, she was still confident in herself. She said, "That was just the first force of Yu Jing Saint Mirror, yet you could barely resist it. The second force will put you in despair."

Yu Jing Saint Mirror flew up again, and it covered half of the sky like a gleaming jade plate.

A larger savage barren world showed up under the jade plate. There were spectacular mountains and ferocious savage beasts. There were also rivers, clouds, and ancient trees. The savage barren ancient force only grew stronger.

Saint Beast Xuanwei looked to the savage barren world floating in the sky and smiled. "Demoness Xue Zhen has triggered the most profound power of Yu Jing Saint Mirror. Even the ordinary Xuanhuang saints will be annihilated, not to mention Zhang Ruochen."

Zhang Ruochen was tiny like an ant when he was standing under the savage barren world.

"So what you're at a higher level? That doesn't represent all the power of a monk."

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He pointed at the space and murmured, "Break."

Hong Long.

The space around that savage barren world crumbled, and seven cracks that were dozens of miles long tore everything apart.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen vanished from where he stood and showed up behind Demoness Xue Zhen, slashing toward her.

Demoness Xue Zhen sensed the sword Qi behind her. She immediately turned around, mobilized Xuanhuang Qi inside her body, concentrated it into the tip of her finger and pointed forward.

"Morning Sword."

Zhang Ruochen performed one of the moves from the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique.

The sword light coming out of the sword was like the rising sun of the morning.

The flow of time became incredibly slow around the morning sword.

Just as the Demoness pointed her finger forward, the tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword clashed with her finger.

Pu Chi.

The finger and the palm at the end of the arm of Demoness Xue Zhen turned into a cluster of blood-red mist.

Her red arm disappeared.

The beautiful face of Demoness Xue Zhen twisted. She opened her mouth wide and yelled, sticking out her snake tongue.

After a short while, that beautiful human body disappeared, and instead, a python that was more than two thousand feet long showed up, winding around a mountain.

Yu Jing Saint Mirror floated above its head, gleaming.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back, stepping on the purple mud and walking forward. "Do you still think I'm not your match? Am I still a joke to you?"

The python opened its mouth wide and said, "You only hurt me because of the power of space and time, which is not your real power. You're still far inferior to me."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Manipulating time and space is a part of my real power."

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking to Demoness Xue Zhen. He stepped forward and transported himself to above the huge python, slapping down.

Pa!

The head of the python was wounded. It yelled in agony.

The python rushed forward, crushing mountain after mountain.

Meanwhile, it was still trying to operate Yu Jing Saint Mirror to kill Zhang Ruochen with its savage barren ancient forces.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to confront Yu Jing Saint Mirror directly. He used spatial move to dodge it, and then, he wielded his the Abyss Ancient Sword to form space cracks.

Hong Long Long.

After an hour of fighting, the huge python was severely injured and kept bleeding. It even lost a part of its tail.

The huge python turned back into a human shape, stopped fighting Zhang Ruochen and rushed toward the volcano at the center of the island.

Zhang Ruochen was standing at the top of a mountain, looking at Demoness Xue Zhen run. He said, "Don't you think it's too late to run away now? Carnivorous Holy Flower, attack."

A vine that was as thick as a bucket surged and wound around Demoness Xue Zhen who was trying to fly away like a blue dragon.

Demoness Xue Zhen yelled while she struggled.

She shifted between her human body and her python form, struggling to get out. She didn't want to become nutrients to Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Gradually, it became quiet. A vine was stuck into the body of the giant python, sucking away the blood Qi and holy Qi.

The python became lifeless.

Demoness Xue Zhen used to be a queen in the Savage Barren Secret Region, ruling over millions of savage beasts, yet she was still killed on Dragon Fire Mountain, becoming the nutrients of Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Zhang Ruochen suppressed Yu Jing Saint Mirror. He landed and walked to the huge python, looking at the snake eyes that were as large as buckets without any mercy.

Zhang Ruochen took the dragon marble out and walked to Ao Xinyan.

Chapter 1244 - The Third Dead Soul Ancient Ship

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A dragon pearl of the Saint King level was definitely a priceless and rare treasure. Ao Xinyan had spat out the dragon pearl without hesitation to save Zhang Ruochen and delay the Demoness Xuezhen.

Zhang Ruochen truly owed her.

Swallowing the dragon pearl again, Ao Xinyan's face had a ruddy color again. Crystal-like spots of light appeared on her skin.

She used a technique and beams of Dragon Qi whooshed through her meridians, healing her internal injuries.

Zhang Ruochen transformed into a blur and came to the outside of the Fighting Fire God Formation. One hand was behind his back. The other held the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Inside the formation, the Saint Beast Xuanwei saw the Demoness Xuezhen get killed. He was very frightened and had wanted to escape. However, 36 fiery chains appeared in the formation. It locked down the 300-foot-wide land, not giving him any chance to escape.

Blackie stood up and laughed cockily. "Weren't you arrogant earlier in going up against me? How come you want to escape now? Stay and I'll give you a chance for a fair fight."

Joy flashed deep within Saint Beast Xuanwei's eyes. "You said it. A fair fight where outsiders can't get involved."

"Of course. I keep my word."

If Zhang Ruochen and Blackie worked together, Saint Beast Xuanwei would definitely die today. At most, he could set off his saint heart and have them die together.

However, he was still confident in dealing with a fat cat.

If he could kill the cat first, then he could face Zhang Ruochen more easily.

Roar!

Saint Beast Xuanwei roared and his human figure exploded. He transformed into a 120-foot-tall, 340-foot-long black porcupine. He was covered in sharp thorns. Each thorn was like a sharp spear.

“Divine Porcupine.”

Saint Beast Xuanwei released all his Spiritual Power, condensing above all 18,000 thorns. The next moment, 3,000 thorns flew out of his body and toward Blackie in a black cloud.

Just as Saint Beast Xuanwei used this attack, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move. He charged into the Fighting Fire God Formation, appearing above the beast.

“Wu Sword.” Zhang Ruochen formed a circle with his arms. The Abyss Ancient Sword flew above their heads, shining with brilliant light like a blazing noon sun.

Whoosh!

A 100-foot-long Sword Qi image appeared on the surface of the Abyss Ancient Sword. It stabbed downward with the ancient sword.

Poof.

The huge Sword Qi image penetrated Saint Beast Xuanwei’s body, nailing him to the ground. Great amounts of saintly blood flowed out of the wound in his abdomen. It dyed the entire Fighting Fire God Formation red.

“You said...fair fight...not trustworthy at...all...”

The Saint Beast Xuanwei was furious. He activated all his Spiritual Power, wanting to control the Abyss Ancient Sword

and yank it out so he could escape.

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward. A sword image formed by sword intent flew out of his finger and stabbed through Saint Beast Xuanwei's heart.

The beast's Spiritual Power instantly grew chaotic. He could no longer consolidate any power. The victor was clear now.

Blackie stopped operating the Fighting Fire God Formation and strode over lazily. Standing before Saint Beast Xuanwei, it laughed.

"I agreed to a fair fight, so I'll definitely fighting fairly. But if Zhang Ruochen wants to kill you, I can't do anything about it."

Roar!

Saint Beast Xuanwei let out another angry roar. Gradually, his vitality ran dry and he turned into a corpse.

"I'm smart, right? I used the fair fight to numb him so he didn't set off his saint heart and kill us all. Then you attacked suddenly, taking him by surprise, haha."

Blackie felt proud, thinking that it had used its intelligence to defeat the opponent.

Zhang Ruochen opened his hand and reached forward. The huge sword image on the surface of the Abyss Ancient Sword retracted into the blade. It flew back into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

"You think Saint Beast Xuanwei was really fooled by you?" Zhang Ruochen asked indifferently. "You think it really wasn't prepared? It's only because the time sword technique changed the flow of time. The beast's reaction speed became extremely slow, so it couldn't stop the Abyss Ancient Sword, and it died."

Blackie stopped smiling and glared. "You're just jealous that I'm smarter than you."

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel like arguing with it. He closed his eyes and thought back through the entire fight. He summarized his mistakes so he wouldn't do the same in the next battle.

Every battle between equal matches was an experience to grow from.

Right now, his most powerful attack wasn't Sword Qi, the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm, or the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

It was the attack after combining the Spatial Move and time sword technique. He first used the Spatial Move to approach the opponent. Then he used the time sword technique to kill the enemy with one strike.

It was just one word: fast.

Speed was the only technique that couldn't be countered.

Both the Spatial Move and time sword technique made Zhang Ruochen's attacks extremely fast and unpredictable.

In the Xuanhuang Realm, there weren't many beings who could counter this technique of his. As for Chedi Realm Saints, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to beat them at all. The cultivation difference was too large. He couldn't win with just speed.

From now on, I won't use this method unless I can kill them with one strike, Zhang Ruochen thought. If I use it too often, the enemy will figure out a way around it. After all, those who can reach the Saint Realm can't be idiots.

In the other direction, the Holy Carnivorous Flower had already sucked the snake's Blood Qi, Holy Qi, and saintly source dry. The vine had thickened more. The veins of each leaf were like bolts of lightning.

The flower at the top was the size of a stone mill. It shone with red light. The petals seemed to have been carved out of blood crystals. They were beautiful but radiated with a dangerous aura.

A black-haired beauty stood in the center. She had dark eyebrows, red lips, and white teeth. There were flirtatious ripples in her eyes. She was indescribably mesmerizing. However, it was only a shadow and not a body of flesh and blood.

After the Holy Carnivorous Flower bloomed for the first time, the fruit was her shadow. The second time would be her physical body.

This meant that if the Holy Carnivorous Flower wanted to have a physical body, it must wait until the second fruit. With its current cultivation, its flower hadn't even bloomed completely. There was still a long way to go before forming a fruit.

Zhang Ruochen could sense clearly that its cultivation had improved greatly after absorbing the Demoness Xuezhen. It may soon break through an important obstacle.

Maybe it will soon enter the upper-level Saint Realm? Zhang Ruochen was curious.

Rustle, rustle.

The flower's roots spread forward and stabbed into Saint Beast Xuanwei. It turned the beast into nutrients and continued to absorb it. It seemed to really be trying to break into the next level.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop it. With his current cultivation, he was confident in repressing the flower even if it reached the upper Saint Realm.

On the other hand, if it became an upper-level Saint, its combat ability would definitely be strong. It could be a great help to Zhang Ruochen.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was surrounded by strong cultivators. Zhang Ruochen and Blackie couldn't fight them alone. If they could have the Holy Carnivorous Flower and it was in the upper Saint Realm, Zhang Ruochen would be more confident about the upcoming battles.

He suddenly sensed something and furrowed his brows.

Whoosh!

Transforming into white light, he flew to the top of the 3,000-meter-tall mountain and looked southward. The southern sea shone with gold light. The sea and skies all turned golden.

A golden Dead Soul Ancient Ship was cruising out of the golden clouds. It was like a golden dragon floating in the water. It was hundreds of miles long, as large as a mountain range.

Slowly, it approached and stopped at the south side of the island. Twenty to thirty specks of red light flew off of it, landing outside the island. Each spot of light was a human with blood wings. They radiated with thick Saintly Way auras.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes grew serious. "How come a large group of Immortal Vampire Saints have come to the Yin Yang Sea too?" he murmured to himself.

These people with blood wings were Immortal Vampire Saints. Some of them had auras similar to the Death Knight. It was possible that countless more Death Knights had come to the Yin Yang Sea.

Blackie and Ao Xinyan also came to the mountaintop. "The Immortal Pavilion could calculate that you came to the Yin Yang Sea. They'll also figure out that the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon has come. It can't be a coincidence that the most powerful young human and beast entered the Yin Yang Sea together. They'll suspect something."

"This means that the Immortal Pavilion sent a large group of Saints here also to search for the Dragon Sun Moon Mix?"

Standing to the side, Ao Xinyan was shocked. She finally learned the true reason why Zhang Ruochen entered the Yin Yang Sea. He was looking for the Divine Dragons' most powerful weapon.

The Dragon Sun Moon Mix.

If this divine weapon was revealed, it would definitely change the entire situation of Kunlun's Field. Did the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon have the same goal as them?

"They might not know you're looking for it," Blackie said. "But they definitely know there's a great treasure in the Yin Yang Sea. Otherwise, you and the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wouldn't risk so much to break into here."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “My every movement can stir up a storm. Am I at that level now?”

Chapter 1245 - Manlong

Dragon Lord

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ao Xinyan stared at the being in front of her, pouted and said, “There’re countless talents in this era, yet few who’re at your level can rival you. You’re the top human talent in Kunlun’s Field in the latest hundred years. This is your era, and you represent the center of this era. Everything you do draws attention from all the powers.”

Ao Xinyan exaggerated a bit, but what she said made sense.

Everyone had different fate Qi. Without a great fate Qi, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have accomplished as he had now, nor would he become the best among the youngsters.

Even if the human beings and savage beasts around him could have great fate Qi and obtain far greater advantages than other creatures.

It was fair to say that he represented the center of fate Qi in this era.

Zhang Ruochen and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were two creatures with great fate Qi. The entire Kunlun’s Field was alerted when they entered Yin and Yang Ocean at the same time.

“Yi!”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked to the west. He squinted his eyes and said, “What’s happening? Are there any more powers sending great beings to Yin and Yang Ocean?”

Waves three hundred feet tall started to tumble on the ocean to the west of Dragon Fire Path.

White mist gushed out from the back of the waves, approaching Dragon Fire Island.

Gradually, a white ancient ghost boat emerged among the fog.

Although he was far from the boat, Zhang Ruochen still used his heavenly eyes to see the couple of people he knew on the ancient boat. Chi Wansui, Wan Huayu, Bu Qianfan, Sui Han...

They were all the top rising stars in the imperial government over the last dozens of years. They all had a great power backing them.

“The people from the imperial government also entered Yin and Yang Ocean,” Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Ao Xinyan was dazed. She said, “Did someone expose your tracks?”

“Impossible.”

Zhang Ruochen negated Ao Xinyan’s assumption.

Only Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo knew that he was going to Yin and Yang Ocean, aside from Blackie, to find the Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower and ingredients of Six Saints to the Sky Wine.

There was no way that Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo had told on him to the imperial government. There must be another reason.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If the Immortal Temple can figure out where I am, the Earth God Temple might also be able to do so.”

The Earth God Temple admitted countless mind power monks. They had the power to change everything. It was mysterious, powerful, and it was independent of the six ministries of the imperial government. They answered only to the empress.

It was said that three hundred years ago, the temple leader ‘Living Pusa’ talked about Taoism with Wang Shiqi for nine days.

Wang Shiqi couldn't help praising him. He thought that Living Pusa was the likeliest to be a mind power supreme saint after Emperor Buddha and Emperor Wen.

Now, after three hundred years, it was probable that the Living Pusa had become a mind power supreme saint, and it was possible that the imperial government knew that Zhang Ruochen had entered Yin and Yang Ocean.

“The young saints from the immortal vampire race and the imperial government have arrived. Perhaps there'll be more young saints entering Yin and Yang Ocean. We need to hurry,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Hong Long.

Right after Zhang Ruochen finished talking, a crack showed up in the south and the west of Dragon Fire Island.

The saints from the immortal vampire race and the imperial government flew into the island through the cracks like light spots.

Apparently, they all came prepared as they carried their stamps.

Holy Carnivorous Flower sucked Saint Beast Xuanwei dry at the mountainside.

The cultivation of Holy Carnivorous Flower surged. It had exceptional force, yet it wasn't an upper-class saint yet.

“I've refined three saint sources and bodies of two saint beasts, yet I still haven't made a breakthrough.” Carnivorous Holy Flower was very disappointed.

That beautiful phantom in the flower stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Master, please give me another saint source. I'll definitely make a breakthrough.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “It isn't because you don't have enough nutrients that you can't become an upper-class saint, but the nutrients you absorbed are not pure enough. I'll take a Nanling Dragon Fire to refine the holy Qi inside your body, then you can make your breakthrough.”

Zhang Ruochen put Carnivorous Holy Flower back to his body and performed great spatial move. He took Blackie and Ao Xinyan to cross the space, jumping to the peak of the volcano at the center of the island.

The volcano was more than twenty thousand feet tall. It pierced through the clouds, and it was circular. There was black smoke coming out of the volcano.

The temperature above the volcano was ridiculously high.

Zhang Ruochen shot Ao Xinyan a glance and said, "You haven't become a saint yet. Don't jump down. Wait for me here."

"No. I have the dragon marble to protect myself. I won't be burnt to death even if I'm inside the volcano."

Ao Xinyan looked firm and said, "I must go retrieve Nanling Dragon Fire. I need that to refine my body. After I've completed my true dragon body, I can have the power of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon."

Zhang Ruochen gave her a deep look as he didn't want to beat her down.

After all, with Ao Xinyan's potential and conviction, she might be able to fight Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon after she gained her true dragon body.

"Okay. Let's go down together."

Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan jumped down into the volcano.

Blackie didn't jump down there. Instead, it went to the mountainside and started to craft the formation inscriptions, preparing for the upcoming fight.

Dragon Fire Island was the sun eye of Yin and Yang Ocean.

And the volcano was at the center of the sun eye. Only saints were able to resist the temperature inside the volcano.

Zhang Ruochen was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, and he activated seventy-two layers of holy light and saint soul domain, rushing toward the underground.

Inside the volcano, it was like a melting pot of sky and land, filled with red lava and burning holy fire, which could melt everything in the world.

The deeper they went, the hotter they felt.

Ao Xinyan could barely go down after five thousand feet. She looked pained, but she still tried to follow Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, "You don't need to get to the bottom. You can stay here, and perhaps you can find a Nanling Dragon Fire."

Nanling Dragon Fire was in the lava. They had a higher chance if they went deeper.

It was almost impossible to find Nanling Dragon Fire where Ao Xinyan was.

Ao Xinyan knew that she couldn't get to the bottom with her cultivation. She said, "I'll stay here to try to get to second-trial pre-saint."

Ao Xinyan found somewhere well-concealed. If she could make a breakthrough, it would be worth it.

Zhang Ruochen went deeper, nine thousand feet, ten thousand feet, eleven thousand feet...

When Zhang Ruochen got to eleven thousand feet below the ground, he was alerted. He sensed a danger coming and wielded his Abyss Ancient Sword.

A giant blue axe that was more than thirty feet long was wielded, going through the lava.

The axe was several times larger than the body of Zhang Ruochen, which had the power to crush mountains.

Hong!

The axe clashed with Abyss Ancient Sword, making a deafening sound.

Zhang Ruochen bounced up around three hundred feet before he could balance himself again.

He felt sore in his arm, and he could barely hold the sword in his hand.

Ao!

A deafening sound was transmitted from below.

A sole-armed giant that was more than fifty feet tall carried a giant axe and broke through the crimson lava, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

There were dragon scales the size of a palm all over the sole-armed giant, emanating traces of Dragon Qi.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the sole-armed giant with his heavenly eyes. He realized that it wasn't a real human being, but a savage dragon.

Hong Long.

Zhang Ruochen clashed with the sole-armed giant again, and he bounced more than two hundred feet away, and his arm only got worse.

His body was already sanctified, yet he still wasn't its match.

"No wonder it's a savage dragon. It has incomparable strength and a sturdy body."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized holy Qi and operated the meridians and saintly meridians in his body, and that pain went away immediately.

"I am the lord of the savage dragon race, Xin Tong. It's already impressive that your weak human body could take two strikes from my axe," the sole-armed giant said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "So, you're the lord of the Savage beast race. You're powerful indeed, stronger than Demoness Xue Zhen."

The lord of the savage beast race, Xin Tong, was one of the most powerful young saint beasts cultivated by Ancestral Dragon Mountain. It had also followed Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon into Yin and Yang Ocean this time.

Being called a lord meant that Xin Tong had the purest royal bloodline of the savage beast race, making him much stronger

than regular savage beasts.

“If I can reach Xuanhuang realm, I can kill Demoness Xue Zhen with one strike. Are you trying to insult me by comparing her to me?” Manlong Dragon Lord yelled.

Manlong Dragon Lord was only an upper-class saint, yet it was still stronger than Demoness Xue Zhen.

Suddenly, Manlong Dragon Lord thought of something, and it said with surprise, “Demoness Xue Zhen and Saint Beast Xuanwei are both outside. How did you get in here?”

“I killed them both with my sword.” Zhang Ruochen said.

“You’re that mysterious human sword warrior?” Manlong Dragon Lord asked.

Manlong Dragon Lord’s eyes popped.

It would be difficult even for Manlong Dragon Lord to fight them if Demoness Xue Zhen and Saint Beast Xuanwei teamed up, yet the human being in front of him was able to kill them both?

Manlong Dragon Lord didn’t believe that this person could be that powerful. He said, “Nonsense. You can’t even defeat either of them. How did you kill them both?”

“It isn’t important whether you believe it or not.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking to Manlong Dragon Lord. He chanted, “Carnivorous Holy Flower.”

Carnivorous Holy Flower gushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s back, and there was lightning flowing on the vines.

Carnivorous Holy Flower splashed the vines, hitting the waist of Manlong Dragon Lord, knocking him away.

Chapter 1246 - Practicing Physical Body

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Right now, the Holy Carnivorous Flower's abilities were similar to a Saint in the Xuanhuang Realm. Zhang Ruochen wasn't its match without using time or spatial power.

The Manlong Dragon Lord was indeed powerful. But compared to the Holy Carnivorous Flower, it was still a bit weak and couldn't take the attacks.

Zhang Ruochen nodded with satisfaction. He touched the flower's leaves and praised, "The Manlong Dragon Lord is extremely strong. Even if I attack with all my might, I still may not defeat him, but you could send him flying with one strike. Right now, you truly are a great help to me. Not bad."

A gentle laugh came from the flower. "Even if I surpass the Xuanhuang Realm and reach the Chedi Realm, I'll still listen to my master," it simpered. "No matter how strong I become, I'm only part of your abilities."

With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, even if the Holy Carnivorous Flower could counter Heaven Pass Realm Saints, it still had to be obedient.

However, if it became a True Saint, then it could fight back against Zhang Ruochen. It could escape from his control and become an independent and aggressive plant.

Of course, when the flower reached the True Saint Realm, Zhang Ruochen would have improved as well. He could still repress the Holy Carnivorous Flower.

Roar!

An angry roar sounded once again. The Manlong Dragon Lord rushed out of the red lava. Muscles bulged all over, filled with explosive strength. He waved the huge dark axe, bringing it down on Zhang Ruochen again.

The 72 levels of saintly light on Zhang Ruochen forced the rolling lava hundreds of feet away. It formed a spherical space.

He stood in the center of the light, unmoved when facing the Manlong Dragon Lord's battle axe. He was as steady as a mountain.

Whoosh!

The Holy Carnivorous Flower flew out again. It wrapped around Zhang Ruochen like a thick electric dragon. An ear-piercing scream sounded immediately after. The flower's vine flew out, hiding the axe's side, forming a powerful shockwave.

The Manlong Dragon Lord felt that he couldn't control the axe anymore. His arm moved involuntarily to the right. The huge axe's blade cut an arc in the air, cutting across the 72 layers of saintly light. When it hit the lava, it split in half, creating an opening hundreds of meters long.

As the axe's Qi dissipated, the wide opening closed as well.

"It's just a vine, but its power is actually so significant."

Manlong Dragon Lord was shocked.

The first time he was sent flying, he could've thought that he'd underestimated the enemy and was caught by surprise. But the vine still broke through his attack the second time.

This meant that the vine truly was able to combat him. It might even be a bit stronger than him.

"No, how can a regular plant be so strong? Unless it's the... Holy Carnivorous Flower..."

The Manlong Dragon Lord thought of that legendary aggressive plant. It could absorb the light essence of the sun, moon, and stars. It could use saintly corpses as nutrition and had no restrictions in realm. It could reach the Supreme Saint Realm directly.

Apparently, Princess White Li had received a Holy Carnivorous Flower. In the Blue Dragon Void World, it was taken by human genius Zhang Ruochen.

“You’re the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen?”
The Manlong Dragon Lord’s beastly eyes were trained on Zhang Ruochen.

“Indeed.”

Zhang Ruochen was very decisive. He extended a finger and pointed. The space caved in where Manlong Dragon Lord was, forming various spatial shards. The dark void was shown inside the collapsed space. It formed a horrible attractive force, swallowing all material and energy in the space.

The Manlong Dragon Lord was indeed a top Saint Beast trained by the Ancient Dragon Mountain. As soon as he recognized Zhang Ruochen, he changed his position and avoided the collapsed space.

The Manlong Dragon Lord looked at the collapsed space. Lava flowed over from all directions, disappearing within the spatial cracks. Even with his cultivation, he could barely manage to steady himself before the magnetic force.

“Is this the legendary power of space? It is indeed terrifying. No wonder even the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn’t suppress this man and instead failed.”

The Manlong Dragon Lord’s heart pounded in fear.

Whoosh!

A beautiful flower flew out of the lava, spinning. Its petals were translucent and colorful, but light spread out of them. They covered the entire region above the Manlong Dragon Lord’s head.

The Manlong Dragon Lord looked up. Sharp thorns of light grew out of the flower’s center. The consequences were unimaginable if he were swallowed by it.

Zhang Ruochen has the Holy Carnivorous Flower’s help. I can’t counter them even with my abilities.

The Manlong Dragon Lord was very decisive. Letting out a scream, he transformed into his true form. He became a savage beast the size of a mountain and charged to the bottom of the lava.

A young lord of the Manlong Dragon Clan was forced to escape from a lower-level saint. The Manlong Dragon Lord naturally felt embarrassed and insulted, so he threatened, “Zhang Ruochen, when I get a beam of the Nanling Dragon Fire and reach the Xuanhuang Realm, it’ll be the date of your death.”

The Manlong Dragon Lord was only a step away from the Xuanhuang Realm. If he could get a Nanling Dragon Fire and exercise his physical body and Holy Qi, he could consolidate Rules of Saintly Way. Then by refining it and leaving only the essence, he could immediately cultivate the Xuanhuang Qi and enter the Xuanhuang Realm. He would be a top figure amongst Saints.

As long as he entered the Xuanhuang Realm, he would be confident in fighting even Chedi Realm beings. Once he was in the Xuanhuang Realm, he’d be able to kill both Zhang Ruochen and the Holy Carnivorous Flower with a careless strike.

Zhang Ruochen scoffed. He summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and held it above his palm.

The black sword spun in his hand. Various runes emerged on the surface, making the Qi it radiated become stronger and stronger. It formed the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

Whoosh!

With a 100-meter-long streak of black light, the Abyss Ancient Sword pursued the Manlong Dragon Lord, tip pointed down.

Boom!

The sword hit the scales on the Manlong Dragon Lord’s back. It pierced the dragon scales, releasing destructive might. The next moment, a large mass of the Manlong Dragon Lord’s back broke apart. It turned into a pitiful and bloody mess.

Deep underground, the Manlong Dragon Lord roared, “Zhang Ruochen! I will definitely report to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon that you’ve come to the Yin Yang Sea! Your death date is approaching!”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t chase after him. He stood in place and raised his right arm, releasing a beam of sword intent to collect the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Saintly dragon blood still flowed across the sword. Each drop released powerful saintly might.

“No wonder he’s a Manlong Dragon Saint. His defense far surpasses beings of the realm. He took the Abyss Ancient Sword’s hit straight on but only got some scratches.”

Zhang Ruochen reached out and dabbed the blood.

A Saint dragon’s blood was like a round ruby. It was hotter than the surrounding lava and one could even see the detailed Rules of Saintly Way.

What pure dragon blood, Zhang Ruochen thought. If I can kill Manlong Dragon Lord and take his dragon pearl, I’ll definitely be able to reach the middle level.

Including the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, 12 Saint Beasts of Ancient Dragon Mountain had entered the Yin Yang Sea. Even though Demoness Xuezhen and Saint Beast Xuanwei had been killed, there were still ten more.

These ten were definitely deep underground. If Zhang Ruochen chased the Manlong Dragon Lord, he might not be able to kill the beast. He may fall into danger instead.

Right now, my force is still a bit weak. I can’t be impulsive. I must wait a bit more. When the imperial court and Immortal Vampire Saints enter the volcano, there’ll be a three-way chaotic fight. I can take advantage of it and go underground to take the Nanling Dragon Fire.

Zhang Ruochen found a relatively hidden place in the lava. He put the Holy Carnivorous Flower back into him. He also put away the 72 layers of saintly light and Ten Saints Blood Armor.

Right now, he was fully exposed above the lava.

The seawater of the Yin Yang Sea was hot enough in the day to burn a Saint. The Dragon Fire Island represented the Yang center of the sea. The lava here naturally wasn't ordinary lava. The heat it released was ten times scarier than the seawater.

Without the saint light and blood armor's protection, Zhang Ruochen felt the flames surge from all directions. It burned his body as if wanting to melt him.

“Having a saintly physical body is the ultimate goal for others. But for me, it's only the starting point.”

Competing in brute force with the Manlong Dragon Lord showed Zhang Ruochen that he wasn't undefeatable in this aspect. He was still weak when compared to the true strong cultivators.

His next goal was to reach the Supreme Saint Realm for his body.

Since the ancient times, those who could cultivate their bodies to the Supreme Saint Realm were all sovereign-like figures who ruled an era.

The goal was very far away, but Zhang Ruochen believed that he could definitely reach it through hard work.

Right now, he withstood immense pain, using the lava's fire to temper his body.

All 144 apertures on his body were open now. They formed 144 small vortices that swallowed the flames. The fire surged into his veins, meridians, Saint Meridians, flowing through his entire body.

Zhang Ruochen shook, horrible pain spreading through him. He continually challenged the limit of his will. It felt like he was being burned to ashes, but he had to persist.

I've undergone the Divine Fire Jingmie's baptism and my body is a Saint. I know I can survive the fire in the Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen gritted his teeth, trying to make himself forget the pain. Two images appeared in his mind: the Blood God

Map and the seventh level of the Emperor Ming Nine Sky Scripture.

Comprehending the former could cultivate his body.
Observing the latter could improve his cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen multitasked and activated his Holy Qi while tempering his body.

While the flames tempered his body, they were actually tempering the Holy Qi and Rules of Saintly Way within him too. His Holy Qi became purer while the Rules of Saintly Way grew clearer and thicker.

Chapter 1247 - Siming Goddess

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen could become a pinnacle lower-class saint from an elementary lower-class saint because of the power of a saint dragon pearl.

The dragon pearl indeed had tremendous power, but it wasn't pure.

For example, Zhang Ruochen was like a short and thin child before, but after he took the dragon pearl, he became a fatty who had a giant body. He indeed had much more power than before, but he looked too plump compared to the others.

And now, this fatty with a giant body needed to exercise to get rid of his fat and turn it into muscles so that he could be stronger.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was using the fire in the lava to refine holy Qi in his body and to comprehend the saintly way rules so that the holy Qi and saintly way rules from the dragon pearl could completely merge with his own.

The saintly way rules left in Zhang Ruochen's body became thinner and thinner. However, the rest of the saintly way rules became clearer and more magical.

After filtering all the waste matter, the only thing left was the essence.

After around half an hour, Zhang Ruochen felt that it was easier for him to control the holy Qi and saintly way rules in his body.

A trace of holy Qi flew out of his body, condensing into a white fighting sword.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his hand, and the white fighting sword became a cluster of holy Qi again and disappeared.

“My cultivation wasn’t improved at all. Instead, it’s solidified. It’s solid like a rock and pure like jade. My fighting power has also improved. I can finally start to condense the second saintly source.”

Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look showed up on Zhang Ruochen’s back.

The body of the Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look was enormous. It stood among the lava with thick saintly way rules. It looked like a giant spirit godly king.

Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look immediately contracted and became a cluster of white light the size of a fist, flying toward the palms of Zhang Ruochen.

The seven apertures of his hands started to glow, and fourteen holy Qi gushed out as if they were fourteen white bridges, connected with Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look.

With time going by, Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look became more condensed. It turned from a gaseous state to a liquid state and went into Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Chi Chi.

The liquid saintly look and holy Qi immediately turned into an indestructible crystal after entering Zhang Ruochen’s lower abdomen.

“Emperor Ming saintly source has been successfully condensed.”

Zhang Ruochen curled the corner of his lips. However, before he could feel happy about it, an earth-shattering rumble blasted in his lower abdomen, giving him a huge headache. He also fainted.

“What happened?”

Zhang Ruochen separated a trace of his mind power, condensing a small human shape and letting it rush into the lower abdomen to inspect what had happened inside.

The two saintly sources were like two stars, floating in the sky in the lower abdomen, emanating two different power ripples.

At this time, two saintly sources clashed with each other, making rumbling sounds.

“There has indeed a problem since I refined two saintly sources at the same time.”

Zhang Ruochen’s mind power condensed into a small human shape that was standing in the lower abdomen where smoke permeated. He could see the saintly way rules coming out of the two saintly sources, clashing with each other.

“Wait, they’re not just clashing, but merging as well,” Zhang Ruochen murmured.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took back his mind power and sat down with his legs crossed. He utilized his technique and controlled the two saintly sources to help the two saintly sources integrate.

Gradually, the saintly sources stopped clashing with each other, and instead, they started to spin around each other like twin stars.

“Finally, they’ve stabilized.”

Zhang Ruochen rubbed his temple to ease the pain in his head. He became relieved at the same time.

Two saintly sources had clashed in the lower abdomen just now, which had almost crushed his head.

He didn’t expect the saintly sources he refined to be out of his control, and they almost killed him, which upset Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had originally meant to condense the third saintly source, the fourth saintly source... Yet he had to pause now...

The more saintly sources he condensed, the more difficult it would be for him to control them.

It's said that Nanling Dragon Fire can not only refine holy Qi and saintly way rules, but also refine saintly sources and improve their quality. If I can obtain a Nanling Dragon Fire, I can solve this problem, Zhang Ruochen thought.

He had enough time to condense other saintly sources after getting Nanling Dragon Fire. There was no need for him to take risks now.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes, and he saw eighty-one layers of saintly light on his body as if he was enveloped by eighty-one layers of cocoons.

When Zhang Ruochen condensed the first sword master saintly source, Zhang Ruochen only had seventy-two layers of holy light.

When he condensed the second Emperor Ming saintly source, nine more layers of holy light showed up.

The more layers of holy light there were, the more powerful a monk's defense and fighting power would be.

Aside from his cultivation, his body constitution was also stronger. Even if he was burning the lava, he didn't feel as painful as before.

"With my cultivation and body constitution now, I can fight Manlong Dragon Lord with ease."

Zhang Ruochen was confident enough that he could fight saints at the Xuanhuang realm even without the power of time and space.

"The great beings from the immortal vampire race and the imperial government should've entered the volcano!"

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed, and a layer of blood-red light gushed out of his waist, turning into armor covering his body.

He then dimmed down his forces. He went underground, going through the lava.

After twenty-five feet, Zhang Ruochen felt more than one trace of powerful holy Qi ripples, and then he got closer more carefully.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen saw a large underground space where there were dozens of traces of holy Qi ripples coming out.

Zhang Ruochen immediately retreated and looked to that underground space through the lava.

The underground space was an oval with a diameter of seven thousand feet, which looked like a huge bubble in the lava.

At the center of the underground space was a square altar that was six hundred feet tall.

The altar was made of a crimson saint jade, and there were divine dragons crafted on the altar. They looked so real that they had powerful dragon forces.

There was a well that went deep underground. There was blue light coming out of the well, which painted the space around the altar blue.

Dozens of beings with enormous forces stood around the altar, and they were all aggressive.

Everyone from the human race was a great being from the imperial government. Chi Wansui and Sui Han, who were two of the heirs, were standing at the front.

They had both become saints.

Empress Chi Yao spent all the resources in Kunlun's Field to refine the heirs' body constitution. Only those nine could enjoy those resources.

After they finished their training, their improving speed far exceeded all other living beings.

Their efficiency would only get higher.

Zhang Ruochen and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon could only catch up with them because of their great body constitution and extreme luck.

There were sixty-four layers of golden holy light on Chi Wansui's body, and he was wearing golden armor and holding a long spear. He looked like a God of War.

Sui Han was wearing a blue cape with beautiful hair. He had an exquisite face and smooth skin. He looked regal.

His face was so beautiful that even men would be attracted.

If it wasn't for his fame, some people would definitely think that he was cross-dressing.

Aside from them, the rising star from the Ministry of War, Sui Bufan, and the princess of Xiaosheng Heavenly King Mansion stood beside Chi Wansui and Sui Han, respectively.

Sui Qianfan didn't have the resources like the heirs, but he had the Fate Qi of Emperor One. He paled only when compared to the two heirs.

Aside from them, something else attracted the attention of Zhang Ruochen.

That was a cluster of white mist.

To be accurate, it was a person standing within the white mist. He couldn't see that person's gender or age, but Zhang Ruochen found it unfathomable.

Just when Zhang Ruochen was staring at that cluster of white mist, a tumbling mind power gushed out.

Hong Long.

Zhang Ruochen felt that an ocean had shown up in front of him, and waves that were thousands of feet tall were rushing toward him. A pair of eyes showed up behind the waves.

It was a pair of beautiful eyes. They looked spiritual with terrific energies. They looked like a sun and moon hanging in the sky.

Those were female eyes.

“Such mind power. She noticed me after only one look.”

The space around him seemed to have been frozen. Zhang Ruochen had been located by her mind power. He couldn't

move at all. He could only watch the waves coming at him.

Suddenly, someone reached out her hand from the lava and grabbed Zhang Ruochen's right hand, pulling him back.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly went into the lava and got rid of the mind power. The pressure on his body was gone.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the person who had grabbed him and smiled. "You've come here. Yin and Yang Ocean is very dangerous. You shouldn't have come here."

It was Huang Yanchen who had grabbed Zhang Ruochen.

Huang Yanchen shot a glance at Zhang Ruochen and said, "It's not the time to talk about this now. Do you know who just attacked you?"

"Who?"

Zhang Ruochen was indeed a bit curious.

Huang Yanchen said, "Siming Goddess from Earth God Temple, Fairy. She's also one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens for the empress. Fortunately, she only locked onto you with her mind power, otherwise, I couldn't have saved you."

Chapter 1248 - Ripples From The Ancient Well

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

In the Earth God Temple, all women who became Spiritual Power Saints would be conferred the title of Goddess.

Siming Goddess was the leader of them all. Her status was very high and her authority was strong. She was at the same level as the Heavenly Kings of the other eight departments.

The Fairy was the Earth God Temple's Goddess and also one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens. Her fame wasn't any less than that of Martial Saint Canglan and Saint Lady.

Zhang Ruochen lowered his eyes, thinking hard. Then he smiled. "The imperial court coming to the Yin Yang Sea indeed has something to do with the Earth Heavenly Pavilion.

"The Fairy's Spiritual Power isn't any weaker than the Saint Lady. Once she discovers you and I, she'll definitely try to capture us. With our current cultivation, we're not her match."

Huang Yanchen wanted Zhang Ruochen to leave. After all, the three forces underground—the imperial court, Immortal Vampires, and Ancient Dragon Mountain—all viewed Zhang Ruochen as their nemesis. As soon as Zhang Ruochen showed himself, he'd be besieged.

Before so many strong cultivators, even ten Zhang Ruochens would be destroyed.

Zhang Ruochen's goal for entering Dragon Fire Island was to take the Nanling Dragon Fire.

If he backed off because he feared danger, then he wouldn't only miss an opportunity. His mindset would also be affected.

"The imperial court, Immortal Vampires, and Ancient Dragon Mountain are filled with strong cultivators," Zhang Ruochen said. "They also view me as an enemy. However, they're also enemies of each other. They won't unite against me. Plus, I also have hidden cards. I won't be easily toyed with by them."

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen's eyes hardened and met with Huang Yanchen's gaze. "Go and meet up with Blackie. Wait for me to get a beam of Nanling Dragon Fire. Then we'll leave Dragon Fire Island together."

"You want to push me away?" Huang Yanchen's starry blue eyes shone with light. She bit her lip and complained, "You tossed me into the Pluto Sword Tomb and came to the Yin Yang Sea alone. I still haven't talked to you about that, and now you want to push me away again?"

Zhang Ruochen rarely saw Huang Yanchen act so pitiful. His heart wavered, but his attitude was still unwavering. "It's very dangerous now. After getting the Nanling Dragon Fire, I can use the Spatial Move to leave at any time. You staying will distract me."

The pitiful look disappeared. Huang Yanchen lifted her snow-white chin and said a bit proudly, "You look down on me. I have the Heir Stamp. You've seen how powerful that is. Am I really as weak as you think I am? Plus, if I hadn't saved you just then, you probably would have been captured by the imperial court. You're not as strong as you think. You still need help."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't refute it. He just stared at Huang Yanchen's face with an odd look.

"What are you looking at me for? Am I not correct?" Huang Yanchen glared at him coldly.

"No, I was just thinking that your personality is always changing," Zhang Ruochen said. "Sometimes, you're a soft girl in love. Sometimes, a spoiled and unreasonable princess. Other times, you're like a powerful queen."

“Really?” Huang Yanchen froze. Seeming to sense something, she quickly lowered her head and grew thoughtful.

Zhang Ruochen was caring. “Tell me truthfully. Did you run into problems in cultivation? Did you improve too quickly, so your mindset isn’t stable and created a demon in your heart?”

Huang Yanchen raised her head. She rolled her eyes and hit Zhang Ruochen’s chest. “Even if there is, it’s not about cultivation, but because you anger me. I don’t care. You want to get the Nanling Dragon Fire, and so do I. I’m not going to leave.”

A crisp voice sounded behind her. “Me too. I want to get Nanling Dragon Fire too.”

Qing Mo walked out of the red lava. She seemed clumsy. Her face was red and she fluttered her lashes. Qing Mo seemed weak, but Zhang Ruochen sensed a very strong aura on her.

“Qing Mo, you entered the Xuanhuang Realm?” Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

Qing Mo pursed her lips like she’d done something secretive and said, “Yeah! I finally broke through.”

Qing Mo could already counter Xuanhuang Realm Saints as an upper-level Saint. Now that she was in the Xuanhuang Realm, just how powerful could she be?

If she utilized her power well, she might be a strong aid. However, seeing how timid Qing Mo was, Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Qing Mo was already in the Xuanhuang Realm and had become a top figure, but she was still so timid. She couldn’t do anything great.

If Zhang Ruochen had her cultivation and abilities, he would have definitely charged forward. He wouldn’t need to hide like this.

Basically, it was still because her cultivation was too low. Even as a mid-level Saint, he could still sweep across.

Actually, it was still because the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and nine Heirs were too close behind. They all knew

that not going forward would be going backward. They all worked hard on cultivating.

Zhang Ruochen didn't have the help of the Universe Spiritual Map and was cultivating the physical body, Martial Way, Spiritual Power, Sword Way, time and space at the same time. He didn't have any advantages in terms of speed. It was hard to widen the gap.

“Okay!” Zhang Ruochen said. “You two can stay, but you must listen to me in how to act.”

“As long as you don't force me away, anything you say goes.” Huang Yanchen's lips curled up in joy.

...

Under the alter, the Goddess Siming Fairy looked away and hid back in the white fog.

Wan Huayu stood beside the fog and asked, “Goddess, did you discover something?”

A thought entered Wan Huayu's mind. Other than the imperial court, Ancient Dragon Mountain, and Immortal Vampires, there's another strong cultivator hidden in the darkness. He is very powerful.

Wan Huayu looked around the lava with a grave expression. If the Siming Goddess thought that he was “very powerful,” then he obviously was an important figure. Who could it be?

Then Wan Huayu sent this message to Chi Wansui, Sui Han, and Bu Qianfan. The various Saints of the imperial court immediately grew alert.

Chi Wansui took three steps forward. Each step was 300 feet in distance. After stopping, he said, “Everyone came to Dragon Fire Island to take the Nanling Dragon Fire. There's no reason for the stalemate, right?”

“Oh? What great idea does King Taisui have?” Crown Prince Qitian smiled. Carrying the Destructive God Cross, he made heavy steps forward and stood across from Chi Wansui.

“Lead the Nanling Dragon Fire out first,” Chi Wansui said. “And then use our own abilities to collect it.”

“So we call a temporary truce?”

“At least, we can’t have a chaotic fight underground. This is the Yang center of the Yin Yang Sea. If the Holy Qi ripples are too strong, who knows what dangers will occur? By then, we’ll all die here.”

Hearing this, Crown Prince Qitian had a solemn expression too and he nodded. Then they looked toward the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The dragon huffed. “I have no objections. However, if Zhang Ruochen appears, I’ll definitely attack him. If you don’t want to die, you better run at that time.”

“Didn’t Zhang Ruochen die from the Life-Death Trial?” Wan Huayu asked.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon scoffed. Instead of answering Wan Huayu’s question, he opened his mouth. “The Nanling Dragon Fire is nurtured under that ancient well. It groups all the sharp Qi of the Yin Yang Sea and Divine Dragon Qi. It already has a spirit and intelligence. The typical methods won’t be able to guide it out.”

An upper-level Blood Saint of the Immortal Vampires said, “Why don’t we enter the ancient well to take it directly?”

“Directly enter the ancient well?” The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon looked at him as if he was stupid. “You can try.”

The Blood Saint obviously didn’t dare to. He shut his mouth and didn’t say anything else.

“I’ll try!”

A cloud of white fog flew out of the imperial court’s group. One could vaguely see a beautiful figure standing in the fog. She landed on the altar and walked toward the ancient well.

The Saints of the Ancient Dragon Mountain and Immortal Vampires all stared at the Fairy.

There was a Saint Beast in human shape from the Ancient Dragon Mountain’s camp. He had a pair of silver wings. He

was the young lord of the Winged Dragon clan. His name was Ye Huang.

Right now, Ye Huang's eyes were filled with shock. "The altar is terrifyingly hot. Before this, I was forced back before I even got onto the altar. Who is she? She can fly onto the altar and approach the ancient well?"

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon also widened his eyes in disbelief. According to legends, even a True Saint would be turned to ash if they approached the well. Could this human woman be even stronger than a True Saint?

Because the temperature was too high, the white fog around the Fairy thinned. It revealed her flawless figure. Her waist was thin and her legs were long and slender. She wore a white palace dress and had an ethereal feeling.

She held a jade bottle in her left hand and a white pearl in her right.

"A drop of Thousand-year Nether Winter Water," she murmured. "It is enough to fully awaken the Nanling Dragon Fire from its millennial slumber!"

The white pearl had a drop of water within it. It was the legendary Thousand-year Nether Winter Water, something extremely frigid.

She raised her arm and flicked her finger. The white pearl immediately flew forward and landed in the ancient well.

Kaboom!

It was as if a drop of cold water had fallen into a boiling pot of oil. There was an earsplitting explosion below the ancient well. The entire underground space shook violently.

More accurately, the entire Dragon Fire Island was shaking. One could even vaguely hear a group of dragons roaring.

Chapter 1249 - Blue Fire

Chapter 1249: Blue Fire

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Hua La!

Blue light gushed out of the ancient well at the center of the altar, and then, the temperature immediately surged.

Even the Fairy didn't care to stay on the altar. She tiptoed and fell like a white petal.

At the next moment, a blue fireball rushed out of the ancient well.

There were dragon scale inscriptions on the blue flame, which gave out enormous blazing forces, turning the independent space blue.

“Nanling Dragon Fire came out of the ancient well!” Ao Dao yelled.

The eyes of a blood saint with four wings on his back gleamed with greed. He flapped his wings and rushed toward that Nanling Dragon Fire.

That blood saint was fast like a lightning, and he rushed to Nanling Dragon Fire faster than any other creature. His eyes were gleaming, and he reached out his claws to grab the blue flame, which was the size of a fist.

Qitian Crown Prince yelled, “Don't touch it! Come back!”

However, it was too late!

Chi!

The body of the blood saint started to burn the second it touched Nanling Dragon Fire.

“Ah! This is... Help...” he yelled.

After a moment, that blood saint was burned into ashes, dripping from the sky.

Nanling Dragon Fire was so terrifying that it destroyed both his body and saint soul. The only thing left was a saintly source floating in the sky.

All the saints were terrified, and they calmed down immediately.

They all suppressed their greed as they didn't dare get close to Nanling Dragon Fire.

An upper-class blood saint was immediately burned to ashes. How could that not be terrifying?

Although the treasure was invaluable, it required an immense amount of power to get it.

“Even the divine dragon babies might be killed if they try to get the Nanling Dragon Fire. Who here can rival divine dragon babies?”

“Nanling Dragon Fire is indeed an indispensable valuable, but we should put our lives first.”

...

The Fairy stood on the ground like a divine lotus. Many saints from the imperial government surrounded her like she was the moon.

Her eyes gleamed with starry light. She said, “The divine dragon babies tried to get the mature Nanling Dragon Fire, which is why they were in danger. That Nanling Dragon Fire is only a new flame. It's far less dangerous than mature Nanling Dragon Fire. If we use the correct method, we might stand a chance.”

The Fairy reached out her hand, and a ball of light emerged on her palm.

Those light spots flew toward the saints from the imperial government.

Suddenly, those saints learned something new about how to get the Nanling Dragon Fire.

“I'll go try.”

Two fiery clouds gushed out of Wan Huayu's back, turning into a pair of wings that were more than a hundred feet long. She flapped her wings and flew toward Nanling Dragon Fire. She didn't touch the flame directly, instead, she stopped when she was ten feet away from the flame. The sacred mark was opened, and saintly way rules gushed out of the mark, enveloping the flame like threads.

All the creatures were staring at Wan Huayu.

Qitian Crown Prince said, "They're not just communicating. She's also using her saintly way rules to merge with Nanling Dragon Fire so that she won't burn herself even after she putting Nanling Dragon Fire into her body."

"It's still very dangerous though. Normal saints can't withstand Nanling Dragon Fire with their body constitution and saintly way rules. That human is definitely impressive."

"None of the creatures who came here are mediocre," Motian Crown Prince snorted.

Wan Huayu put her hands together, and the saintly way rules surrounding Nanling Dragon Fire flew toward her.

All the saints held their breath, staring at her.

Did she succeed or fail?

Hua!

Nanling Dragon Fire flew into Wan Huayu's head and into her lower abdomen.

At the next moment, Wan Huayu's body trembled, and her face turned blue. The blue spread toward her entire body.

Blue flames started to flow on the surface of her skin and her hair, giving out terrific destruction Qi.

"She did it. She's using Nanling Dragon Fire to refine her holy Qi and saintly soul."

Sui Han stepped forward, standing beside Wan Huayu to protect her.

Other creatures at the state of saint all stared at Wan Huayu with envy and jealousy. Obtaining a Nanling Dragon Fire meant her power would surge. She would accomplish a great deal in the future.

“There seems to be fiery phoenix bloodline in her body. She’s of fire characteristics. It must be easier for her to take the Nanling Dragon Fire.”

The Fairy’s voice sounded dim and free as she said, “Think twice before you go try Nanling Dragon Fire. If you can succeed, it’s going to be your great opportunity and improve your power, but if you can’t, you might get killed.”

Blue light rushed out of the altar again.

Thirteen Nanling Dragon Fires rushed out of the ancient well, giving out blazing destruction Qi. Thirteen beings rushed forward from the imperial government, Ancestral Dragon Mountain and the immortal vampire race, trying to get those Nanling Dragon Fire.

In the end, only four of them succeeded. They were Sui Qianfan from the imperial government, Manlong Dragon Lord and Yi Long Dragon Lord from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, and Motian Crown Prince from the immortal vampire race.

The other nine saints all failed and were burnt to ashes.

The casualty rate was so high that the other saints all suppressed their desire. They didn’t dare try anymore.

“It’s not easy for us to reach the state of saint. We can’t just lose our lives for our greed. I won’t go get Nanling Dragon Fire. There must be other valuables in Yin and Yang Ocean.”

“It’s so terrifying. They’re gambling their lives.”

“Look, Motian Crown Prince is trying to get the second Nanling Dragon Fire.”

“What? He dares to go try the second Nanling Dragon Fire?”

Even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Chi Wansui and Sui Han were dazed. They looked to Motian Crown Prince, who went to get the second Nanling Dragon Fire.

Qitian Crown Prince smiled and said, “Motian Crown Prince has eight blood spiritual bloodlines in his body, and he has sanctified his body. It’s not strange that he’s trying to get a second, or more Nanling Dragon Fire.”

The saints from the immortal vampire race all looked proud. Obviously, they shared the glory from the performance of Motian Crown Prince.

The immortal vampire races were born with great body constitution, and the human beings and savage beasts were no comparison to them.

At this moment, there came an astounding sound from the imperial government team. “Sui Bufan is also trying to get a second Nanling Dragon Fire.”

The smiles on the immortal vampires all froze. A human being dared try to get a second Nanling Dragon Fire?

“He’s overestimated himself. He’s being suicidal.”

“Human beings don’t have great body constitution. How can they bear two Nanling Dragon Fires?”

Aside from immortal vampires, the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain also sneered. They didn’t believe that Bu Qianfan could get the second Nanling Dragon Fire.

However, they were soon stunned. Bu Qianfan not only took the second Nanling Dragon Fire, but also went to get the third one.

“Interesting. I can’t believe there’s someone as powerful as you from the human race aside from the nine heirs and Zhang Ruochen.”

Motian Crown Prince shot a glance at Bu Qianfan and dashed toward the third Nanling Dragon Fire.

Manlong Dragon Lord and Winged Dragon Lord took a look at each other. They both looked surprised and said, “Maniac.”

Both of them knew how violent Nanling Dragon Fire was and how difficult it was to tame.

They had tried everything, but they could only take one Nanling Dragon Fire. They couldn't imagine that someone could take two, or even three Nanling Dragon Fires.

Qing Mo looked anxious. She said, "Mr. Zhang, why aren't we grabbing the Nanling Dragon Fire? What if they take them all?"

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He said, "No need to rush. Didn't you see that Qi Sheng, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Chi Wansui still haven't made a move yet?"

"That's right. Why aren't they doing anything?" Qing Mo was confused.

"These are only the newborn Nanling Dragon Fire flames, but they're waiting for the mature Nanling Dragon Fire. It's said that mature Nanling Dragon Fire has great intelligence, and it's formed dragon shapes. These flames are much more powerful than new flames. The divine dragon babies from the ancient times were trying to obtain the mature Nanling Dragon Fire," Zhang Ruochen said.

Qing Mo pouted and asked, "What's the difference?"

"Of course, there's a difference."

Zhang Ruochen said, "The newborn flames can only be used to refine holy Qi and saintly sources. As for mature Nanling Dragon Fire, it can be nurtured by holy Qi, making it stronger. Eventually, it'll become a terrific attack skill."

Qing Mo's eyes gleamed. She said, "Like the flames breathed out by the divine dragons?"

"Kind of like that... Oh? Another group of great beings entered the underground. Which power are they from?"

Zhang Ruochen frowned and looked up. He smiled, as Yin and Yang Ocean was bustling and becoming more chaotic.

Chapter 1250 - Prince Black Li

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The various Saints below the altar all felt the powerful Holy Qi ripples and looked up.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Dozens of Saint Beasts rushed out of the lava. When they reached the bottom of the altar, the people finally saw clearly that it was a group of cats. There were more than 30 of them, each one a Saint.

Some cats were the size of fists, like small fuzzy balls. Others were several hundred feet tall. They were covered in dragon scales and had Divine Dragon-like heads.

Qing Mo pointed at a black cat and exclaimed softly, "It's Blackie."

"It's not Blackie. How can it be so thin?" Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

There was indeed a black cat within the crowd. Compared to Blackie, it was thin and lean. It had a cloud of black smoke around it. Its eyes were sharp and it walked slowly, like the god of death strolling through Hell.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon grinned at the cats. "Nine Li Palace, you've come just in time. How about we work together and destroy the human Saints?"

Prince Black Li scoffed. "Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, you want to use us to defeat the humans. Are you dreaming? We're not that close."

Darkness flashed past the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's eyes, but he didn't lose his temper.

Right now, Ancient Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace had an ambiguous relationship. They weren't at war, but they weren't friendly either. Both sides wanted this to continue. At least, they could have a final war after the other savage beast races were cleared out.

A dozen more blue sparks flew out of the ancient well atop the altar. Some flew around the altar while others dove into the lava.

There were very few beings here who collected the Nanling Dragon Fire. There were less than 20 people even when all the forces were combined.

Qing Mo and Huang Yanchen rushed into the lava. They each took one Nanling Dragon Fire spark.

Suddenly, a deep dragon roar rumbled in the ancient well. The underground space trembled and the temperature doubled in an instant.

Some of the weaker Saints suffered from the invisible power and retreated without stop.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Chi Wansui, Crown Prince Qitian, and Prince Black Li didn't retreat. Instead, they looked excited and stepped forward. They knew that the mature Nanling Dragon Fire was about to appear.

Even young Divine Dragons may die when trying to take mature Nanling Dragon Fire, but they weren't afraid. They were confident that they were stronger than Divine Dragon youths.

"I must take a mature Nanling Dragon Fire spark and make my physical body undefeatable." The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon widened his eyes. His hands turned into dragon claws. His aura grew stronger and stronger.

"There's a limited amount of Nanling Dragon Fire. The first one must be mine." Other than in taking the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World, Crown Prince Qitian had never failed in anything else in his life. He was very confident.

If he wanted to become the second Pluto of the Immortal Vampires, he had to take a Nanling Dragon Fire spark to strengthen himself.

Chi Wansui also wanted a mature Nanling Dragon Fire spark. He could use it against Monk Lidi's golden body and Xue Wuye's swordsmanship to become the top human Saint of the younger generation.

Competition for the first mature Nanling Dragon Fire spark would definitely be the most intense. Zhang Ruochen wasn't impatient, so he just crossed his arms and watched. "I wonder how much they've improved," he murmured to himself.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Chi Wansui, and Crown Prince Qitian were all rare once-in-a-millennium geniuses. They all had great fates. If it wasn't for the fact that a huge era was coming, they couldn't have been born in the same period.

In ancient times, the young Divine Dragons might have really been weaker than them.

Kaboom!

The underground space shook. A 30-foot-long blue fire dragon flew out of the ancient well. It wasn't big, but its power was hundreds of times more terrifying than the Nanling Dragon Fire sparks.

Whoosh, whoosh!

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Chi Wansui, Crown Prince Qitian and Prince Black Li all used their fastest techniques to rush up. They began fighting before they even approached the blue fire dragon.

While fighting, Chi Wansui yelled, "Are you sure you want to fight? If you accidentally lure out some unknown danger from the bottom of the sea, we'll all die here."

"No one knows how many mature Nanling Dragon Fires there are. What if there's only this one? It must be mine!"

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was filled with aggressive Qi. He practically didn't care about his life

anymore. He attacked with full force, wildly as if he wanted to drill through the sea.

“A madman who doesn’t care for his life.”

In the end, Chi Wansui and Prince Black Li retreated, not continuing to fight. They wouldn’t be afraid anywhere else, but there were many concerns here. They couldn’t be as crazy as the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“All Saints of the imperial court,” Chi Wansui said, “leave immediately and return to ground level.”

“Nine Li Palace, listen,” Prince Black Li yelled. “Don’t stay here. Return to the ground and be ready to meet me at any moment.”

The Saints of the various forces knew that they couldn’t stay underground anymore. They all rushed into the lava and hurried to the ground.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Crown Prince Qitian continued fighting. The lava rolled and rumbled. The underground space was about to be ripped apart.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had the Ancient Dragon Scale. Crown Prince Qitian had the God-killing Cross Shield. They were both excellent divine weapons, even stronger and more miraculous than a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. They could unleash earth-shaking power.

Such powerful weapons, Zhang Ruochen thought. They must be in the top three weapons of the Ancient Dragon Mountain and Qitian Tribe.

The Ancient Dragon Scale was a scale from an ancestor of the ancient dragon race. It contained chaotic Qi. When unleashed at full force, it could suppress all beings in the world.

The Death God Cross had once killed a god. The divine blood on it still hadn’t dried.

With these two powerful weapons, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Crown Prince Qitian’s combat abilities reached a terrifying level. Saints of the same realm would be killed instantly if they approached the area.

After reaching the Saint Realm, they could finally use a shred of the two weapons' true powers.

“Such powerful weapons,” Huang Yanchen said. “With the Heir Stamp's current power, it might not be able to fend them off.”

The Heir Stamp could grow continually. It would only strengthen if more Rules of Saintly Way were added to it.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was grave. “I will go compete too. You and Qing Mo go back now!”

This time, Huang Yanchen didn't insist on staying. She rushed up with Qing Mo.

As soon as they left, a huge change occurred. The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't control his strength well. When he attacked with the Ancient Dragon Scale, he was a bit off. It hit the square altar.

Boom.

The altar trembled.

Dozens of deafening dragon roars sounded within the ancient well. Then dozens of blue fire dragons flew out.

At the same time, the underground space collapsed. Lava fell down, drowning the altar and ancient well.

“Oh no.” Zhang Ruochen's expression faltered.

Dozens of mature Nanling Dragon Fires were born. This was no longer an opportunity but a catastrophe. If he was touched by the fire, he would be turned to ashes.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Crown Prince Qitian were both shocked. They stopped fighting and dodged the attacks of the dozen mature Nanling Dragon Fires.

They didn't retreat. They still wanted to take one of the fire dragons.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were on the largest blue fire dragon. It was 50 feet long and had clear dragon scales, whiskers, and horns. Its fire Qi was also the strongest.

Zhang Ruochen rushed over. Thousands upon thousands of Rules of Saintly Way were released from his forehead. They wrapped around the dragon like chains.

The blue fire dragon was very intelligent and obviously wasn't willing to be taken. It roared angrily and shook its body, shattering all the Rules of Saintly Way.

The dragon's roar shocked the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Crown Prince Qitian, Chi Wansui, and Prince Black Li. They all looked toward Zhang Ruochen. He wore the Ten Saints Blood Armor, so no one could see his body and features clearly.

However, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Crown Prince Qitian, and Chi Wansui were all wise geniuses. They recognized him at a glance.

“Zhang Ruochen, you've finally appeared!”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon hated Zhang Ruochen's guts. Fire practically spewed from his eyes. He circulated his Holy Qi, sending it streaming into the Ancient Dragon Scale.

Whoosh!

A beam of black dragon light flew from the Ancient Dragon Scale, attacking Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen knew how powerful the Ancient Dragon Scale was, so he obviously wouldn't go up against it. He hurriedly used the Spatial Move to dodge it.

The black light had extreme penetrative abilities. It kept going up, flying out of the volcano and shooting into the clouds above Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen was still composed. Smiling, he said, “You don't have to be so furious at seeing me, right? How about we fight after getting the Nanling Dragon Fire?”

“I can get the Nanling Dragon Fire after killing you first.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was determined to kill Zhang Ruochen. Great Demonic Qi surged within him. His arm transformed into a huge dragon claw and he slammed down on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was still composed. He formed a palm force and hit it forward to the center of the dragon claw.

Boom!

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon flew back several hundred feet. The huge dragon claw transformed back into an arm. Immense pain seized half of his body. Feeling shocked inside, he thought, He's only a human, but his physical strength is actually stronger than me.

“Zhang Ruochen must have turned his body into a Saint. His physical strength is even stronger than other physical Saints too.”

Crown Prince Qitian narrowed his eyes. Murderous Qi rolled off of him as he slowly approached Zhang Ruochen.

“This isn't the place to take the Nanling Dragon Fire. I'll take my leave.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Crown Prince Qitian and smiled. He extended his arms and pushed up a huge spatial territory. He dragged the 50-foot-long blue fire dragon into the spatial territory and then used the Spatial Move.

“Go.”

Zhang Ruochen and the blue fire dragon both vanished from the underground.

Chapter 1251 - Blue Sun

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Many saints gathered under the volcano at the center of Dragon Fire Island.

Some of the talented saints obtained one Nanling Dragon Fire and used the dragon fire to refine themselves, trying to make a breakthrough.

Some of the other saints stared at the volcano, seeing the surging blue flames. They couldn't be more tense.

Wan Huayu was standing beside the Fairy, wearing fiery phoenix saintly armor, showing her neck, belly and legs. She looked heroic and sexy.

After obtaining a flame of Nanling Dragon Fire, she successfully became a saint with her cultivation surging. There were thirty-six layers of holy light around her body.

There were two balls of flames gleaming in Wan Huayu's eyes. She said, "Only young divine dragons can obtain mature Nanling Dragon Fire. Will either Chi Wansui or Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon succeed?"

Sui Han said, "Very difficult. Look there. Motian Crown Prince has already sanctified his body, yet he still doesn't dare go get the mature Nanling Dragon Fire."

Motian Crown Prince had already sanctified his body, and he was definitely one of the top-tier beings among those in the same generation. He obtained eleven Nanling Dragon Fire, yet he didn't even try to get the mature Nanling Dragon Fire.

It wasn't because he didn't want to take the risk, but he had calculated the probability of his success, and it was extremely

low.

Which was why he didn't want to risk his life.

As for Sui Han, he was an heir, but his body constitution wasn't at the top-tier level. He knew his strengths and weaknesses, so he didn't take the risk either.

“Does that mean if any one of them succeeds, it'll have significant meaning?” Wan Huayu asked.

Sui Han nodded and said, “Nanling Dragon Fire has tremendous fighting power, and it can melt everything in the world. Only ten thousand patterns saintly weapons can ward it off for a while. If a creature can actually obtain a mature Nanling Dragon Fire, all the creatures in Kunlun's Field will become restless.”

In another direction, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo and Blackie gathered and stood in a formation.

Blackie said, “Can Zhang Ruochen handle them by himself? Qitian Crown Prince, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Chi Wansui all have great weapons. Zhang Ruochen hasn't got Dragon Sun Moon Mix yet, so he won't be able to defend himself against them. Also, why did that Black Li Prince come here? Is it powerful enough? Does it bring the ancestral weapon from Black Li Cat race?”

Blackie felt anxious. It was becoming more chaotic, which went against its expectations.

It had originally wanted to get into Yin and Yang Ocean without being noticed, to find its body and to get Dragon Sun Moon Mix, but now, there were more and more creatures entering Yin and Yang Ocean. Nobody knew what would happen.

Huang Yanchen suddenly looked up in a direction above the volcano.

A tiny space ripple showed up there, and a circular space door was opened. And then, a ball of blue flames was let out, giving out eye-piercing light.

Dragon Fire Island immediately turned blue, and the fire in the sky looked like a blue sun.

Ao.

A deafening dragon sound came from the blue sun.

The saints then realized that it was a fiery dragon that was more than fifteen feet long. The light and heat coming from the dragon was too terrifying.

A saint beast with golden pupils pointed at the sky and said, "Look, there's a human being beside the blue fiery dragon."

"Someone's trying to get the mature Nanling Dragon Fire. Who is it? Qitian Crown Prince?"

That person was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor. Many creatures thought it was Qitian Crown Prince, Qi Sheng.

Qi Sheng was indeed wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor to come to Yin and Yang Ocean. Even many immortal vampire saints thought it was him.

"His highness is indeed a peerless talent. He dares fight the mature Nanling Dragon Fire. I really admire him."

"Only the crown prince from Qitian Tribe is that brave. See, that blue fiery dragon is being tamed. It's going to be domesticated by our crown prince."

The blood saints were all exhilarated.

If Qitian Crown Prince was able to obtain a mature Nanling Dragon Fire, no monks at his generation would rival him.

Qitian Crown Prince would definitely become a being like the ancient divine dragon, dominating everyone.

Some of the creatures from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, the imperial government and Nine Li Palace all tried to stop that person from getting Nanling Dragon Fire, yet they were fought back by the immortal vampire saints.

A blood saint with blood-red muscles all over his body sneered, "Our crown prince is about to get Nanling Dragon Fire. Are you afraid now? Unfortunately, you won't be able to stop our crown prince when we're here to protect him."

“Anyone who dares interfere will be killed by me.”

Another blood saint stepped forward, activating a thousand-patterns saintly weapon and giving out great thousand-patterns destruction, which intimidated the saints.

However, it wasn't Qitian Crown Prince who was trying to obtain the Nanling Dragon Fire. Instead, it was Zhang Ruochen.

The destruction Qi from Nanling Dragon Fire was so fierce that the saints couldn't even see Zhang Ruochen, not to mention identify him.

It was natural that they mistook that person for Qitian Crown Prince. After all, only Qitian Crown Prince, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Black Li Prince and Chi Wansui had still stayed underground when all the other saints exited. They couldn't think of anyone else wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor but Qitian Crown Prince.

Only a few saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain knew that Zhang Ruochen was also on Dragon Fire Island, yet before they could identify that person, they were knocked back by the great beings from the immortal vampire race.

Ten thousand saintly way rules were let out of Zhang Ruochen's head, winding around the blue fiery dragon, placating it..

If he had more time, it would be easy for him to put Nanling Dragon Fire in his body.

Motian Crown Prince was trying to tame the Nanling Dragon Fire in his body, and his holy Qi became purer. His power was improved.

Motian Crown Prince stood up, and his eyes glinted. He stared at Zhang Ruochen who was fighting the blue fiery dragon and said, “That's not Qi Sheng, but Zhang Ruochen.”

All the saints behind Motian Crown Prince were dazed.

“Zhang Ruochen? How is that possible?”

Motian Crown Prince didn't even care about the others. He pulled out the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, held the handle,

and a ball of demonic clouds gushed out of his body.

Hua.

Emperor-kill Demonic Sword let out terrifying destruction Qi, forming a light pillar and hitting Zhang Ruochen in the sky.

At the same time, an heir the size of a city flew out and clashed with Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, knocking the sword away.

That divine stamp floated under Zhang Ruochen and the blue fiery dragon, letting out a cluster of gigantic golden clouds, pressuring all the saints underneath.

Sui Han yelled, “Heir stamp! Which heir is helping Zhang Ruochen?”

Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo were standing in the formation. They didn’t walk out, so nobody saw them.

Their power activated a blue light thread in the heir stamp.

The power of that blue light thread gushed out, turning into a blue river that was several hundred miles long, letting out tumbling emperor Qi.

That was a hair of Empress Chi Yao, and it had the power to kill a saint.

“It’s got to be Huang Yanchen. Only she would be willing to fight so many saints for Zhang Ruochen,” the Fairy said.

“She’s throwing an egg against a stone. She’s not strong enough to protect Zhang Ruochen from all these saints, even with the heir stamp.

Sui Han sighed and let out his mind power, trying to find Zhang Ruochen.

A war saint from the imperial government said, “Should we catch Zhang Ruochen?”

Wan Huayu pouted and said, “Don’t do it now. Zhang Ruochen is a human monk, after all. If we catch him, we’ll make ourselves a joke to the immortal vampires and savage beasts.”

The saints from the imperial government didn't attack Zhang Ruochen, but they didn't help him either.

If someone dared help Zhang Ruochen, they would be reported by the officials after they went back to the First Central Empire, and they might be killed, followed by their entire family.

“Let's kill Zhang Ruochen.”

The saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and the immortal vampire race all made attacks. They didn't dare get close to Nanling Dragon Fire, nor did they dare wield their saintly weapons. They all performed their saint spells.

Hong Long Long.

Dozens of saint spells clashed with the heir stamp, which was knocked away. Zhang Ruochen and the blue fiery dragon were exposed.

Zhang Ruochen was about to be annihilated by those dozens of saint spells. Suddenly, a rune showed up between Zhang Ruochen's fingers. He pressed the rune.

“Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune.”

Lightning engravings emerged on the rune, making tittering sounds.

Each light engraving became a giant lightning bolt, and they were flowing in the sky.

Hong Long Long.

At the next moment, thousands of lightning bolts fell from the sky, and they descended on Dragon Fire Island like a waterfall.

All of a sudden, all the dozens of saint spells dissipated.

The saints were all horrified looking at the lightning falling. They didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to have such a horrific trump card.

Nobody had the energy to attack Zhang Ruochen. They all performed their defense techniques to ward off the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune.

Zhang Ruochen seized the chance to mobilize saintly way rules, dragging the blue fiery dragon toward his head. He wanted to tame Nanling Dragon Fire before the attack power from Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune wore off.

Only after that could he have an advantage.

Chapter 1252 - Ying Huo

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune released extremely aggressive electric light. It covered the entire Dragon Fire Island, turning it into a sea of electricity. There were rising and falling rumbles. It was about to destroy all the beings on the island.

Faced with such might, even Saints grew fearful.

The Fairy arched her thin eyebrows and extended a slender finger. She pointed in the air and strong Spiritual Power poured out.

In an instant, the Spiritual Qi on the island turned into creeks that flowed to her fingertip. They formed a wall of light, hovering in the sky above the imperial court Saints. The wall was like a white veil and looked very fragile, but it fended off the attack.

The thick beams of lightning hit the light like bits of rain falling into a lake. They could only create small ripples.

The space under the shield of light was extremely calm, totally different from the outside world. The various Saints all let out a breath inwardly.

“Even a Heaven Pass Realm Saint doesn’t dare to take a Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune attack. If the Siming Goddess didn’t help, we would’ve all died.”

They all looked at the Fairy’s beautiful backside with respect and envy. No wonder she was the Siming Goddess of the Earth God Temple. No wonder she was one of the Nine Maidens. She really had such immeasurable Spiritual Power, easily dissolving the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune’s attack.

Of course, this was also because the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune had been applied to a large range, so its power was reduced. This was why she could block it so easily. If the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune was focused on one point, the Fairy would have to retreat no matter how strong she was.

Three Death Knights from the Immortal Vampire camp flew up, wearing the Ten Saints Blood Armor. They stood low in the air, grasping long spears. Together, they roared, “Light of Death God.”

Whoosh!

Three rings of bloody light poured out of them. They overlapped, shielding the Immortal Vampire Saints below. The three Death Knights used the Ten Saints Blood Armor and Light of Death God to turn into flesh shields, taking the brunt of the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune attack.

The Saint Beasts of the Ancient Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace weren't so lucky. They dodged the lightning bolts. They quickly dug holes and dove underground, curling up, to save their lives.

“Zhang Ruochen, you won't succeed. Die!”

“Sky-piercing Dragon Thorn!”

The young Manlong and Winged Dragon lords all had advanced cultivations. They used ancient weapons to protect themselves and continued fighting, stopping Zhang Ruochen from taking the Nanling Dragon Fire.

The young Manlong Dragon lord held a dark axe with his one arm. He applied force and it spun like a windmill. Suddenly, he let go and the axe flew out. It passed through the various lightning bolts, going for Zhang Ruochen in the air.

In the distance, the young Winged Dragon lord opened his mouth, spitting out a golden dragon thorn. It flew in the air like the sun.

Zhang Ruochen was at the critical point of getting the Nanling Dragon Fire. He was fully immersed in controlling the Rules of Saintly Way. The 50-foot-long blue fire dragon grew smaller, flying toward his forehead.

He didn't dare to get distracted at all. He could only summon the Holy Carnivorous Flower for the two dragon lord attacks.

The flower rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body, extending its miles-long vine. The flower at the top opened up, clashing against the dark axe.

Boom.

The dark axe was so strong. The Holy Carnivorous Flower couldn't dodge it. It could only take it straight on but obviously wasn't able to. The flower exploded; dozens of petals fell to the ground.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower wailed and retreated into Zhang Ruochen's body, deeply hurt. However, due to its blocking, the dark axe's attack was sent astray. It flew to the right of Zhang Ruochen and rushed into the clouds.

On the other end, the young Winged Dragon lord's dragon thorn was pushed aside by Zhang Ruochen's spatial distortion. It flew past his waist without hitting him.

However, the wind created by the dragon thorn hit Zhang Ruochen's stomach like a punch. He was sent flying many feet back.

He felt immense pain in his stomach. Then a metallic taste surged into his throat.

He was hurt!

Thankfully, he was wearing the Ten Saints Blood Armor. Otherwise, that last attack would've worsened his injuries. All his efforts might have been in vain.

"When I take the Nanling Dragon Fire, it'll be your time to die," he said. "Collect!"

Eyes bulging out, he roared and used all his might to store the blue fire dragon into his Sea of Qi. Then his entire body turned blue. Dragon scale-like fire flowed across his skin.

He looked extremely divine and strange.

"Zhang Ruochen actually put a mature Nanling Dragon Fire into his body."

The young Winged Dragon lord was incredulous. He put his hands together and activated all his Holy Qi to cast a saint spell.

Crack!

Just then, a crisp sound came from above his head.

Oh no.

He looked up and saw that the ancient weapon he used for protection, the Double Dragon Bone Pearl, had cracked from the lightning. Then there was a boom. The Double Dragon Bone Pearl exploded, turning into a pile of bone powder.

Without the protection, the lightning fell onto the young Winged Dragon lord.

Sizzle, sizzle.

The first bolt landed, piercing the young lord's wings, leaving a dark hole. The power from the lightning burned his wing.

The second bolt struck his body. He shuddered and a low muffled sound came from his mouth. His entire body was scorched black.

As lightning kept falling, the young Winged Dragon lord was battered. He couldn't cast any saint spells now. He could only dig through the rock and hide underground.

The young Manlong Dragon lord's protective weapon also cracked. He became even more pathetic than the young Winged Dragon lord. All his scales melted from the lightning. He slithered into a crack in the rock like a black worm.

"Such a powerful Time and Space Descendant. He really collected a mature Nanling Dragon Fire." Crown Prince Motian's eyes were shocked. He was six meters tall and covered in black magic veins. Holding a seven-meter-long Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, he charged out of the defense circle formed by the three Death Knights. Pushing up, he rushed into the dense lightning bolts.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't completely collected the fire yet. It was the best chance to kill him now. Crown Prince Motian obviously couldn't let go of this chance.

Two pairs of dark red flesh wings unfurled on his back as he flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Kaboom!

A thick bolt of lightning struck Crown Prince Motian.

A shocking scene appeared. The magic veins on Crown Prince Motian shone with blazing light, transforming into a defensive net. The lightning that fell upon him slid off without being able to harm him.

“Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, the sky demon descends.”

Crown Prince Motian flew above Zhang Ruochen. Grasping the sword, he used all his might to cut down.

As the sword fell, 36 beams of Demonic Qi flew out of the blade, forming the image of a sky demon. The image was 360 feet tall. Putting his hands together, he transformed into a sword and cut down on Zhang Ruochen as well.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes opened. Two beams of blue fire shot out of them. “Just as well. Earlier, it was you all attacking me. Now, it’s my turn!”

Zhang Ruochen raised his right arm. His arm, wrist, and fingers were covered in blue fire. He pushed forward, crashing against the blade of the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword.

Boom!

Blue fire and black demonic Qi formed two energy shockwaves and quickly spread in all directions. Wherever the shockwaves went, even mountains collapsed.

Zhang Ruochen’s full-power palm carried Nanling Dragon Fire as well. It was obviously wildly strong.

The demonic figure couldn’t withstand the palm force and shattered with a boom. The palm grew bigger and bigger in Crown Prince Motian’s eyes. He was quickly hit by the palm. His entire body shook. Coughing blood, he was thrown back like a broken kite tail.

The Saints of the imperial court and Immortal Vampires were all shocked by this scene, their hearts racing.

Crown Prince Motian's body was a Saint and had collected 11 Nanling Dragon Fire sparks. He also had the ancient sword of the Motian Tribe. How could he not take a single palm from Zhang Ruochen?

“Even Crown Prince Qitian couldn't defeat Crown Prince Motian with one strike...? Just how strong is Zhang Ruochen?”

“Is he really undefeatable in his realm?”

...

A luan bird and phoenix appeared under Zhang Ruochen's feet. He used breakneck speed to catch up to Crown Prince Motian. Activating bounding sword intent, he gathered it at his fingertip and pointed down.

Nanling Dragon Fire spread before his finger, consolidating into a three-foot-long sword of fire.

Crown Prince Motian clenched his teeth and hurriedly turned his sword horizontally to block it. However, he was thrown back once again. His injuries worsened.

One shred of Nanling Dragon Fire landed on the blood armor on Crown Prince Motian's chest. It sizzled. The Ten Saints Blood Armor was a true protective treasure, but it was still burnt lightly by the Nanling Dragon Fire.

One could imagine that a bit more fire would be able to burn through the armor.

“You're still not dead? Here's the final hit. Dragon Nine Days.”

Zhang Ruochen used the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He transformed into a huge golden dragon. Brilliant Buddhist light spread from the dragon. He extended two huge claws and pressed down on Crown Prince Motian.

A sheen of blue firelight emerged on the claws, flowing through the layers of scales. After collecting the Nanling Dragon Fire, Zhang Ruochen's Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm had become even more powerful.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use this attack to kill Crown Prince Motian so he wouldn't become a huge enemy in the future.

Whoosh!

A vortex appeared out of thin air between the two dragon claws and Crown Prince Motian. It released strong distortive power and actually dissolved the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm's tenth palm. The huge golden dragon was sent flying too.

When it flew dozens of miles away, it turned back into Zhang Ruochen. He dissolved the force and steadied himself. With a shocked expression, he stared at the vortex hanging in the air. "Another strong Spiritual Power cultivator. Who are you?"

A slender figure emerged slowly from the vortex. She stood in the air above it and smiled prettily. "Ying Huo of the Immortal Temple greets the Time and Space Descendant."

On the ground, Sui Han grew ponderous when he heard the name "Ying Huo." Then his head shot up and he cried out, "The Immortal Goddess of the Immortal Temple, Ying Huo?"

Chapter 1253 - A Real Temple

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The engravings from the Five Town Destructive Saint Rune withered away, turning into light spots and disappearing.

The lightning in the sky and land also withered away. There were only lightning engravings flowing on the ground, making tittering sounds.

The Dragon Fire Island became quiet again.

However, Ying Huo made all the saints excited. Some of them were anxious, while others were exhilarated.

“Is she the Immortal Goddess?”

“I can’t believe there’s someone so beautiful in the world. She’s unrivaled.”

The human saints from the imperial government and the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace all looked to the Immortal Goddess. They couldn’t take their eyes off her.

Even the Fairy was a bit intrigued. She looked up at the exquisite woman standing on the whirlpool.

There were layers of blood-red mist around the Immortal Goddess as if she were a jade covered by yarns. Her body looked dimming and seductive.

There were two pairs of half-transparent blood-red wings on her back as if they had actually been formed by blood. Sometimes, they withered away, and sometimes they emerged.

Bizarre, mysterious, seductive and exquisite.

“Your highness.”

All the blood saints saluted her.

Ying Huo looked young, with smooth skin. She had eyes that could seduce any man’s souls. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “I’ve heard that nobody in the same realm can rival the Time and Space Descendant. You’re indeed impressive.”

“Really? Who’s flattering me?”

Zhang Ruochen only took a glance at Ying Huo’s eyes. Suddenly, he became numb.

Nobody knew that ten illusions showed up in Zhang Ruochen’s head as if he had fallen into ten illusion worlds.

Some of the illusion worlds had only ghosts and skulls, which was terrifying.

Some of the illusion worlds had ferocious beasts from the ancient times, and they yelled with their mouths wide open. They had claws that were the size of mountains, crushing rivers and grounds.

...

The ten illusion worlds overlapped with each other, and they all looked surreal. Even though Zhang Ruochen had already sanctified his mind power, he was almost trapped.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen focused his mind power and mobilized Nanling Dragon Fire in his body to burn the ten illusions.

Suddenly, he became conscious and was able to see the real world again. He saw that Ying Huo was already right in front of him. She reached out her hand and pointed at his head.

Her body was indeed seductive at such a short distance, as if she was sculpted by God. Her breasts were perky, and her waist was thin. She had long and delicate hands, and the legs hiding in the blood-red mist looked smooth and curvy.

Zhang Ruochen didn't appreciate the beauty in front of him. He took a glimpse and performed great spatial move to arrive at the top of a mountain.

How impressive Immortal Empress is. I was almost tricked, Zhang Ruochen thought.

"No wonder, it's the Time and Space Descendant. No wonder, it's Nanling Dragon Fire. They're able to break the ten illusions so easily."

Ying Huo was a bit upset, but she still smiled. She withdrew her fingers and rolled them around her hair. She said, "The Time and Space Descendant indeed has some great power. He didn't let us down."

Motian Crown Prince recovered and went to Ying Huo. He said, "Your highness, Zhang Ruochen has obtained a mature Nanling Dragon Fire. He's going to be a great threat to our race. We should kill him now at all costs."

Ying Huo stopped smiling, shook her head and said, "We've missed the best chance to kill Zhang Ruochen. The three death knights and you are all severely injured. Even if we want to fight Zhang Ruochen, we need to wait till Qi Sheng comes out of the underground. If he can get a Nanling Dragon Fire, he can rival Zhang Ruochen as well."

Just now, the three death knights had teamed up and warded off the Five Town Destructive Saint Rune to save the immortal vampire saints. However, they were all severely injured and lost their fighting power.

The power from the Five Town Destructive Saint Rune had severely injured more than half of the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace.

But now, the imperial government had the greatest power. Ying Huo needed to preserve their power as much as possible. They couldn't fight Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen saw the situation clearly, so he decided to make attacks.

Before he made attacks, Zhang Ruochen sent a message to Bu Qianfan with his mind power.

Bu Qianfan was the only one who had a friendship with Zhang Ruochen, and he owed Zhang Ruochen a huge favor. If Zhang Ruochen wanted to cooperate with the imperial government, he had to communicate with Bu Qianfan.

Bu Qianfan heard the message from Zhang Ruochen. He was still calm. He walked to Sui Han and the Fairy and said, “Motian Crown Prince and the three death knights have both been severely injured. It’s the best time to attack the immortal vampires.”

Sui Han looked to Bu Qianfan. He nodded and said, “I’ve talked to the Goddess just now. We’ll make the best plan to attack the immortal vampires now.”

Sui Han said ten names, and ten saints from the imperial government walked out.

Sui Han and Bu Qianfan led the ten human saints, performed the best body techniques and dashed toward the immortal vampires.

As for the other human saints, they stood still and prepared to help them at any time so that the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace didn’t ambush them.

The twelve human saints let out saint might. The gigantic power ripples shook the entire Dragon Fire Island.

“We have to fight after all.”

Ying Huo smiled and moved her body. She flew to behind the giant whirlpool, waved her sleeves and knocked out the whirlpool, hitting toward the twelve saints.

Hua La.

The giant rock on the ground was sucked in, making the whirlpool larger and larger. It had a diameter of a thousand feet, and there were tens of thousands of rocks spinning inside. The power ripples were fierce, forcing the human saints to stop.

The Fairy turned into a white trace of light and showed up in front of the whirlpool. She pressed forward, and the whirlpool

stopped spinning. Those rocks froze and fell onto the ground like rain.

“Immortal Empress, it’s me you should be fighting.”

A white light spot emerged between the eyebrows of the Fairy.

A red palace flew out of her head. It wasn’t a phantom, but a real godly temple. It was so large that nobody could see the edge of it. Nobody knew what it was made of, and how it could be hidden in the lower part of her head.

Ying Huo looked around with her eyes. She found herself in a godly temple, and Siming Goddess was standing across from her.

Ying Huo was still calm. She smiled. “You have a godly temple. No wonder you dare fight me.”

This godly temple was a real divine object. It was where gods used to live. It had the power of gods, containing mysterious power that ordinary people couldn’t envision.

Even if the Fairy controlled that godly temple, she didn’t even understand one-hundredth of this godly temple.

Obtaining this godly temple meant that the Fairy had great luck. Her power couldn’t be rivaled by normal mind power saints.

The Fairy said, “Do you really think you can walk out of the temple?”

“If I am trapped in the godly temple before the rules of the sky and land change, I might be stuck here. However, the rules of sky and land in Kunlun’s Field have completely changed. Many rules have been born, and I happen to comprehend a rule. I can easily leave the godly temple with that rule.” Ying Huo said confidently.

The Fairy said, “How did you know that rules of sky and land have changed?”

“If the Earth God Temple knows, the Immortal Temple also knows. Since the huge change at the end of the ancient time, the rules of the sky and land have changed again. The refining environment is superior to that of the ancient times. Many

lives become saints before they turn a hundred. I heard that it's easy for someone to become a God.”

Ying Huo squinted and said, “I heard that when the rules of sky and land changed, Empress Chi Yao went missing. Did the Empress change the rules of sky and land in Kunlun's Field with her own life? Has the Empress died?”

“You don't need to test me. The Empress will live forever, and she is immortal. When she comes back, you immortal vampires will go extinct.”

The Fairy stopped talking to Ying Huo. She pointed in the space, and thirty gleaming light engravings showed up in the godly temple. They turned into thirty lightning chains and hit toward Ying Huo.

When the two empresses were fighting each other, the twelve saints from the imperial government and the blood saints from the immortal vampire race were also fighting each other. The ground structure of Dragon Fire Island was solid, yet it still couldn't handle the fights among the saints. Soon, that area was leveled.

Zhang Ruochen was standing at the top of the mountain. He shot a glance at that godly temple and looked amazed.

“She has a real godly temple. That Siming Goddess is also incredible. I need to be more careful of this.”

Zhang Ruochen flew toward Ancestral Dragon Mountain like a trace of light.

The imperial government and immortal vampires were fighting each other, so they didn't have the capacity to fight him, which was why Zhang Ruochen had the guts to fight the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen attacked Ancestral Dragon Mountain not just because of their feud, but also his intention to kill a pure saint dragon to get a dragon pearl so that he could become a mid-class saint.

Chapter 1254 - Snatching The Dragon Pearl

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Counting the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, 12 Saint Beasts from Ancient Dragon Mountain had entered Yin Yang Sea.

Other than Demoness Xuezhen and Saint Beast Xuanwei that had died in Zhang Ruochen's hands, and the two that had died underground when trying to take the Nanling Dragon Fire, there were eight left.

Of the eight, the weakest was an upper-level Saint. The strongest was at the pinnacle of the Xuanhuang Realm.

Their bodies were all very strong. Some were descendants of divine beasts, some were Taigu Remains, and some were pure dragons. Even the upper-level Saint Beast had the horrifying ability to suppress Xuanhuang Realm Saints.

Since they could enter the Yin Yang Sea with the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, it meant that they were extraordinary.

However, the eight Saint Beasts all had different injuries. They were the weakest right now.

This moment was the best time to kill them.

“Young Manlong and Winged lords, come out to die!”

Zhang Ruochen strode forward with the Abyss Ancient Sword. Beams of sharp Sword Qi followed his footsteps. The aura about him grew stronger.

Earlier, the two young dragon lords had attacked the most fiercely, focusing on killing Zhang Ruochen. His energy had been focused on collecting the Nanling Dragon Fire and he couldn't be distracted, so he could only get hit.

Now that he'd successfully collected the Nanling Dragon Fire, he could let loose. He naturally wanted to take revenge on these two dragon lords.

“Zhang Ruochen,” the young Manlong Lord said, smiling. “The Holy Carnivorous Flower that you rely on the most is gravely injured. You've already used your biggest trump card, the Five Town Destructive Sacred Rune. Yet you still dare to enter the Ancient Dragon Mountain's camp. Are you here to search for death?”

The young Winged Dragon lord glanced at Zhang Ruochen and said indifferently, “You only collected a Nanling Dragon Fire and you think you're undefeatable? You can't even control the fire at will now, right?”

Earlier, the young Manlong Dragon lord had fought with Zhang Ruochen underground. He was clear about Zhang Ruochen's abilities, so he didn't fear Zhang Ruochen.

“You were hurt too earlier, right?” he asked. “If I were you, I'd hide somewhere and lick my wounds or run out of Dragon Fire Island with my tail down. I wouldn't come here to look for humiliation. You think you can take revenge? Your cultivation isn't anywhere close to that level.”

The Saints from the imperial court and Nine Li Palace all paid attention to Zhang Ruochen's moves. They thought he'd overdone it too.

No matter how strong someone was, how could he fight seven Saint Beasts? Plus, none of the seven were easy to deal with. They were all extremely strong.

Of all the people, only Wan Huayu was confident in Zhang Ruochen. She didn't think he was looking for humiliation. He might be able to do things that regular people couldn't.

The scene of Zhang Ruochen fighting 19 Beast Kings in the Blue Dragon Void World was still fresh in her mind. It had

really affected her at that time.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes met with the young Manlong Dragon lord's. "Oh?" he said simply. "Then I'll kill you first."

Kaboom.

Sword intent within Zhang Ruochen seemed to explode and charge into the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The sword trembled and whistled. It flew toward the young Manlong Dragon lord's forehead as a streak of black light.

"You really dare to attack? Then I'll kill you first!"

Even in human form, the young Manlong Dragon lord was more than 20 meters tall. He was a one-armed giant. When he roared, the entire ground trembled.

Hefting up the dozen-meter-long axe, he poured Holy Qi into it continuously. Thousands of ancient veins appeared on the huge axe. These veins rushed out of the blade, forming a dark shield of light. It stretched hundreds of meters from the ground to the sky.

Boom!

Sword Qi shot in all directions when the Abyss Ancient Sword hit the light shield. It could only produce a huge sound without penetrating it.

The young Manlong Dragon lord's eyes grew scornful. "Zhang Ruochen, do you know my true abilities now? With your cultivation, you won't even be able to break through my defense... What..."

Before he could finish, he saw Zhang Ruochen fly over from the back. He slammed a palm on the Abyss Ancient Sword's hilt. Then Nanling Dragon Fire poured out of his palm. It passed through the sword, spreading toward the light shield.

Boom.

The light shield shattered. The young Manlong Dragon lord's expression changed drastically. He hurriedly waved his axe, attacking the incoming Abyss Ancient Sword.

The young Manlong Dragon lord's huge axe wasn't an ordinary weapon. It was an ancient weapon, tempered by the Saints of the Manlong Dragon Tribe. It contained bounding Dragon Qi.

It struck down and more than 100 dragon shadows flew out of the sharp side. The two weapons clashed violently and the Abyss Ancient Sword was forced back.

But before the young Manlong Dragon lord could become proud, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move to appear above his head. He slammed a palm down.

"How is this possible..."

The young Manlong Dragon lord used a physical technique. His body shook violently. His head was safe, but Zhang Ruochen's palm print hit his shoulder.

Crack.

His shoulder was pulverized. A finger's-width hole stretched from his chest to his back. His arm dropped down, losing all strength. The huge axe fell to the ground too.

The young Manlong Dragon lord let out a muffled grunt and retreated hurriedly.

"Do you still think you're so powerful?"

Zhang Ruochen obviously wouldn't give the young Manlong Dragon lord a chance to breathe. He reached out, collecting the Abyss Ancient Sword. Then, with a long trail of Sword Qi, he carried the Nanling Dragon Fire and cut down.

"Zhang Ruochen, don't get too proud. If I hadn't been injured earlier, you wouldn't be my match."

Clenching his jaw, the young Manlong Dragon lord used a top physical technique of the dragon race. He dodged quickly, not daring to touch the Abyss Ancient Sword and Nanling Dragon Fire.

He was actually very shocked. Zhang Ruochen's power was much stronger than when they were underground. Even if the young lord wasn't hurt, he might not be Zhang Ruochen's match either.

How could his combat power improve so much in such a short time? This man's rate of growth was probably even faster than the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

"You better be careful. My sword carries the Nanling Dragon Fire. If you get touched, you'll be burned to ashes."

While speaking, Zhang Ruochen's attacks grew faster.

The young Manlong Dragon lord was extremely terrified. Feeling the threat of death, he roared, "Why aren't you all helping me to kill Zhang Ruochen?"

The young Winged Dragon lord sighed. "You can't even defeat a lower-level Saint. Such an embarrassment."

He didn't just sit and watch. Stopping to heal himself, he spat out the Sky-piercing Dragon Thorn. Holding it, he transformed into a silver streak and rushed at Zhang Ruochen.

Roar!

The other five Saint Beasts stood up too. Strong Holy Qi radiated from them as they prepared to enter the battle.

Just then, a golden cloud appeared above the five Saint Beasts. A white deity print the size of a pavilion crushed down from the sky.

The Heir Stamp.

It released a gust of Emperor Qi. Like ten thousand mountains falling at once, the five Saint Beasts were unable to move. They could only roar and howl.

All the Saints present knew that Huang Yanchen must have acted.

"The Heir Stamp is the strongest weapon produced by the Empress, no doubt, but it can't be this strong. How can Huang Yanchen suppress five Saint Beasts as a lower-level Saint?"

"Huang Yanchen must not be controlling the Heir Stamp alone. There's another hidden strong figure on their side."

...

The Saints that weren't fighting all looked for Huang Yanchen. They really wanted to know if there was another strong figure hidden in the shadows.

Zhang Ruochen had beaten up the young Manlong Dragon lord miserably. He could only escape. He didn't look like the young lord of a dragon tribe at all. He was no different from a dog in water.

"Zhang Ruochen, when I enter the Xuanhuang Realm, it'll be the day you die," he roared angrily, eyes totally bloodshot.

He was at a life-or-death moment, so he didn't have concerns anymore. Activating the Nanling Dragon Fire within him, he tried for the Xuanhuang Realm with all his might.

"Zhang Ruochen, take my hit first!"

The young Winged Dragon lord shone with brilliant silver light. Transforming into a ball of silver light, he crushed toward Zhang Ruochen. He was buying time for the young Manlong Dragon lord to make a breakthrough.

The young Winged Dragon lord wasn't weak. He was only at the pinnacle of the upper Saint Realm, but he had pure dragon blood. He was able to fight across realms and had once killed a Xuanhuang Realm Saint Beast.

If Zhang Ruochen continued after the young Manlong Dragon Lord, he would definitely get hit by the young Winged Dragon lord. Then even if he didn't die, he would probably lose the ability to continue fighting.

Zhang Ruochen stopped. Instead of turning, he looked back in the corner of his eye. Murderous light flashed past his eyes.

"Die!"

The young Winged Dragon lord rushed out of the silver ball of light. Holding the Sky-piercing Dragon Thorn, he stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's back. But Zhang Ruochen just stood there without dodging.

Even the imperial court Saints in the distance held their breath nervously. They thought that Zhang Ruochen had frozen under

the young Winged Dragon lord's power and was too scared to move.

“Zhang Ruochen, why aren't you attacking! If you don't attack, you should hide!”

Wan Huayu's eyes widened. She stared as the Sky-piercing Dragon Thorn got closer and closer. Even she felt suffocated from the tension. She worried that Zhang Ruochen would actually die under the Sky-piercing Dragon Thorn.

Whoosh!

The next moment, everyone's vision blurred. Zhang Ruochen vanished from the spot. He'd turned into a sword.

Black sword light flashed by, darkening the entire Dragon Fire Island.

Poof.

The young Winged Dragon lord's body was split in half by the sword light. Holding the long sword, Zhang Ruochen walked out from the two halves. He seemed very composed and elegant, but his sword was still shining with sharp light. People were terrified.

Sizzle, sizzle.

The Nanling Dragon Fire on the sword burned the two halves of the dragon corpse. It quickly turned to ashes.

Zhang Ruochen opened his left hand. There was a silver dragon pearl in his palm. He'd dug it out of the young Winged Dragon lord when he killed him.

“With this pure Saint Dragon pearl, I'll be able to enter the mid-level.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Then his smile froze. He spun around and stared at the young Manlong Dragon lord.

Roar!

An earth-trembling dragon roar fell from the young Manlong Dragon lord's mouth. It formed nine rings of soundwaves that rushed in all directions. All the rocks in the soundwaves' path exploded. The three mountains closest to the dragon collapsed.

“He entered the Xuanhuang Realm?”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression grew solemn.

Chapter 1255 - The Power of Kitchen Knife

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The voice ripples were transmitted to Zhang Ruochen, breaking the saintly soul domain, knocking him back. Each step Zhang Ruochen took, the ground caved in.

Zhang Ruochen balanced himself again and created a saint soul domain. At the same time, he triggered the Ten Saints Blood Armor and covered his body.

Zhang Ruochen was worried that he couldn't control Nanling Dragon Fire well and he might burn the Ten Saints Blood Armor, so he didn't use it. Now, he was fighting Manlong Dragon Lord, so he had to wear it.

Manlong Dragon Lord roared, "Zhang Ruochen, time for you to die!"

Two different holy Qi, black and yellow, gushed out of Manlong Dragon Lord's body. They spun rapidly and formed a gigantic whirlpool.

They were the colors of Xuanhuang.

Hong Long Long!

The whirlpool kept spinning, and it rushed to Zhang Ruochen.

A black dragon claw reached out from the center of the whirlpool, and it hit toward Zhang Ruochen like a five-finger mountain.

Zhang Ruochen looked up, and the sky turned dark. There were scales everywhere in his eyes, and the space seemed to have been frozen, suffocating people.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized rules of space, and he tore the space apart, cutting toward the dragon claw in the sky.

The dragon claw dissipated into dragon Qi and flew back to the whirlpool.

“It’s only a dragon Qi.”

Zhang Ruochen looked more solemn.

Manlong Dragon Lord after entering Xuanhuang Realm was indeed incredible. Even a trace of dragon Qi could suppress a saint at Xuanhuang realm.

Hong!

Hong!

...

Nine dragon claws extended out of the whirlpool, and each of them was like a black mountain, slapping toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stepped back and tore the space apart.

However, a dragon claw struck Zhang Ruochen regardless.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of ten saints and performed Seven-Apertures Blood Palm, wielding forty-eight times the power, clashing with the dragon claw.

Peng.

An earth-shattering power gushed out of the dragon claw, trembling the body of Zhang Ruochen, who was knocked away until he was more than ten miles away.

All the saints from the imperial government were horrified.

A war saint said, “Impressive. The power of Manlong Dragon Lord can rival half of a saint at Absolute Land Realm. He must be the most powerful being among those saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain.”

Wan Huayu said, “Manlong Dragon Lord might not be the strongest great being from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, but

among the saints who entered Yin and Yang Ocean, few can rival him.”

Qi Sheng, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Chi Wansui, Sui Han and Zhang Ruochen indeed had incredible body constitution and great potential, but they were only lower-class saints. They couldn't rival a great being like Manlong Dragon Lord yet.

“Zhang Ruochen's in deep trouble now. He chased Manlong Dragon Lord like that before. Manlong Dragon Lord will definitely avenge himself.”

The saint beasts from Nine Li Palace didn't want to choose sides, but they still wished that the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain could suppress Zhang Ruochen so that human beings wouldn't steal all the thunder.

Blackie let out a trace of mind power. “We've obtained a dragon pearl. Let's leave Dragon Fire Island now. There's no need to keep fighting Ancestral Dragon Mountain.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed. This was a great chance to annihilate Ancestral Dragon Mountain, yet Manlong Dragon Lord had made a breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen transmitted a trace of mind power to Blackie, which said, “We can't leave now. Ao Xinyan hasn't left the volcano yet. Let Qing Mo come and help me.”

Zhang Ruochen had to ask Qing Mo for help.

That girl was indeed timid and rarely fought others, but she was a great force.

Blackie said in the formation, “How could I have forgotten about her!”

“Who?” Huang Yanchen asked.

“The princess from the divine dragon half-human race, Ao Xinyan.” Blackie said.

Huang Yanchen said, “It's her. No wonder Zhang Ruochen didn't want me to come to Yin and Yang Ocean. This is the reason.”

Blackie didn't want to explain to Huang Yanchen. It would leave it to Zhang Ruochen. "Take back your heir stamp. I'll activate Fighting Fire God Formation to suppress the five saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain. Girl Qing Mo, help Zhang Ruochen to fight Manlong Dragon Lord."

"I'm not going. Even Mr. Zhang can't fight Manlong Dragon Lord, how can I fight him?"

Qing Mo's face turned pale, and she looked frightened. She didn't dare fight Manlong Dragon Lord.

In the end, Huang Yanchen went to convince Qing Mo to do it.

Yet Qing Mo was still very scared, and she could barely walk out of the hidden formation.

As Zhang Ruochen entered the volcano, Blackie was setting up the formation, including Fighting Fire God Formation, which was more complete than the one used to fight against Demoness Xue Zhen, and it was more powerful.

After Huang Yanchen took back the heir stamp, Blackie activated Fighting Fire God Formation, and the ground around it started to burn. All five saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain were immediately trapped in the formation.

In another direction, Zhang Ruochen was fighting Manlong Dragon Lord, and they were in a stalemate.

If Zhang Ruochen didn't want to fight, even saints at the Absolute Ground Realm couldn't hurt him.

Manlong Dragon Lord yelled in the whirlpool, "Zhang Ruochen, fight me instead of running away."

Zhang Ruochen stopped, looked at the whirlpool in the sky and said, "I can't fight you now, but when I become a mid-class saint, I'll definitely fight you again. I have something else to do, so I'll invite a friend to fight you now."

Zhang Ruochen took a look behind him at Qing Mo. "You should be able to fight it now."

Qing Mo kept shaking her head. Her voice was trembling, and she said, "You fight with him. I'll help you."

“No need to fear it. Just treat it like an ingredient. I heard that the meat of pure-blood savage dragons is very fresh,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Really?”

Qing Mo’s eyes gleamed. She took out a kitchen knife and held it in her hand, staring at the giant whirlpool in the sky. She smiled. “I haven’t cooked with a pure-blood savage dragon saint yet. I’m afraid that I can’t fight it.”

There were bizarre engravings on her kitchen knife. They formed a divine picture, giving out silver light spots.

Manlong Dragon Lord sneered, “Are you insulting me, Zhang Ruochen? You’re asking a girl to fight me? I need to show you my real power.”

Ao.

Manlong Dragon Lord yelled.

A giant blue axe ascended from the whirlpool, and Manlong Dragon Lord slashed down, and more than a hundred dragon shadows flew out of the axe as if they were going to cut Dragon Fire Island in half.

It seemed that the air above Dragon Fire Island was about to be sucked out. All the saints stared at that giant axe, and they felt an invisible pressure above their heads.

“No wonder it’s an ancestral device from the savage dragon race. How powerful the ripples are.”

“With the power of the ancestral device, Manlong Dragon Lord can rival some saints at the Absolute Ground Realm.”

“Zhang Ruochen missed the chance to get away. Even if he performs the power of space, he might not be able to run away. The strike from Manlong Dragon Lord trembled the space. He can’t perform the power of space at his will.”

...

Zhang Ruochen looked calm, and he looked to Qing Mo.

Qing Mo rolled up her sleeves and showed a bit of her arms. She spun the kitchen knife in her hand, and the silver light

became lighter and lighter.

Peng.

The kitchen knife and the blue axe clashed with each other, and the knife cut the blue axe in half easily.

The kitchen knife's power wasn't weakened. It flew into the whirlpool, hitting its center.

A large cluster of blood-red mist emanated from the center of the whirlpool, and then, Manlong Dragon Lord yelled in agony, "My ear..."

The whirlpool dissipated in the sky.

The body of Manlong Dragon Lord showed up, and its head was bleeding. A dragon ear fell on the ground.

When it saw the broken axe on the ground, it unraveled and yelled, "You destroyed my ancestral device and cut my ear. You're dying today!"

Qing Mo put back her silver knife, and she was scared by Manlong Dragon Lord's yelling. She looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Just stay. What if it kills me?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. Qing Mo was much stronger than Manlong Dragon Lord, yet she was still afraid of him. He didn't know what to say.

"I'll leave him with you. I have something else to deal with."

Zhang Ruochen flew toward the volcano like a shadow.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the bottom after arriving at the top of the volcano.

Manlong Dragon Lord tried to chase Qing Mo, and it couldn't catch up with her at all. Instead, one of its dragon ears was cut off by Qing Mo again.

"I can't understand Qing Mo. Perhaps she's as powerful as the two goddesses from the Earth God Temple and Immortal Temple."

Zhang Ruochen had been worried that Qing Mo might not be able to deal with it, but now, his worries made no sense.

Suddenly, a layer of blue fire emerged from the volcano, and it became brighter and brighter, and it became hotter and hotter.

Zhang Ruochen was dazed and stepped back.

Hua.

Black Li Prince rushed out of the volcano like a trace of black light. There was a blue fiery dragon that was ten feet long chasing it.

Black Li Prince didn't tame the Nanling Dragon Fire. Instead, it was severely injured, and its body looked like a piece of coal, and its tail was melted. It had to run as fast as possible.

A mature Nanling Dragon Fire had great intelligence, and it kept chasing Black Li Prince

Chapter 1256 - Surrounded By Strong Enemies

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Prince Black Li's body wasn't much weaker than Zhang Ruochen, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Qi Sheng, and Chi Wansui. In fact, he had become a Saint a few years earlier than them. He was already in the mid-level.

His combat ability was extraordinary. He could easily kill a Saint that was one or two realms higher, let alone someone in his own realm.

However, he wasn't able to successfully collect a beam of Nanling Dragon Fire and was instead heavily injured.

“The prince is here. Hurry and drive back the Nanling Dragon Fire chasing after him.”

The Saint Beasts of the Nine Li Palace feared for Prince Black Li's safety. They all took out their ancient weapons and attacked the 30-foot-long blue fire dragon.

Sizzle, sizzle.

The weapons melted before they could hit the blue fire dragon, melting and dripping onto the ground.

The Nanling Dragon Fire was extremely terrifying. Ancient weapons melted like wax when touching it.

Four ancient weapons destroyed one after another, even the Saint Beasts of the Nine Li Palace grew fearful. They didn't continue attacking. Each weapon was invaluable. They were heartbroken each time one was destroyed.

Prince White Li couldn't successfully take a mature Nanling Dragon Fire, but Zhang Ruochen was still shocked. "He failed but survived," he murmured to himself. "This black cat must have a powerful defensive treasure inside him."

Zhang Ruochen wondered if he should help the cat drive away the Nanling Dragon Fire to make an ally.

Just then, another strangely powerful aura came from the distance. Blinding white light emerged on the horizon and a beautiful white figure walked out. It was a young man in his twenties. He had long white hair, a tall and thin figure, and handsome features. There was a silver paw print on his cheek.

It was Prince White Li, the star of the young Saint Beasts of Nine Li Palace.

"Prince White Li is here!"

"Since Prince White Li is here, he must be able to save Prince Black Li."

...

The Saint Beasts of Nine Li Palace all let out a sigh. They looked at Prince White Li with respect and reverence. Others lowered their heads, not daring to meet his eyes.

Prince White Li's eyes were cold. He looked up at the sky.

Whoosh!

Extending a slender arm, a white iron ring spun on his wrist. It tinkled like a lovely windchime.

Then the white ring flew out, producing a string of bursts. It hit the blue fire dragon on the waist, cutting the 30-foot-long dragon in half.

Prince White Li stood tall on the ground. Opening his hand, he collected back the white ring. Then he put his arm back behind his back, his expression cold again.

"He'd actually scattered a mature Nanling Dragon Fire. His abilities are quite terrifying."

The Saints there were all impressed.

“How come such a powerful figure doesn’t go collect some Nanling Dragon Fire?” someone wondered.

A huge cat with dragon scales scoffed. “Prince White Li’s physique is extremely Yin and cold. Why would he collect Nanling Dragon Fire? Even if he wants to collect something, it would be the Extreme Yin Dragon Qi.”

Prince Black Li landed on the ground and glanced at Prince White Li. Without saying anything, he swallowed a saint medicine leaf and started healing.

A long cry came from below the volcano.

Chi Wansui flew out from underground, rushing into the sky. A blue fire dragon was tangled around his body. The light it emitted was even brighter than the sun.

Half of his body was burnt. On many parts, the flesh was burned away, revealing the white bone. Only a ring of green light radiated from his head, fending off the Nanling Dragon Fire so that it was unharmed.

Chi Wansui’s skeleton was special. His bones had lines of dragon veins burned into them. Even the Nanling Dragon Fire couldn’t destroy it.

Boom.

Chi Wansui plummeted from the sky and hit the ground. After the loud boom, the land caved in. The surrounding rock melted into liquid. However, the blue dragon fire was still wrapped around him. It hadn’t been extinguished.

He struggled while roaring. Crashing around, Chi Wansui toppled the mountains on Dragon Fire Island. Anyone could see that he was suffering from unimaginable pain.

“Even Chi Wansui failed to collect it?”

“He’s the next highest talent of the royal family, after the Empress. The entire royal family places great hopes in him and have used the best resources to train him since childhood. The Empress even taught him some things personally.”

“I heard that the royal family used an ancient secret spell to implant the bones of an ancient Saint of the Chi Family into

his body. It helps him cultivate his body and comprehend the Saintly Way.”

“Even the Nanling Dragon Fire can’t burn his bones. It might really be a Supreme Saint’s bones.”

...

No one in this world could be spoiled by the heavens. But Chi Wansui was spoiled by the entire First Central Empire. The resources that he enjoyed since childhood were multiple times more than what Zhang Ruochen and the others had. Even a pig would be able to develop a top physique with them.

Chi Wansui also had extraordinary talent. With the accumulation of resources, he naturally became a top figure.

Of the same generation, only Zhang Ruochen, Xue Wuye, and Monk Lidi were a bit stronger than him. Of course, their current achievements were because those three had unimaginable luck and talent, as well as persistent hard work.

The blue dragon fire wrapped around Chi Wansui’s body. Others couldn’t help him at all. If he wanted to live, he had to rely on himself.

“A mature Nanling Dragon Fire is too hard to collect. Even Prince Black Li and Chi Wansui failed. How did Zhang Ruochen do it?”

“He’s the Time and Space Descendant with great fate. We can’t compare to him.”

...

Just then, the dragon patterns on Chi Wansui’s bones shone with golden light. It flowed quickly toward his arms.

Boom.

Leaning back, he roared. Horrifying power burst from his arms, tearing apart the blue fire dragon.

He jumped and punched ten times. He shattered the Nanling Dragon Fire in the air into dozens of small sparks.

Rules of Saintly Way pulled the small sparks into Chi Wansui’s Sea of Qi. Then he sat on the ground, arms forming a

circle. A ball of dark Holy Qi surged out of his forehead. It transformed into a small Qi flame that enveloped him.

The power that Chi Wansui used to shatter the blue fire dragon has surpassed a Xuanhuang Saint. It must be hidden in his bones.

Zhang Ruochen stored this detail in his mind. If he fought with Chi Wansui later, he'd have to be careful of this trump card so he wasn't caught off-guard.

Chi Wansui couldn't collect a mature Nanling Dragon Fire, but he'd gotten dozens of sparks. This was a great achievement too.

But compared to Zhang Ruochen, no matter how many sparks he collected, he could only use it to temper his body and help with his cultivation. He couldn't release the Nanling Dragon Fire as an attack.

Now, only Qi Sheng and the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't have the chance to collect a mature Nanling Dragon Fire.

Between them, Zhang Ruochen thought it was more possible for the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. After all, his tribe and the Divine Dragons were just as strong in ancient times.

Plus, a dragon had more advantages in taking Nanling Dragon Fire.

Zhang Ruochen jumped into the volcano. He entered the boiling lava to find Ao Xinyan. She was hiding in a relatively obscure place. When Zhang Ruochen found her, she'd successfully collected a Nanling Dragon Fire spark.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

After all, the strong Saint Beasts had all failed and turned to dust. Ao Xinyan was only a First Trial Pre-Saint, but she'd succeeded. This warranted shock.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan was very excited. "Team Leader, you came just in time. Please protect me. I'm going to do my second Pre-Saint Trial."

“You should repress your cultivation and do that after we leave Dragon Fire Island. Come with me now.”

Zhang Ruochen was about to take Ao Xinyan away, when strong Holy Qi waves came from underground. A heat wave ten times hotter than the lava hit him in the face.

“Zhang Ruochen, where are you going?”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon’s roar sounded. Then a mass of Nanling Dragon Fire surged out of the lava, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan.

“He’d really successfully collected a mature Nanling Dragon Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. Extending a right hand, the seven apertures on his palm opened up. He also attacked with Nanling Dragon Fire.

Boom.

The two bursts clashed. They resolved each other, but the surrounding temperature rose higher and higher. With Ao Xinyan’s cultivation, even the Saint King Dragon Pearl couldn’t protect her. She was about to melt.

Seeing that her situation was bad, Zhang Ruochen used spatial power and grabbed her wrist. He used the Spatial Move and disappeared from the lava.

The next moment, they appeared above the volcano. Ao Xinyan hugged Zhang Ruochen tightly. She still hadn’t recovered from her fear. It had been too dangerous. Any misstep would’ve destroyed her.

Huang Yanchen stood inside an invisibility formation and looked at the distant volcano. “They seem...” she murmured to herself. “Very close.”

Blackie sighed. “After all, Zhang Ruochen did something wrong to her.”

“What?” Huang Yanchen glanced at it.

Blackie had misspoken. It quickly closed its mouth, pretending that it hadn’t heard anything. It continued to control the

Fighting Fire God Formation to repress the five Saint Beasts of the Ancient Dragon Mountain.

“Zhang Ruochen, you won’t be able to escape.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon rushed out of the volcano, transforming back into his original form.

Just then, a 20-mile-long demonic dragon appeared. It flew in the air, eyes burning with blue fire. It radiated with corrosive and demonic Qi.

Another deafening voice came from underground. “Count me in for killing Zhang Ruochen.”

A figure rushed out of the volcano. He had six wings on his back and was covered in Nanling Dragon Fire. It didn’t stop until it flew above Zhang Ruochen. It was Qi Sheng, the Qitian prince.

Chapter 1257 - Invincible at the Same Level

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qi Sheng have also tamed a mature Nanling Dragon Fire.”

All the saints on Dragon Fire Island were shocked.

Black Li Prince and Chi Wansui, who were recovering, opened their eyes at the same time.

Only creatures who had been in contact with the mature Nanling Dragon Fire knew how difficult it was to successfully tame them.

However, Zhang Ruochen, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qi Sheng had all succeeded, which meant they were as powerful as the divine dragons who were at the same level.

“I almost succeeded.”

Chi Wansui sighed, but he put away his frustration immediately.

It was okay to fail. There were other skills in the world that could rival Nanling Dragon Fire. The most important thing was not to lose the motivation and to keep fighting.

Above the volcano.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't scared at all facing Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qi Sheng at the same time. He smiled and said, “You're not my match. You need to keep refining before you can kill me.”

“You’re overestimating yourself!” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said, and then, a dragon scale that was more than a hundred feet long fell from his belly. It surged fifty thousand feet high, and it breathed out ancient dragon Qi.

That was the Ancestral Dragon Scale.

Qi Sheng grabbed God-killing Cross Shield, slapping it on the ground.

Hua La.

The black light from the Ancestral Dragon Scale and the blood-red divine light from God-killing Cross Shield intertwined with each other, freezing the space.

Zhang Ruochen tried to mobilize the rules of space, but he found that the flow of space rules became incredibly slow. He couldn’t tear the space apart, and he couldn’t perform spatial move either.

Ao Xinyan couldn’t breathe from the power of Ancestral Dragon Scale and God-killing Cross Shield, and she felt that her saint soul was being crushed.

Qi Sheng stood in the space, and he stepped on a blood-red cloud. Six different powers came from the six wings on his back. He stared at Zhang Ruochen and smiled. “Are you still so calm?”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged his shoulders. He shot a glance at the immortal vampires and Ancestral Dragon Mountain. He smiled. “You two are calm, so why can’t I be calm?”

The immortal vampires had been crushed by the saints from the imperial government. There used to be more than twenty blood saints, and now there were only thirteen blood saints.

Manlong Dragon Lord had also been crushed by Qing Mo. His ear, claw, tail and nose were all cut off. He became ‘naked.’

Qing Mo still wanted to get some ingredients. It cut the dragon tongue. Manlong Dragon Lord was terrified. He was being hunted by Qing Mo.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t mind fighting them.

The longer the fight lasted, the greater the losses that the immortal vampires and Ancestral Dragon Mountain would suffer.

“Let’s fight now.”

Two fiery pillars gushed out of the dragon eyes of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was calm. He took off a belt and pressed the belly of Ao Xinyan.

Hua La.

The blood-red belt gave off gleaming light. It turned into Ten Saints Armor and covered the body of Ao Xinyan.

Zhang Ruochen put his palm on her shoulder and pressed down. Ao Xinyan fell on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Nanling Dragon Fire rushing toward him. He reached out his palm and wielded another bit of blue fire.

Qi Sheng was following Zhang Ruochen. He said, “Zhang Ruochen gave his Ten Saints Blood Armor to a girl. Without the power of ten saints, how are you supposed to fight us?”

“I don’t need Ten Saints Blood Armor to fight you guys,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The saints who didn’t join the fight stared at the fight above the volcano.

A human elder who was more than three hundred years ago said, “Is Zhang Ruochen being too arrogant?”

“Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qi Sheng are both creatures as powerful as divine dragons. Almost no one can rival them at the same level. Does Zhang Ruochen really think he can fight them both?”

A saint beast from Nine Li Palace sneered, “Without the power of space and Ten Saints Blood Armor, Zhang Ruochen is a tiger without claws. I can’t believe he’s this arrogant. He needs to be taught a lesson and crushed.”

Wan Huayu was anxious. Even she didn't think Zhang Ruochen could win. After all, Qi Sheng and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon could crush a large group of people at the same level.

“Universe Divine-Stele Palm.”

Qi Sheng held up his hands, and a black divine tombstone that was more than a hundred feet long was condensed. There were blood-red engravings on the tombstone, giving out earth-shattering destruction Qi.

Universe Divine-Stele Palm was the most powerful palm technique from the immortal vampire race. If someone could complete it, even supreme saints would find it difficult to handle.

Blood Queen had used Universe Divine-Stele Palm to injure Emperor Qing.

A large amount of blood Qi was required to sustain Universe Divine-Stele Palm. Only a few people could make such accomplishments after Blood Queen.

Qi Sheng performed the palm technique and condensed the tombstone, which meant he had already accomplished something on Universe Divine-Stele Palm.

Even the saints at Xuanhuang Realm were a bit terrified seeing the tombstone shadow in the sky.

“Ten saints out.”

Qing Sheng yelled again, and the saint shadows rushed out of the Ten Saints Blood Armor. He combined them with his own power and suppressed Zhang Ruochen.

Qi Sheng performed his greatest technique to end the fight as soon as possible. He didn't want to give Zhang Ruochen any chance to fight back.

“You're dying today.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon sneered, and the Nanling Dragon Fire that gushed out of its eyes suppressed toward Zhang Ruochen.

“I’m not so sure about that!”

A powerful sword intent was let out of Zhang Ruochen’s body, empowering the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Sword Seven.”

The Abyss Ancient Sword kept spinning, and it turned into a black trace of light, going through the light pillars formed by Nanling Dragon Fire, flying toward Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was made of fortune iron, so Nanling Dragon Fire couldn’t damage it.

“How powerful the sword Qi is.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn’t dodge it at all. The Abyss Ancient Sword hit its left eye.

Peng. His eye exploded.

The Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through the head of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and his blood was spilled.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was severely injured. He couldn’t control Nanling Dragon Fire in his body. That broken eyeball was burnt to the ground.

As Zhang Ruochen performed his sword technique. He turned around, and holy Qi in his body rushed to his arms. The giant phantoms of a dragon and an elephant emerged beside him.

Hong Long. The two palm prints had the power of a dragon and an elephant, clashing with the black tombstone, giving out forceful energy ripples.

One of them was the most powerful palm technique from the immortal vampire race, one of them was the most powerful palm technique of the Thousand Buddha Way. It was difficult to say which palm technique was stronger.

There were no stronger or weaker among palm techniques.

There were stronger or weaker among people.

After a short while, the black tombstone cracked. Qi Sheng was knocked away and fell onto the ground.

He kneeled on the ground with one knee and spit out blood.

After the black divine tombstone cracked, the phantoms of dragon and elephant were also shattered. Zhang Ruochen was knocked away, and there was blood coming out of his mouth.

“I was injured by someone at the same level!”

Zhang Ruochen reached out his finger and wiped away his blood. He had to admit that he had underestimated Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qi Sheng.

The human saints and the saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace were all dazed.

Qitian Crown Prince and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were defeated after they teamed up?

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was still wounded, but not as seriously.

“Is Time and Space Descendant really invincible at the same level?”

“Zhang Ruochen has refined the Tenth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm and obtained God’s Destiny. Unless the Thousand-bone Body and True-God body show up, no creatures can rival him. Qitian Crown Prince and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon are already impressive enough in that they can injure him.”

“The fight isn’t over yet. It’s too early to have a conclusion. The most powerful technique of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is Ancestral Dragon Scale, and the most powerful skill of Qitian Crown Prince is God-killing Cross Shield. Zhang Ruochen doesn’t have the power at the same level. How is he supposed to rival them?”

Everyone was rendered speechless.

Neither Ancestral Dragon Scale nor God-killing Cross Shield could be measured by common theories. Once the origin power inside the weapons was activated, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to resist them without weapons at the same level.

Ao!

An eyeball of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had been burnt to ashes. It couldn't be angrier as this was the biggest blow since it had started to refine. It hadn't been this furious even when Zhang Ruochen caught White Li Princess.

“You've infuriated me!”

A giant dragon that was more than twenty miles long ascended to the sky. It breathed out some blood Qi on the Ancestral Dragon Scale.

Golden inscriptions emerged on the Ancestral Dragon Scale, and thousands of dragon shadows flew out of the scale.

It stood on the ground and looked to the sky. The entire sky turned black, and there were golden inscriptions in the sky, giving out terrifying energy forces.

They were the forces of an ancestral dragon.

All the saints on Dragon Fire Island were trembling. No one could stay calm.

Immortal Goddess and Siming Goddess walked out of the godly temple at the same time. They were fighting before, but now, they stopped and looked to the golden engravings in the sky.

“Die.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon yelled and mobilized the power of the Ancestral Dragon Scale, hitting Zhang Ruochen.

There was destruction Qi in the sky and land. Some of the saints who were severely injured couldn't handle that pressure, so they fell on the ground.

Hua!

A trace of silver light surged and clashed with Ancestral Dragon Scale and made a deafening sound like divine thunder.

Ancestral Dragon Scale was knocked away and knocked off of Dragon Fire Island, and it fell into Yin and Yang Ocean.

Everyone saw that it was a kitchen knife after the silver light was frozen.

Chapter 1258 - Thousand Beast Treasure Mirror

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The overwhelming demonic Qi vanished from the sky. The heavy pressure dissipated too. Everyone let out a sigh of relief.

“It’s that kitchen knife again. If it dares to go against the Ancient Dragon Scale, it must not be a simple saint weapon.”

“Who exactly is the girl that Zhang Ruochen found? Why is she so strong?”

...

Qing Mo and the young Manlong Dragon lord’s battle earlier had already shocked all the Saints there. The previous hit floored all the people even more. Fear filled their eyes. They didn’t dare to underestimate Qing Mo anymore.

Even the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was stunned. He rushed down from the sky, widening his one eye at Qing Mo on the ground.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon’s head was like a menacing mountain. Qing Mo shrunk back in fear. She felt helpless and her legs kept trembling. Her teeth chattered too. She was like a frightened little chick.

In the distance, the young Manlong Dragon lord clenched his teeth at Qing Mo’s weak image. “Your Majesty, don’t be fooled by her appearances,” he reminded the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. “She’s just pretending. She’s actually very cynical, wanting to disguise herself as a lamb. She might have her eyes on your ears or claws.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was fearful too. Earlier, he had activated the Savage Barren Strength of the Ancient Dragon Scale, but it was still sent flying. A regular Saint would never have such power.

He screamed and turned his head. He flew out of the Dragon Fire Island and into the Yin Yang Sea to search for the Ancient Dragon Scale that had fallen into the water.

“I was so scared!”

Qing Mo clutched her chest with her small hands and let out a long sigh. Then she put away the silver knife in the air.

After the Ancient Dragon Scale was knocked out, the spatial lock was undone too. Zhang Ruochen brought Ao Xinyan across the space to Qing Mo’s side.

Zhang Ruochen was impressed too. He looked away from Qing Mo’s face and to the silver knife in her hands. He grew thoughtful.

“This is...my knife...”

Qing Mo quickly hid it behind her, fearing that Zhang Ruochen would steal it.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, shaking his head. “No one wants your knife. You did well. Let’s go. Let’s leave the Dragon Fire Sword.”

Just as they were about to leave, Zhang Ruochen felt a strong Holy Qi wave before him. A moment later, a handsome man with white hair appeared a few hundred feet before him.

Prince White Li’s robes fluttered despite the lack of wind. His eyes were very deep. “Zhang Ruochen, where is my sister?”

It was a monotone question, but it carried boundless murderous intent. Sand and pebbles flew within miles of them.

“You are Princess White Li’s brother?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

This man looked similar to Princess White Li. They both had exquisite features, white skin, and even their auras were similar. However, the man’s power waves were multiple times stronger than Princess White Li.

“I can sense that she’s still alive,” Prince White Li said. “If you hand her over, I can consider leaving your corpse complete.”

Prince White Li’s abilities were indeed strong, but Zhang Ruochen wasn’t afraid. He just smiled. “Don’t worry. Your sister is very well. She is currently cultivating in a wonderful place. You can meet her after she comes out.”

The scroll world was currently evolving into the Universe World. Right now, it was like the chaotic universe in primitive times. All sorts of spiritual medicines would be born.

Cultivating there, Princess White Li could improve immensely in a day. After coming out, she might even surpass Prince White Li.

Zhang Ruochen was speaking the truth, but Prince White Li obviously wouldn’t believe him. Without speaking further, he reached out a hand and pressed down, while uttering, “Taixuan Ice Qi.”

His hand transformed into a cat with sharp claws. Icy Qi surged out, forming icicles in the air. They connected the ground with the heavens. It was like the entire world was frozen.

Prince White Li was a Taigu Remain. He had the same powerful physique and talent as Princess White Li, but his cultivation had already entered the Saint Realm.

The Saints on Dragon Fire Island all fled, fearing they’d touch the Taixuan Ice Qi. Once they did, they may become ice statues.

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew how powerful Prince White Li was. Instead of going up against him, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move and appeared 100 miles away with Qing Mo and Ao Xinyan.

Then he hurried to the north of Dragon Fire Island. He rushed to the silver Dead Soul Ancient Ship on the seaside.

Zhang Ruochen had boarded a black ship coming here and stopped at the east side. However, there were many Evil Saint Intent Bodies and unknown dangers in it. How could he

continue to board it? There were ships stopped everywhere along the coast, so Zhang Ruochen naturally just chose one.

Huang Yanchen and Blackie had received Zhang Ruochen's message long ago. They'd already boarded the silver ship and were standing on the deck, waiting for them.

Zhang Ruochen's trio approached the seaside like three bolts of light.

"You collected a mature Nanling Dragon Fire and still want to escape?"

The Immortal Goddess stood in the sky with an evil smile. She opened her slender fingers. Red flames appeared in her palm. The flames wrapped around a circular badge, covered in beastly rune carvings.

Reaching out a finger, she flicked it lightly.

Roar!

One beastly rune grew brighter on the red badge. Finally, it even let out a beastly roar and rushed out of the badge, transforming into a true demon.

It was a Three-headed Dragon Lizard.

The Three-headed Dragon Lizard was a Grade Seven mid-level beast. It was more than 300 feet long and looked like a huge flying lizard, but it had three dragon heads.

Any Grade Seven mid-level beast was feared by Xuanhuang Saints. The more powerful ones could even fight with Saints in the Absolute Land Realm and Heaven Pass Realm.

The Immortal Goddess' fingers continued moving. Thirteen huge beasts flew out of the badge. There were three Grade Seven mid-level beasts and ten lower-level beasts.

Fourteen huge beasts in total flew in the air. They cast a large shadow on the ground.

"What's going on? How can she summon 14 Grade Seven beasts at once? Is it an illusion?"

Even with Zhang Ruochen's mindset, he was still fazed. If the Immortal Goddess really could control 14 Grade Seven beasts,

then she was stronger than an entire clan by herself. How could that not be shocking?

On the silver ship, Blackie's eyes widened. "Did she receive the legendary Thousand Beast Treasure Mirror?" it yelped.

Zhang Ruochen had a strong sense of danger. He used the Spatial Move again, bringing Qing Mo and Ao Xinyan to the silver ship.

At the same time, the four fastest mid-level beasts dove down. They attacked Zhang Ruochen, Qing Mo, Ao Xinyan, and Huang Yanchen.

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns. He struck the claws of a mid-level fiery turtledove.

Crackle!

The scales on the fiery turtledove shone with a layer of saintly light. It reduced the Abyss Ancient Sword's power. The sword only left a bloody gash on the claw without being able to cut it off.

In pain, the fiery turtledove screamed and flapped its huge fiery wings, rising up into the air.

Next, Zhang Ruochen ripped apart the space. He sent out a spatial crack, forcing back the Three-headed Dragon Lizard that was attacking Huang Yanchen.

Blackie transformed into a huge cat, radiating with powerful aura. It protected Ao Xinyan behind it and fought with another mid-level beast.

More and more savage beasts flew above the silver ship and kept attacking. Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Ao Xinyan were all injured. They had to use all their might to defend themselves.

Zhang Ruochen sensed slight ripples in Spiritual Qi and yelled, "The ship will sail soon. Everyone, keep going for a bit longer."

Indeed, the Spiritual Qi ripples above the silver ship grew stronger and stronger after a while. Bolts of thick silver

lightning formed, streaking between the ship and sky.

Kaboom.

The Dead Soul Ancient Ship trembled and then set off again, sailing toward the center of the Yin Yang Sea.

On the Dragon Fire Island, Prince White Li stood with his hands behind his back. He watched the silver ship fade into the distance. He also saw a huge black cat still fighting with the Grade Seven savage beasts.

He glanced at Prince Black Li. “Such a powerful black cat. It has already ripped apart three lower-level beasts. It must be a traitor of your race, right?”

Prince Black Li’s eyes shone with cold light. “It is indeed strong, but I’ve never seen it before. It shouldn’t be nameless in our race with those abilities.”

“How do you plan on taking care of this?” Prince White Li asked.

“Since it chose to go with Zhang Ruochen, then it is a traitor of our race,” Prince Black Li said. “It is the embarrassment of the Black Li Cat Race. If I meet it again, I will arrest it personally and bring it back for the clan leaders to judge.”

The silver ship was extremely fast and soon disappeared across the sea.

As the distance grew further and further, the Immortal Goddess couldn’t control the Grade Seven beasts anymore. She could only summon them back.

Of the 14 Grade Seven beasts she’d released, only eight returned alive. They rushed into the red badge.

“I’ve actually lost six Grade Seven beasts. Next time I see Zhang Ruochen, I will make him make up for the losses.”

The Immortal Goddess wasn’t upset about failing to kill Zhang Ruochen. She still had a smile.

Landing on the ground, she went to Qi Sheng and had a caring expression. “How are your injuries?”

“No problem.” Qi Sheng stood up straight. His red eyes stared in the direction that the silver ship had disappeared in. “Give me the Three-pattern Saint Blood Pill and 10,000 drops of divine blood. I will try for the mid-level now.”

The Immortal Goddess knew that Qi Sheng had been affected by the previous battle and wanted desperately to improve his cultivation. However, she still reminded him, “Entering the mid-level is only a matter of time for you. There’s no need to use the Three-pattern Saint Blood Pill, right? Using it for the Xuanhuang Realm is the best choice.”

“To me, having a breakthrough now is the best choice.”

Qi Sheng’s eyes were sharper than a sword. He stared at the Immortal Goddess. In the end, she could only sigh and take out the Saint Blood Pill and drops of divine blood.

“Zhang Ruochen has become your mortal enemy. I will do my best to help you kill him.”

Chapter 1259 - Divine Dragon Showed Up

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The silver ancient ghost boat gave out holy light, and it looked like a silver mountain that was hundreds of miles long, sailing on the ocean.

The ocean and the sky were painted silver.

There wasn't any evil spirit, and there wasn't demonic Qi surrounding the boat, instead, there was thick dragon Qi that filled the boat, and dozens of small silver dragons were sucked in after one breath.

Zhang Ruochen had inspected that boat carefully, and he found that the dragon Qi was not only harmless, but helpful in improving cultivation.

The refining efficiency on this silver ancient ghost boat was more than ten times higher than other places, and the cultivation was being constantly improved.

“If we can get that ancient ghost boat, it'll be the supreme refining ground for all the monks from First Imperial Empire,” Huang Yanchen said.

Ao Xinyan said, “Don't even hold that thought. In the distant past, many human saints who tried to obtain the ancient ghost boat died in Yin and Yang Ocean. None of them succeeded.”

Huang Yanchen shot a glance at her and smiled. “They were not powerful enough to succeed. If someone can break the shackles of Yin and Yang Ocean, it's easy to take away one or even two ancient ghost boats.”

Ao Xinyan didn't like Huang Yanchen, as she found her arrogant and reckless. To Ao Xinyan, Huang Yanchen was so proud only because she became a saint first. Did she really think that she was invincible?

Ao Xinyan stopped being so friendly. "Even Empress Chi Yao didn't dare get into Yin and Yang Ocean to get the ancient ghost boat. Who do you think can get it?"

"The rules of the sky and land are changing. Don't say anything with absolute certainty. You don't think anyone can do it because you haven't seen enough yet."

Huang Yanchen didn't even look at Ao Xinyan when she was talking.

Qing Mo was roasting a dragon ear in the distance.

That was the ear of Manlong Dragon Lord. It was more than thirty feet long and was more than ten thousand pounds. With Qing Mo cooking it, the fragrance from the dragon meat became thicker and thicker.

Zhang Ruochen sat beside the fire and kept practicing.

Blackie sat beside Zhang Ruochen, got close to Zhang Ruochen with its furry face, looked to Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan and said, "Don't you see they're almost fighting now?"

"They're not going to fight each other."

Zhang Ruochen didn't open his eyes and kept practicing.

"What if?" Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and looked to Blackie curiously. He asked, "Did you say something inappropriate to Yanchen?"

"No. How is that possible? I'll never tell her anything about what you've done," Blackie said. It didn't want to talk about that anymore as it knew that it was lying. It walked away from Zhang Ruochen and got close to Qing Mo.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Blackie must've said something inappropriate again. He stopped practicing and walked to

Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Huang Yanchen and said, “Princess Yan, your cultivation has reached a limit. You can try to pass the second pre-saint trial on the ancient ghost boat.”

Ao Xinyan didn't have a good time talking with Huang Yanchen. If it wasn't for the huge gap between her cultivation and Huang Yanchen's, she would've fought her already.

Besides, Ao Xinyan sensed that Huang Yanchen was trying to infuriate her.

If she made the first attack, it might end badly for her.

After seeing Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan explained, “This ancient ghost boat is relatively safe, but there're some unknown dangers on it. If we disturb the ghost spirits of the ancestral divine dragons by passing the pre-saint trial, we might bring danger to ourselves.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “The divine dragon bloodline in your body has awakened. You might be the only creature in this era that has the bloodline of the divine dragon. How will you bring us danger by passing the pre-saint trial? You might have some great luck by trying the pre-saint trial here.”

Nobody knew how powerful the gods were, however, Zhang Ruochen knew that there would be divine souls left in the sky and land even after the gods died.

With Ao Xinyan's body constitution, she would be protected by the remaining soul of divine dragons in Yin and Yang Ocean.

“Okay, leader, I trust you.”

Ao Xinyan took a look at Huang Yanchen, as she wanted to become stronger as well. She then picked a place and let out the holy Qi inside her body. A trial cloud was condensed.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen stepped back and stayed away from the trial clouds.

Hong Long.

The first trial lightning fell on the head of Ao Xinyan, which pierced through her body and fell on the silver ancient ghost boat. The boat was surrounded by the lightning, and it looked mesmerizing.

Huang Yanchen took a look at Zhang Ruochen and said, “The power of the lightning will melt everything she wears. There’ll only be a body left. Are you still going to appreciate it?”

Zhang Ruochen only cared about how Ao Xinyan was going to pass the trial. He didn’t want anything else.

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit embarrassed. He took a deep breath and looked away. He said, “It smells so good. Qing Mo should’ve finished the dragon ear already. Let’s go have a try.”

Qing Mo was indeed great at cooking. Any ingredient could be cooked deliciously in her hands.

The dragon meat of a pure-blood dragon was the best ingredient, and with the cooking skills of Qing Mo, the dragon meat made even Zhang Ruochen hungry.

Blackie was swallowing the meat, and it had finished more than three thousand pounds of dragon meat after a short while.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen couldn’t afford to wait anymore, otherwise, Blackie would finish the entire dragon meat.

Huang Yanchen was aloof when she was with Ao Xinyan, yet when she was fighting for the dragon meat against Zhang Ruochen and Blackie, she was like a crazy girl. She kicked Blackie away a couple of times.

Although the dragon meat weighed more than ten thousand pounds, they had all become saints, so they had great absorbing power. They had finished almost all the dragon meat after only a short while.

“I’m so hungry. Don’t fight me for that last piece of meat.”

Blackie reached out its claws and stuck out its tongue.

Huang Yanchen kicked Blackie away again and grabbed the last piece of dragon meat. She said, “Blackie, you’re already

so fat. Stop eating so much. I'll leave the last piece of dragon meat to Brother Chen!"

Huang Yanchen didn't even care whether Zhang Ruochen wanted it or not. She gave Zhang Ruochen the last piece of meat and sat on the ground, looking at him.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her, but he didn't eat the dragon meat in his hand.

"Why aren't you eating?" Huang Yanchen said.

"No, nothing..." Zhang Ruochen felt conflicted.

Chi Yao had said the same thing before. That tone, and that expression... They looked exactly the same.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were filled with all kinds of emotions. They were filled with love for a short moment, but then, hatred spilled out.

He held the last piece of dragon meat and said, "I'm not going to eat it... Blackie, you can eat it."

"Sure."

Blackie opened its mouth wide and took the dragon meat away.

Huang Yanchen couldn't be more furious. However, when she saw Zhang Ruochen's numb look, she suppressed her anger.

She seemed to have recalled something. She asked, "What happened, Brother Chen?"

Zhang Ruochen regained consciousness and said, "Nothing. I recalled something that happened before. Sorry, I didn't mean to..."

Ao!

There came a deafening dragon sound from the ancient ghost boat.

Zhang Ruochen was knocked unconscious by that sound. He fell on the ground.

"What happened? Did that ancient ghost boat come to life? Or is there some creature hidden in that boat?" Zhang Ruochen

asked.

Blackie lay on the ground and looked anxious. It said, “Perhaps a trace of the soul of the divine dragon awakened. Does it want to kill us?”

“The remaining soul of the divine dragon?”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth and used all his power. He raised his head and looked to Ao Xinyan.

A giant silver dragon showed up above Ao Xinyan. The dragon head itself occupied the entire sky.

There was only a head in sight, not the tail.

It was thrilling.

How was there a dragon of that size?

Zhang Ruochen thought that he was having an illusion. He looked in that direction again.

That silver dragon had disappeared!

Was that really an illusion?

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo and Blackie gradually recovered. They stood up and readjusted themselves.

That dragon roar was too terrifying. They still felt intimidated now.

Hua.

Ao Xinyan was glowing with silver light. She fell from the sky, and she was covered by a layer of the silver dragon-scaled armor. There were two pairs of silver dragon wings on her back.

Blackie’s eyes popped. It rushed to Ao Xinyan and said, “The force from that armor is similar to that of the ancient boat. Were they made of the same material? Where did you find it?”

Ao Xinyan hesitated for a bit and said, “The silver dragon armor showed up on my body after I passed the trial.”

“How could something like that happen? Is it armor made of divine dragon scales? Did the divine dragon really show up?”

Blackie exclaimed. At the same time, it reached out its claw and scratched the silver armor.

Chi!

There wasn't a mark left on the armor, instead, it kept letting out lightning light that hit the claws of Blackie.

“Something's wrong.”

Zhang Ruochen was sure that he didn't have any illusion.

Besides, Ao Xinyan must've obtained something more than armor.

Zhang Ruochen didn't ask her. Instead, he said,
“Congratulations on passing the second pre-saint trial.”

Ao Xinyan moved her lips. She hesitated for a long time before she said, “I...I have condensed a saint source.”

Chapter 1260 - Complete

True Dragon Body

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A First Trial Pre-Saint had only gone through one trial but had already formed a saintly source and entered the Saint Realm. How could that not be shocking?

“Really? Just forming a saintly source takes a long time. How can it be so fast?”

Even with Blackie’s experience, it was still in disbelief. It studied Ao Xinyan quizzically, suspecting that she’d received some extraordinary inheritance.

But even if she had some inheritance, she would need unimaginable help to instantly form a saintly source as a Pre-Saint.

It wasn’t that easy to become a Saint.

“Did a Divine Dragon’s soul remnant really descend just then?” Blackie asked again.

“Blackie,” Zhang Ruochen called, glaring at it.

No matter what had just happened, the only thing that was certain was that Ao Xinyan had received an unusual chance. This was her secret. She couldn’t say it out loud.

Everyone had a secret that couldn’t be revealed.

Ao Xinyan looked at Zhang Ruochen with gratefulness and regret. “I indeed met a lucky chance this trial and completed the True Dragon Body.”

The complete True Dragon Body was one of the strongest bodies. It was just as strong as a young Divine Dragon. In ancient times, young Divine Dragons rarely had opponents in the same realm. They represented the peak of combat ability.

Cultivating the True Dragon Body meant that she could become a Divine Dragon in the future. She would be equal to deities then.

Eyes brightening, Zhang Ruochen studied Ao Xinyan again. He discovered that her slender frame contained horrifying power waves.

Ao Xinyan's eyes shone hotly. "Team Leader, I'm powerful enough to fight against the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon now, right?"

"Your body isn't any weaker than him now," Zhang Ruochen said. "But you still have a ways to go."

Ao Xinyan wasn't satisfied. She wanted to say something, but Zhang Ruochen interrupted her.

"Your talent and comprehension are both very high," he continued. "You're part of the top group of the entire Kunlun's Field. However, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's talent and comprehension are once-in-a-millennium. His attainments in the Holy Way and saint spells are much stronger than you. Plus, he has the Ancient Dragon Scale and had just gotten a mature Nanling Dragon Fire. The gap between you just enlarged further."

Zhang Ruochen's comments were objective and truthful, but Ao Xinyan still didn't give up.

"The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is indeed much stronger than me in the Holy Way and saint spells. However, it's not impossible for me to catch up to or surpass him in the future."

"Having will and confidence is good."

Zhang Ruochen thought that Ao Xinyan might've gotten something incredible. Otherwise, she wouldn't say something with so much confidence.

“The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon indeed collected Nanling Dragon Fire,” Ao Xinyan continued. “But the Nanling Dragon Fire isn’t undefeatable. The Extreme Yin Dragon Qi can counter it.”

Blackie nodded. “Yes, the Nanling Dragon Fire and Extreme Yin Dragon Qi counter each other. If we go to the Yin center of the Yin Yang Sea and you successfully collect the Extreme Yin Dragon Qi, you’ll be able to go against the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart jumped. “What is the Yin center of the Yin Yang Sea?”

“It’s opposite the Yang center,” Ao Xinyan said. “The Divine Dragons call it the Abandoned Deep Sea. It’s much more dangerous than the underground of the Dragon Fire Island. Not even young Divine Dragons dared to go there. In the middle ages, very few of those who dared to venture into the Abandoned Deep Sea could come out alive.”

“Blackie,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Is your physical body sealed there?”

“Yes.” Blackie’s eyes rolled. Lowering its voice, it said, “The Dragon Sun Moon Mix may possibly be in the depths of the Abandoned Deep Sea.”

“How do you know such a secret?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“You aren’t just tricking us into finding your body in the Abandoned Deep Sea, right?” Ao Xinyan was quite familiar with Blackie, so she doubted its words.

“I never speak nonsense,” Blackie said coldly. “Naturally, I have evidence, but I can’t tell you two.”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged, seeming nonchalant. “I came to the Yin Yang Sea mainly to search for the recipe for the Six Saints to the Sky wine. I never had much hope for the Dragon Sun Moon Mix.”

“Finding the recipe for the Six Saints to the Sky wine depends on luck.”

Blackie had told Zhang Ruochen the truth. When the six human Saints had just produced this first batch of wine, they were attacked by a large group of Saint Beasts from the Nine Li Palace.

The six Saints wanted to destroy the recipe but didn't succeed.

The leader who'd killed the six Saints was a Saint Beast King of the Dragon Li Cat Race. The Saint Beast King had used the recipe to produce a batch of wine, but it wasn't nearly as effective as the original.

It didn't seem to have any effect on Saint Beasts either. It could only improve human bodies.

Thus, the Nine Li Palace didn't really value the recipe. Only the Saint Beast King kept it by his side.

Later, when the Saint Beast King was at the end of his life, he broke into the Yin Yang Sea. He wanted to find the chance to have a breakthrough and extend his life. However, he never came back.

This was why Blackie told Zhang Ruochen that the Six Saints to the Sky wine recipe was in Yin Yang Sea.

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Ruochen chuckled wryly. "The Yin Yang Sea is huge. Finding the Saint Beast King's body is like looking for a needle in the haystack."

"That's why I said it depends on luck. However..." Blackie paused before continuing, "I heard that the Saint Beast King was very strong in his old age but was very timid. If he entered the Yin Yang Sea, he definitely couldn't wander recklessly. He probably would've boarded a Dead Soul Ancient Ship and followed our route. Even if he died, he would've died along this route or on some other ship."

"Perhaps!" Zhang Ruochen said.

Next, Zhang Ruochen took out saint medicine for Huang Yanchen. She could refine it and try for a higher realm.

Seeing that Ao Xinyan had cultivated the True Dragon Body and reached the Saint Realm, Huang Yanchen seemed to feel

great pressure. She took the saint medicine and started cultivating.

Zhang Ruochen brought Ao Xinyan alone to the other end of the deck. He gazed at the boundless sea with his dark eyes. No one knew what he was thinking about right now.

Ao Xinyan stood behind him and asked, “Team Leader, if you want to know what I just experienced and received, I can tell you.” Then she quickly added in a low voice, “Only you.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t reply. Half a beat later, he finally said, “Everyone has different cultivation journeys. What you received and what you have aren’t important to me. You have your path, I have mine.”

“If not for this, then why did you want to see me alone?” Ao Xinyan was confused.

“Don’t you want to fight the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon? He has the Ancient Dragon Scale. It’s impossible for you to defeat him.”

Zhang Ruochen had witnessed the Savage Barren Strength of the Ancient Dragon Scale. It was terrifying, which is why he said that.

“I received the Divine Dragon Silver Armor,” Ao Xinyan said. “It might be able to stop the Ancient Dragon Scale.”

Zhang Ruochen had guesses, so he wasn’t shocked when Ao Xinyan said, “Divine Dragon Silver Armor.”

He just said calmly, “No matter how miraculous the Divine Dragon Silver Armor is, it is only defense. Are you willing to just keep getting hit? No matter how strong your defense is, it’ll be destroyed if you’re only passively getting hit.”

Ao Xinyan wanted to refute Zhang Ruochen, because the Divine Dragon Silver Armor wasn’t just a piece of armor. Like the Ten Saints Blood Armor, it could increase a cultivator’s strength and speed. With the addition of the Divine Dragon power, her combat abilities would be pushed to a greater level.

However, after thinking carefully, she realized that the armor had combat abilities, but the Ancient Dragon Scale also had

defensive abilities.

Comparing the two, the Divine Dragon Silver Armor was still mainly for defense. It couldn't compare to the attacks of the Ancient Dragon Scale.

"Team Leader, what did you want to say?" Ao Xinyan asked.

Zhang Ruochen touched his spatial ring. There was a flash and an Heir Stamp appeared in his hands. He passed it to Ao Xinyan. "Only the Heir Stamp can confront the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. I thought for a long time. It's the most suitable for me to give this Heir Stamp to you."

How precious the Heir Stamp was went without saying. It represented a prototype world. As long as the cultivator kept inserting Rules of Saintly Way, it would be able to evolve into a true world. By then, the Heir Stamp's power would be inconceivable.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't give away the Heir Stamp if he didn't have the Universe World.

Of course, only the best of the best could evolve the prototype world into a true world. It would be a waste if he gave it to an average Saint.

In the beginning, Zhang Ruochen had wanted to give the Heir Stamp to Han Qiu after she became a Saint. He wanted the prototype world to become a world of darkness after absorbing the Dark Rules. Then, it would definitely unleash incredible power.

But then, Han Qiu chose to leave...

Other than her, Zhang Ruochen had some other choices, such as Han Xue, Le, Mu Lingxi, and Murong Yue. In the end, he crossed them all out. Some weren't suitable for cultivating a world, others couldn't support it. Ao Xinyan came out in the end, impressing him greatly.

No one wanted to fight alone. Zhang Ruochen hoped Ao Xinyan could mature and become his right-hand follower. Perhaps the prototype world in the Heir Stamp could become a Dragon World after absorbing her Rules of Saintly Way.

Of course, the so-called “Dragon World” was only Zhang Ruochen’s wishes. Reaching that step was harder than becoming a deity.

Chapter 1261 - Divine Fire Showed Up Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ao Xinyan held the heir stamp and looked dazed. She couldn't believe that Zhang Ruochen would give her the heir stamp.

She wanted to refuse.

However, the heir stamp was so valuable that she didn't even know how to refuse the offer.

“We need to refine and control the heir stamp as soon as possible. Ancestral Dragon Mountain, Nine Li Palace, the imperial government and the immortal vampire race. I hope that you'll have the power to fight Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon by then.”

Zhang Ruochen patted Ao Xinyan's shoulders and left. He decided to internalize some of the accomplishments he made recently to improve herself.

Ao Xinyan had already reached the state of saint, so Zhang Ruochen couldn't slack either.

I'll refine the two saint sources using Nanling Dragon Fire, and after I completely purify the two saint sources, I'll go condense the third saint source, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen had an enormous lower abdomen, and he had thick holy Qi, which looked like an ocean of clouds.

A blue fiery dragon that was more than fifteen feet long was flying in the lower abdomen, which looked like a blue sun.

Holy Qi kept rushing toward it, and after being purified by Nanling Dragon Fire, the holy Qi turned blue. The sheer

amount decreased, but the purity and the quality surged.

Aside from that, Nanling Dragon Fire also absorbed part of the holy Qi, which lengthened the body of the blue fiery dragon.

“Nanling Dragon Fire in my body is only a very basic form of flames. It can only perform the most elementary attack skills. With the holy Qi being absorbed, Nanling Dragon Fire will definitely become stronger and stronger.”

Nanling Dragon Fire had its separate intelligence. It was also refining itself, and the destructive power would only become stronger.

Under the control of Zhang Ruochen, the blue fiery dragon flew toward the two saint sources in the sky. However, before it could take off, the blue fiery dragon was dragged by a force under the lower abdomen.

Ao!

Blue fiery dragon was trying to resist, but it was of no use.

Holy Qi under it started to spin rapidly, and it became a giant whirlpool that covered the entire lower abdomen.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked as well. He immediately let out a trace of mind power to inspect the bottom of the abdomen.

Hua.

A blue flame emerged from the center of the whirlpool, giving out gleaming light.

The blue flame was like a divine lamp that shone upon the sky and land. It was as large as a peanut, but it was able to suppress the blue fiery dragon that was fifteen feet long.

What kind of fire in the sky and land could suppress Nanling Dragon Fire?

“That’s... Divine Fire Jingmie?”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be more startled.

After he finished Tenth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm, he triggered Divine Fire Jingmie to refine the God’s Destiny.

After refining it, Divine Fire Jingmie dissipated. He didn't even know that there was a small flame left in the lower abdomen.

The blue fiery dragon lost the power to fight back. It kept spinning in the whirlpool, and the fire on its body turned into threads that were absorbed by Divine Fire Jingmie.

Divine Fire Jingmie kept getting stronger before it completely absorbed the blue fiery dragon. It turned into a blue fire that was at the size of a fist.

“Nanling Dragon Fire was swallowed by Divine Fire Jingmie?”

Zhang Ruochen let out a trace of mind power, which flew to Divine Fire Jingmie. He found that the blue fire was very docile and didn't attack his mind power.

The mind power got attached to Divine Fire Jingmie.

Zhang Ruochen found out that the saintly way rules inside Divine Fire Jingmie were different from those refined by him.

“Is it possible that Divine Fire Jingmie became a part of my body after I refined God's Destiny? Why haven't I realized it before?”

Zhang Ruochen tried to control Divine Fire Jingmie and brought a small piece of the flames out of his body. And then, a ball of flames showed up on his palm.

Zhang Ruochen flicked, and the blue fire flew away, falling into Yin and Yang Ocean.

Hong Long. In the next moment, the ocean started to burn, and bubbles emerged from the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased. He said, “No wonder it's Divine Fire Jingmie. It's stronger than Nanling Dragon Fire. Unfortunately, I only have a small piece of it. I need to keep nurturing it.” Even true saints and absolute saints would be intimidated by Divine Fire Jingmie.

Certainly, that small ball of fire wouldn't be a threat to them. For true saints and absolute saints, they could stand more than

a thousand miles away and still kill saints, so that small ball of Divine Fire Jingmie wasn't a danger to them at all.

And then, Zhang Ruochen mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie and purified the two saint sources he condensed.

"I'll condense the third saint source now."

Zhang Ruochen let out a palm way saint look, and then a giant phantom of a saint look showed up, and another golden dragon was winding around that saint look.

He had an easy time condensing the saint source. After a short while, he successfully condensed the third saint source, and it flew toward the sword master saint source and Emperor Ming saint source.

Zhang Ruochen recalled what had happened after the Emperor Ming saint source was created. He immediately mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie to separate those three saint sources.

Hua La.

A giant whirlpool showed up, centering on the Divine Fire Jingmie. The three saint sources were above the whirlpool, spinning around the fire.

"Divine Dragon Jingmie can solve repelling effects among the saint sources." Zhang Ruochen was relieved and started to condense a fourth saint source, palm way saint source.

Palm way saint look was a giant holy river, which crossed the lower abdomen. It took Zhang Ruochen a long time to condense that holy river into a saint source.

The fourth saint source also flew into the whirlpool and spun around Divine Fire Jingmie.

Every time he condensed a saint source, Zhang Ruochen could feel that his cultivation had been improved.

After that, Zhang Ruochen let out time saint look and space saint look, however, he couldn't succeed this time. The two saint looks didn't have a form, and they didn't show themselves. He couldn't make them into saint sources.

"How is that possible?"

Zhang Ruochen took out the ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’ and started to search through it. He started to read the instructions on the time saint look and space saint look, hoping that he could find an answer.

He indeed found something about those two saint looks.

On the fourteenth page of ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’, there was a line of explanation: “The nine ancient ways are all shapeless and formless. You can only comprehend them, and you can’t make them saint sources.”

“You can’t make the nine ancient ways into saint sources.”

Zhang Ruochen was relieved. He smiled. “Fortunately, it’s not because of the way I practiced.”

Condensing four saint sources was already something that no one could ever do before. Zhang Ruochen wasn’t greedy. Instead, he was already satisfied.

“Palm way saint source and fist way saint source were just condensed, so they need some time to be solidified. I’ll try to make it to a mid-class saint after all the four saint sources have been stabilized.”

Now that he couldn’t make a breakthrough, Zhang Ruochen could only borrow power from other places. He thought of Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was about to make a breakthrough now. The only thing that was stopping it was the complicated sources it had absorbed.

If it could become an upper-class saint, its power would rival a half saint at Absolute Ground Realm.

Zhang Ruochen talked to Carnivorous Holy Flower, and he knew that it had almost recovered. Zhang Ruochen then mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie to refine its holy power.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and took out his Ancient Abyss Sword, trying to improve it.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had the Ancestral Dragon Scale, Qitian Crown Prince had the God-killing Cross Shield,

Motian Crown Prince had the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, Chi Wansui had an heir stamp.

The weapons they had were no ordinary weapons. They had tremendous power which the Ancient Abyss Sword couldn't rival.

Without a weapon at that level, Zhang Ruochen would be at a severe disadvantage.

And then, Zhang Ruochen took out all the saint weapons in the space ring. There were eight thousand-patterns saint weapons and one hundred and twenty hundred-patterns saint weapons.

Most of those saint weapons were stored in the treasury of the Blue Dragon Dynasty, and some of them were trophies from the saints Zhang Ruochen had killed.

Even a master from a top-tier sect would be jealous seeing all those saint weapons. However, Zhang Ruochen devoted all of them to improving the Ancient Abyss Sword.

“How many inscriptions will there be on the Ancient Abyss Sword after refining all these saint weapons?”

Zhang Ruochen had some very special feelings for the Ancient Abyss Sword. He wished that the Ancient Abyss Sword could become a Ten-thousand-patterns Saint Weapon as soon as possible.

“No matter how many saint weapons the Ancient Abyss Sword absorbs, it can't rival the Ancestral Dragon Scale and God-killing Cross Shield.”

The Ancestral Dragon Scale, God-killing Cross Shield, Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, and heir stamp were not thousand-patterns saint weapons or ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons.

Those weapons had the power of a supreme saint or a God.

They weren't mere weapons, but represented great beings. If the user was powerful enough, they could trigger the power of that great being.

Such weapons were called 'supreme saint ancient weapons' or 'godly remains ancient weapons.'

Supreme saint weapons and godly remains ancient weapons were connected to other saint weapons to some extent. Actually, some of the thousand-patterns saint weapons and ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons carried the power of supreme saints.

Some supreme saint ancient weapons and godly remains ancient weapons were thousand-patterns saint weapons and ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, themselves, and their power would only surge after their origins were triggered.

Zhang Ruochen was impressed when the original savage barren power in the Ancestral Dragon Scale was triggered.

That power came from an ancestral dragon from the ancient times. Even saints at Heaven Pass Realm might not be able to resist it, not to mention Zhang Ruochen.

Only weapons at the same level could rival the Ancestral Dragon Scale.

The kitchen knife held by Qing Mo must have also been an impressive godly remains ancient weapon, otherwise, she wouldn't have had the power to knock away the Ancestral Dragon Scale.

Zhang Ruochen searched for a long time, and he could only find two things that could rival the Ancestral Dragon Scale and God-killing Cross Shield.

Chapter 1262 - Ancient Weapon Of The Nation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The first treasure was naturally the Buddha's sharira.

It contained all of the Buddha and Golden Dragon's power. You could refine and absorb it to inherit their unprecedented Saintly Way. It could also be used as offensive weapons with unmatched power. It was like a huge saintly ancient weapon.

Before the Golden Dragon died, he set four seals on the sharira. Zhang Ruochen had already undone three. If he undid the last layer, the sharira's full power would be released.

Zhang Ruochen had always planned on reaching the Saint Realm before undoing the last seal. Then he planned on absorbing the strength so he could maintain his super-fast cultivation speed in the Saint Realm. He wouldn't have to spend years or decades to have a breakthrough.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had dozens of saintly medicines and one Saint Dragon pearl. They could totally help him reach the mid-level of the Saint Realm. He didn't have to absorb the Buddhist Qi and Dragon Qi in the sharira.

The other treasure was a bit unique. Even Zhang Ruochen wasn't sure if it was a saintly ancient medicine or if it had been left behind by a deity.

Zhang Ruochen took it out of his spatial ring and placed it on the deck with a thud.

It was a 30-foot-tall bronze cauldron. It had four legs, two handles, and weighed 840,000 pounds. It was covered in rust with many unclear ancient runes under the rust.

“Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.”

He stood under the cauldron and reached out, touching the rusty legs. He could sense an ancient feeling radiating from it.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was the empire-guarding weapon. It would be used when worshipping the ancestors, various gods, and the heavens and earth. It carried the empire's fate.

After the Sacred Central Empire was destroyed, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was lost too, until the Moon-worship Demonic Sect received it. Zhang Ruochen bid for it at their Pearl Light Pavilion auction.

Some of the Saints of the Moon-worship Demonic Sect had put in a lot of effort to study the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, to no avail. They all thought that it was just a bronze ware with special material.

“How can it just be bronze ware if it's the Sacred Central Empire's empire-guarding weapon?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe this. Holy Qi spun within him and he sent a palm out.

Whum.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron made a sound like a Buddhist bell being rung. It flew out and hit the silver wall of the Dead Soul Ancient Ship.

Zhang Ruochen was now strong enough to dent a bronze mountain with a palm, let alone a bronze cauldron. However, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron wasn't distorted at all. Only a layer of rust on the surface fell off. The words on the cauldron became clearer.

“It really is indestructible. But what material is it really made out of?”

Zhang Ruochen pressed a palm on the surface and released his Spiritual Power to check. However, his Spiritual Power couldn't enter at all. It ricocheted back.

Then he released his Holy Qi to try activating the cauldron, but there was no reaction.

“The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron has experienced all large ceremonies since the founding of the Sacred Central Empire. It can't be a plain bronze ware and should have a pit of the ceremonies' power. How come it has no power waves?”

Eight hundred years ago, Emperor Ming had mentioned to Zhang Ruochen more than once that the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was the empire-guarding ancient weapon. It was evidently important.

No matter how sturdy it was, a plain bronze ware couldn't become the empire-guarding weapon. How could it carry an entire empire's fate?

Zhang Ruochen got an idea. He reached out his right hand and opened it. A ball of Divine Fire Jingmie was in his palm. It shone with dazzling blue light.

“I'll have to try with the Divine Fire Jingmie!”

Zhang Ruochen was worried the fire would destroy the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, so he controlled the fire carefully in the beginning. After all, saint weapons would melt quickly when touching Divine Fire Jingmie.

However, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron had no reaction when it touched the fire.

Zhang Ruochen grew fiercer. He used the Divine Fire Jingmie to burn the cauldron at full power.

Continuously releasing fire obviously used up Holy Qi. Even though Zhang Ruochen had four saintly sources, he started feeling exhausted too. His arms and legs trembled; sweat poured out of him.

“Even Divine Fire Jingmie can't hurt you. What exactly are you made out of?”

Zhang Ruochen felt defeated. He prepared to take back the Divine Fire Jingmie...

Crack!

An extremely weak sound came from the body of the cauldron. Taken aback, Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked up.

There was a crack on the surface of the cauldron. It was like a cracked eggshell. Shreds of golden light shone from the cracks.

There finally was a change!

Overjoyed, Zhang Ruochen activated the remaining bits of Holy Qi within him. He sent out Divine Fire Jingmie to continue burning.

Crack, crack.

More cracks sounded. More and more cracks appeared on the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, each one shining with dazzling light.

Blackie, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo and Ao Xinyan were all alerted. They hurried over. Looking at that huge divine cauldron, they could feel a suffocating aura awakening.

Kaboom.

The outer shell of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron fell off completely. A mass of golden light rushed onto Zhang Ruochen with bounding power. It sent him flying back.

Ao Xinyan and Huang Yanchen used physical techniques at almost the same time. Like two streaks of light, they appeared on either side of Zhang Ruochen. They dissolved the force and helped him land back on the deck.

Zhang Ruochen had almost used up his Holy Qi, so he was indeed a bit weak. However, his physical body was strong. Even if he used all his Holy Qi, he was still a strong cultivator. He quickly recovered and the weak feeling disappeared too.

“Is this the true appearance of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron?”

The cauldron before him was still made out of bronze, but there wasn't any rust. It was green like jade, and glittered.

The ancient golden words that rose up on the surface were so dense and innumerable. They seemed to be embedded in the bronze but also like part of the cauldron. Each word radiated with strong power waves.

“For tens of thousands of years, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron has only been used for ceremonies. Probably few people know

that its true form is under the outer shell.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He stepped toward the cauldron.

Merely the outer shell was almost indestructible and could only be removed by Divine Fire Jingmie. One could hardly imagine how amazing the true form was.

“This bronze cauldron is clearly an extraordinary weapon. I’ll help you test its power.”

With a whoosh, Blackie rushed out, arriving under the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. It pressed two paws on the cauldron and poured Holy Qi in.

The golden ancient runes on the cauldron shone even brighter. Blackie tried activating the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, but it was unmoved. There were no changes whatsoever.

“What does this mean? It obviously took in my Holy Qi, but there’s no reaction.”

Blackie couldn’t accept this. It continued manipulating Holy Qi into the cauldron, but it couldn’t control the cauldron. So tired its tongue hung to the ground, Blackie was forced to give up.

“This cauldron is a bit demonic,” Blackie said angrily. “It only absorbs Holy Qi and doesn’t have any actual use.”

After that, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo and Ao Xinyan all went to try. There was no exception. They all had the same conclusion as Blackie.

While they tried to control the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, Zhang Ruochen’s Holy Qi mostly recovered.

“Such a seemingly divine cauldron shouldn’t be unable to release any power. I’ll try too.”

Zhang Ruochen came below the cauldron. Narrowing his eyes, he looked ponderous.

Since it was an ancient weapon from the Sacred Central Empire, it must be related to the ancestors of the royal Zhang family. Perhaps only the blood of the descendants could activate it.

Zhang Ruochen was a direct descendant, but his body wasn't his original one now. It wouldn't be of any use even if he let out some blood.

Of course, it was also possible that special techniques and Holy Qi could activate the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

For example, the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture.

Zhang Ruochen had always been curious why only every generation's Emperor Ming could cultivate this. Wouldn't the royal family be stronger if more talented descendants cultivated it too?

For example, the Qingzhao Divine Technique that Emperor Qing and Chi Yao cultivated had no restrictions saying that only the next Emperor Qing could learn it.

Blackie stood behind him. "Stop trying. It's useless. It's just decoration that looks powerful but doesn't have any actual power."

"Let me just try!"

Zhang Ruochen activated the seventh level of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture. Holy Qi poured out of Emperor Ming's saintly source and rushed crazily through his meridians and Saintly Meridians. It rushed out of his palm, hitting into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Whoosh!

The words on the cauldron shone brilliantly and even started pulsing.

"Oh?" Blackie uttered. Its eyes almost fell out of their sockets. Could it be that only Zhang Ruochen could control the cauldron?

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron flew up slowly, hovering a few hundred feet above the ground. The golden words flew out, spinning around the cauldron like a star-filled sky.

Strands of golden mist flowed between the words that filled the air. They formed the image of a giant. The aura it emitted was similar to Zhang Ruochen's Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look.

However, the giant's aura was countless times stronger than Zhang Ruochen's Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look.

The golden light spread very far. One could see it from even tens of thousands of miles away.

The Blood Saints of the Immortal Vampires stood on their Dead Soul Ancient Ship. Looking up at the golden sky, they all sensed the unmatched saintly power.

The Immortal Goddess' slender brows arched. "Such powerful aura," she said in awe. "Did some incredible weapon get discovered?"

"According to the speed of the ships and the direction the light is from," Crown Prince Motian said, "it should be close to the silver ship. Even if it's some incredible weapon, Zhang Ruochen will probably get the advantage."

A Blood Saint beside Emperor Motian sneered. "So what if he gets it? With his cultivation, he won't be able to guard it at all. That weapon will still be ours in the end, ha."

Chapter 1263 - Arrive in the Abandoned Deep Sea

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen retracted his holy Qi. Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron landed on the deck again.

Hu.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he had suddenly lost all his power. He couldn't handle the pressure even with his sanctified body. His legs were shaking, and he had to sit down to absorb the dragon Qi from the ancient ghost boat to recover. After a while, he stood up.

“It consumed all my power after only triggering it for a little bit. What kind of weapon is Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron?”

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased and curious.

Blackie knew that Zhang Ruochen had condensed four saint sources, and his lower abdomen was much larger than that of other saints. It said, “Your cultivation is only enough to activate it for a little while?”

“Do you want to give it a try?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie clenched its teeth. “It's fine. Only you can activate that weird cauldron. Even if I had immense knowledge and cultivation, I wouldn't be able to handle that.”

Everyone looked disdainful, as they thought Blackie was blabbering.

Huang Yanchen said, “Although Brother Chen can only trigger the cauldron for a short while, its power is enough to suppress great enemies.”

Qing Mo looked very excited. She said, “Blackie can help Mr. Zhang activate the cauldron, then Mr. Zhang will be able to make a stable strike.”

Ao Xinyan stood close and pouted. She didn’t say anything, but she was shocked by what she just saw.

“Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron is the sacrificial ancestral weapon from Sacred Central Empire of eight hundred years ago. How does my leader have it? And why can only my leader operate it? Is it true that my leader is the Sacred Crown Prince?”

Ao Xinyan knew that Zhang Ruochen said the name out loud because he trusted her, otherwise, she wouldn’t have known that it was Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Ao Xinyan didn’t ask any further questions because she knew that Zhang Ruochen would tell her when he deemed it appropriate.

The power ripples from Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron were enormous. However, Zhang Ruochen could feel that he couldn’t operate Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron that smoothly as he could only activate the power on the surface.

Perhaps only the direct descendants of Zhang’s families could fully utilize Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Zhang Ruochen put the cauldron into his space ring again, and he checked Carnivorous Holy Flower.

After being purified by Divine Fire Jingmie, the saintly way power inside Carnivorous Holy Flower’s body became much purer.

However, Carnivorous Holy Flower went into a slumber. It must have been trying to become an upper-class saint.

“If Carnivorous Holy Flower becomes an upper-class saint, it can rival a saint at Absolute Ground Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen was looking forward to it. There was still a huge gap between his cultivation and that of a saint at Absolute Ground Realm. He could only retreat if he came across one. If Carnivorous Holy Flower became an upper-class saint, the situation would be much better.

Zhang Ruochen then started to refine himself. He opened all his one hundred and forty-four apertures, which formed one hundred and forty-four whirlpools, absorbing the dragon Qi on the ancient ghost boat.

The dragon Qi was absorbed by Divine Fire Jingming or Sun Saint Figure Rune. Some of it was transformed into holy Qi and was stored in the lower abdomen.

Taishang Elder had given Zhang Ruochen the Sun Saint Figure Rune, and after it merged with his body, it had been absorbing his holy Qi. However, that Sun Saint Figure Rune was like an abyss, and it couldn't be filled no matter how much holy Qi it absorbed.

Although Sun Saint Figure Rune had the power of a saint king, it still depressed Zhang Ruochen with how much holy Qi it required.

If the holy Qi was stored in the lower abdomen, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be so powerless after only using Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron for a short while.

Zhang Ruochen only hoped that Sun Saint Figure Rune could be filled so that he could have an impressive trump card.

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen heard a sword sound.

Zheng.

The Ancient Abyss Sword refined all the saint weapons, and it gave out a trace of black light. It flew toward Zhang Ruochen and encircled him, spinning around him, forming thousands of traces of sword Qi.

Every trace of sword Qi looked like a real saint weapon, giving off intimidating power.

Zhang Ruochen stopped absorbing dragon Qi. He grabbed forward and held the handle of Ancient Abyss Sword.

Suddenly, the sword Qi and the black light flew into the sword. There was only a black sword left. It looked simple and forceful.

Zhang Ruochen stroked the blade of the Ancient Abyss Sword and smiled. "Eight thousand, two hundred and thirty-six

inscriptions. It's at the same level as the Taotian Sword now.”

The Taotian Sword was ranked twenty-seventh on the Thousand-patterns Saint Weapon List, and there were eight thousand, nine hundred and eighty-nine inscriptions on it. The number of inscriptions wasn't the only factor. The material and the quality of inscriptions were also two factors.

The material and the quality of the inscriptions of the Taotian Sword were at the supreme level, so the sword was ranked high on the list. Although it was only a thousand-patterns saint weapon, it had the power of a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon.

The number of inscriptions on the Ancient Abyss Sword was close to that on the Taotian Sword, but the quality was slightly inferior.

However, the material used to make the Ancient Abyss Sword was fortune iron. The Taotian Sword couldn't rival that.

The Ancient Abyss Sword was nearly as powerful as the Taotian Sword, and it could definitely be ranked top fifty on the 'Thousand-patterns Saint Weapon List.'

The greatest power from the Taotian Sword wasn't the sword itself, but the power from all the ancestral teachers from the Taotian Sword Line that could be concentrated on the same person.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't upset that the Ancient Abyss Sword didn't become a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon because it already had considerable power.

Many sects in Kunlun's Field wanted to get a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon, however, only a few had them.

The Ancient Abyss Sword was almost at the same level as a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon now, and it was craved by many large sects.

The ancient ghost boat sailed very fast. Zhang Ruochen couldn't catch up with it even with his full speed.

After leaving Dragon Fire Island, the ancient ghost boat sailed on Yin and Yang Ocean for days before there was another

change on the ocean.

The temperature of the ocean wasn't that high anymore, and the weather got colder and colder.

Blackie was the most excited one. It climbed to the top of the silver ancient ghost boat and said, "We'll arrive at the center of Yin and Yang Ocean, the Abandoned Deep Sea. Let's get prepared because it's going to be very dangerous."

Ao Xinyan had become a saint, and she also had the heir stamp. She wasn't that afraid of Yin and Yang Ocean anymore. She asked, "What do you mean? What should we prepare for?"

Blackie said, "The ancient ghost boat will stop after reaching the edge of the Abandoned Deep Sea. We have to use our own power to move forward. We need to be fully prepared as it'll be very dangerous from now on. If anyone doesn't dare adventure in the Abandoned Deep Sea, he or she can stay on the ancient ghost boat."

"We've already come so far. I don't care how dangerous it's going to be, I'll keep going."

Huang Yanchen looked firm.

Ao Xinyan took a look at Huang Yanchen and said, "If even she has the guts to adventure in the Abandoned Deep Sea, I'll have to go too."

Huang Yanchen smiled. She didn't want to confront Ao Xinyan, but she looked disdainful.

It became darker and darker, colder and colder.

It turned dark because they had entered a bizarre ocean. The entire ocean was trapped in darkness all the time, and there was no sunlight.

The entire sky and land turned dark in the end, and there were only a few stars hanging in the sky, giving out dim light.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the sky from time to time and recorded where the stars were.

The ancient ghost boat turned slower before it was completely stopped.

The water here was frozen. Even saints would be numbed if they touched the ocean water, and the holy Qi in their body would flow much more slowly.

The wind was blowing, and it was as sharp as blades.

“Where are we supposed to go now?”

Ao Xinyan looked at Zhang Ruochen and asked for his opinions.

“Stay on the boat for now. I’ll try the strength of the wind in the sky.”

Zhang Ruochen activated Ten Saints Blood Armor, opened his golden dragon wings and surged.

However, after flying only ten miles, Zhang Ruochen turned back. He looked pale and stayed silent on the boat. He held his arms and mobilized holy Qi in his saint veins.

Zhang Ruochen was only able to suppress his injuries after a short while. He opened his eyes again, and before Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan asked, he said, “It’s Xuan Yin Wind. The higher you fly, the stronger the wind is. I flew two hundred feet high just now, and I was hit by a human-shaped wind. If I weren’t wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, I might’ve been killed.”

“The human-shaped wind?”

Everyone on the boat was scared.

It was too dangerous in the sky above the Abandoned Deep Sea, and it was almost impossible to fly in.

Qing Mo stood at the edge of the ancient ghost boat. She yelled, pointing at the far-off ocean, “Look, there’s an iceberg.”

Zhang Ruochen followed Qing Mo, and he saw an iceberg floating on the ocean.

“That is...”

Zhang Ruochen looked surprised. There was a human being inside the iceberg.

Someone was sealed in the iceberg?

Chapter 1264 - One Ice Mountain, One Being

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power. It extended, forming 36 half-transparent chains on the ice mountain.

Then the mountain slowly moved toward the Dead Soul Ancient Ship, approaching it. The closer it got, the clearer the figure inside the mountain.

It was a middle-aged man in his thirties. He wore dark blue-green armor and grasped a sword with beastly patterns. Even though he'd died, his eyes still held terrifying spirit.

"This man must have been very powerful when he was alive," Huang Yanchen said.

"You can tell?" Ao Xinyan asked.

"His armor is called the Jade Saint Armor," Huang Yanchen explained calmly. "It is a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon."

"The Jade Saint Armor? I heard that only the Jade Martial Saints of Martial Market Bank are qualified to wear it. You need to at least be in the Absolute Land Realm to become a Jade Martial Saint."

Ao Xinyan was a student of the Eastern Region Saint Academy. She naturally knew what a Jade Martial Saint represented. Each of them had terrifying abilities and strong power. They represented the top combat abilities of the Martial Market Bank.

The ultimate goal of many students of the Saint Academy was to become a Jade Martial Saint and enter the upper level of the

Martial Market Bank.

“The value of a Jade Saint Armor is like the Ten Saint Blood Armor. Plus, the Jade Martial Saint must have other treasures too. We hit a goldmine this time!” Blackie laughed with excitement.

The ice mountain got closer and closer. It was only 500 meters from the ship.

Zhang Ruochen pulled his Spiritual Power back. Expression serious, he said, “The Jade Saint Armor cannot be touched.”

“Why?” Blackie didn’t understand.

Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, and Ao Xinyan were confused as well. Why couldn’t they take such a treasure?

“I can’t explain it. Anyways, something in me says that we cannot take the Jade Saint Armor.” Zhang Ruochen continued, “Also, no matter how cold the water in the Yin Yang Sea is, it won’t turn to ice. The water will only freeze when a being falls into the water, becoming an ice mountain.”

“What you’re saying is that the ice mountain will disappear after we take the Jade Saint Armor?” Ao Xinyan asked. “And without the ice mountain, we’ll be unable to enter the Abandoned Deep Sea?”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows deeply without speaking. He thought of some critical facts, but he couldn’t pinpoint them.

Blackie seemed anxious. “I can just toss the Jade Martial Saint’s body back into the sea after taking the armor. Won’t it form another ice mountain?”

With that, Blackie rushed out and landed on the top of the mountain.

“Blackie, no,” Zhang Ruochen uttered.

Kaboom.

Blackie’s paw fell down, shattering the mountain. Then it grabbed the Jade Martial Saint’s body and flew back onto the ship.

“Heh, Zhang Ruochen, you’re too timid,” Blackie said, chuckling. “Look, there’s no danger at all.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were very fierce. “It wouldn’t be dangerous if it was so obvious to you. Countless creatures have ventured into the Abandoned Deep Sea since ancient times. How many have left alive?”

Since Blackie had already opened up the ice mountain, Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like wasting more breath. “If you dare to act brashly again, I won’t be so nice.”

The Abandoned Deep Sea was too dangerous. Throughout history, barely anyone could leave alive.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t alone. There was also Huang Yanchen, Ao Xinyan, and Qing Mo. He had to bring them all out safely. Anyone dying here would make him feel guilty.

Thus, as the team’s leader, Zhang Ruochen had to be careful. He couldn’t make everyone lose their lives just for some small benefits. Any small mistake could be fatal.

Blackie took the Jade Saint Armor off of the Jade Martial Saint. In its hand, the armor quickly shrunk into a Martial Saint Badge the size of one’s palm.

Blackie handed it to Huang Yanchen. “Try talking to him. It’s not like I took the Jade Saint Armor for myself. Not taking a treasure right before your eyes would make anyone impatient.”

Huang Yanchen didn’t refuse it. She took the badge and smiled. “I think Zhang Ruochen is right.”

Blackie was angry. “Why?”

“Any being who dies in the Abandoned Deep Sea will be sealed in an ice mountain,” Huang Yanchen said. “In other words, one ice mountain represents one being. As we go deeper into the sea, we’ll definitely see more and more mountains. Each one has a treasure inside. Will we have to open all of them? As we collect the treasures, danger will get closer and closer to us.”

Blackie didn’t think so. Would they have to pretend they couldn’t see the treasures later? It would feel worse than death.

Plop.

Zhang Ruochen tossed the Jade Martial Saint's body back into the sea. Crackles sounded immediately. A layer of ice quickly formed over the body's surface. The ice thickened until it froze into a mountain again.

Next, Blackie, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, and Ao Xinyan climbed onto the mountain. Zhang Ruochen used Spiritual Power to control the mountain, turning it into a "ship" that sailed into the Abandoned Deep Sea.

Around 800 miles later, dense white dots appeared on the surface of the sea up above. As they got closer, the group finally saw that each white dot was an ice mountain. There were at least 8,000 mountains before them.

For as far as they could see, peaks overlapped. It was an impressive sight. Even more impressive was that each mountain contained a being. Some were human, some were savage beasts, and others were plants or strange ancient creatures.

One of the mountains sealed a 3,000-meter-tall golden tree, shining brilliantly. The mountain was extremely majestic. Merely the part over the surface of the water was 7,000 meters tall.

Everyone was stunned by this sight. There were honestly too many sealed beings. Some had been preserved since the far ancient times without decaying. Their appearances had been preserved for millenniums.

"Team Leader was right," Ao Xinyan said in surprise. "Greedy people will definitely die when they enter the Abandoned Deep Sea. There are too many treasures here. You can't collect them all."

Each sealed creature had a piece of treasure. Any cultivator would be tempted if they saw them. But if a cultivator put all their effort into collecting treasures, then it was logical that he would die in the Abandoned Deep Sea.

Everyone understood this logic, but very few could control their greed. Once the door to greed was opened, it could never

be closed again.

“Mine, they’re all mine!”

Blackie went crazy with excitement. Its eyes even turned green. It stared at the treasures in the mountain, wanting to rush out and collect them, but Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan worked together to stop it.

Other than helping to find Blackie’s physical body, Zhang Ruochen had entered to find the recipe for the Six Saints to the Sky Wine.

According to Blackie, the recipe was on a Saint Beast King of the Dragon Li Cat Race. In other words, he could find the recipe by finding the corpse of that Saint Beast King.

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power. He scanned that portion of mountains but couldn’t find any trace of that Saint Beast King.

Thus, he steered the ice mountain deeper into the Abandoned Deep Sea.

“The Immortal Vampires are coming!” Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen turned and looked back. He saw a bloody cloud appear above the sea. It rushed in their direction, quickly arriving within ten miles of them.

Inside the cloud, the various Saints of the Immortal Vampires were also standing on an ice mountain. The Immortal Goddess’ Spiritual Power was much stronger than Zhang Ruochen. She could also steer the mountain much more quickly as well. It wasn’t strange that they could catch up.

The various Immortal Vampire Saints were all excited by the cluster of mountains. Many of them trembled with excitement.

“Congratulations, Your Highnesses. There are large amounts of rare treasures sealed in ice. Each one is invaluable.”

“The heavens have blessed the Immortal Vampires. Our entire force will improve greatly after receiving these treasures.”

...

Nine Blood Saints flew off of the ice mountain and rushed into the cluster. They took out saint weapons to smash the mountains apart and take the treasures inside.

The Immortal Goddess, Crown Prince Qitian, Crown Prince Motian, and three Death Knights remained standing on the ice mountain. They stared at the other mountain with Zhang Ruochen's group.

Qi Sheng had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen not too long ago. He was indeed a bit humiliated. However, there wasn't any depressed feeling about him today. He seemed cheerful instead.

Smiling, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, do you have any objections to the Immortal Vampires taking all of these treasures?"

"They don't belong to me, so why should I object? Take as many as you want." Zhang Ruochen smiled as well.

Qi Sheng's heart skipped a beat. He was a bit surprised and also had a bad feeling. With Zhang Ruochen's domineering personality, how could he not compete with them over these treasures?

Qi Sheng remembered how Zhang Ruochen had fought bloodily no matter the opponent for the World Spirit back in the Blue Dragon Void World.

This wasn't normal.

Had Zhang Ruochen not come to the Yin Yang Sea for these treasures?

"If there's nothing else, I'll leave now. I won't disturb you all from collecting the treasures."

Zhang Ruochen steered his ice mountain, continuing forward.

"You think you can leave just by giving up these treasures? To me, your life and blood are more valuable than all these treasures added together."

Qi Sheng waved an arm. The three Death Knights behind him instantly turned into streaks of blood-red light. They landed on three ice mountains, surrounding Zhang Ruochen's group.

Chapter 1265 - Encircle, Sudden Change

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The three icebergs formed a triangular area. Zhang Ruochen and the others were standing at the center of the triangular area, being encircled by three death knights.

“Light of death knights.”

The three death knights infused their holy Qi into the long spear, and three traces of blood-red light gushed out of the long spears, overlapping each other. The death Qi inside the light kept piling up, which condensed the space inside the halo.

“Death light again. They’re trying to freeze the space to stop me from running away.”

Zhang Ruochen was smiling. He wasn’t intimidated by the powerful forces from the death knight. Instead, he looked around and said, “There should be another death knight. Where is he?”

All the death knights were wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, and they had very similar forces. However, there were still some subtle differences.

Zhang Ruochen had fought the death knight sent by the Immortal Temple several times before, so he was very familiar with his force. He was certain that he wasn’t among those three death knights.

Hong Long.

The iceberg under Zhang Ruochen's feet shook, and it started to ascend.

"Someone's down there."

Qing Mo yelled and looked terrified.

A death knight rushed out of the ocean, and he had a pair of gigantic blood-red wings. He had cold forces and was holding the iceberg that was more than a thousand feet tall. It surged to the sky.

Zhang Ruochen immediately understood what was happening. The fourth death knight was hiding in the water, and he was trying to ambush him after the three traces of death knight light were triggered.

The ocean water here could freeze saints to death, yet the death knight could resist that coldness. Instead of being frozen, he could still hold the iceberg over his head.

"Let's see where you're hiding this time, Zhang Ruochen," the death knight yelled, and then, he clenched his fist and hit the bottom of the iceberg.

Hong Long. The iceberg was hit by the death knight, and it cracked, turning into fragments.

The fist destruction Qi formed a palm print that gushed upward. It pierced the broken iceberg and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Ao Xinyan and Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen and the others had ascended to at least a thousand feet high, and there was Xuan Yin Wind around them. If they were hit by the palm print again, they might get higher.

The higher they got, the more dangerous it would be.

Apparently, the death knights weren't meant to kill Zhang Ruochen and the others with this punch. Instead, they wanted to kill them using the power of Xuan Yin Wind.

Qi Sheng held his arms, and his eyes gleamed with blood-red light. He smiled and looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was thrown to the sky after being ambushed.

We must annihilate that enemy, Qi Sheng thought.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't give the death knights the chance to do it. He used all his power to wield his sword, tearing apart the palm print.

The sword Qi pierced through the palm print, but it didn't dissipate. It fell on the body of the death knight.

Ci Peng.

There were sparks on the Ten Saints Blood Armor, and then, he fell into Yin and Yang Ocean.

“He was so quick when he wielded his sword and sword Qi!”

Motian Crown Prince was also a powerful sword warrior, but he was still thrilled when he saw how Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword just now.

If Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword less than three hundred feet away from him, he wouldn't be able to dodge it.

Which meant anywhere less than three hundred feet from Zhang Ruochen was a forbidden area. If someone was that close, he would be killed without question. Only saints who were at or higher than the Absolute Ground Realm could handle that.

Qing Sheng said, “It isn't because of how fast he wielded his sword, but because the time becomes slower around him! Zhang Ruochen is able to wield the power of time and sword techniques at the same time. He's strong enough to fight sword saints. We have to kill him now, otherwise, it'll be impossible to do so in the future.”

Immortal Goddess shot a glance at Qi Sheng and looked bizarre.

Before, Qi Sheng was comfortable no matter how powerful his opponents were. He was filled with pride.

However, he had said twice today that Zhang Ruochen must be annihilated, which meant even Qitian Crown Prince lost his confidence in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Before Zhang Ruochen and the others landed on the ocean, the death knights standing in three different directions started to use their saint-spell-level attacks again, trying to kill them.

The power of the death knights could rival that of saints at the Absolute Ground Level. Nobody dared confront them directly, except Qing Mo.

Of course, Qing Mo might not be able to ward off the attacks from the three death knights if it weren't for the power of the silver kitchen knife.

The three death knights performed three saint spells, and they were all mighty.

Three saint spells formed three blood-red mountains in the sky, and they tried to encircle Zhang Ruochen and the others.

It was Xueming Mountain Print, one of the three print techniques of the Xueming Death Knights.

Qing Mo was horrified. She had already forgotten the power she possessed. She fell while yelling in horror.

Zhang Ruochen was very calm at this moment. He grabbed Qing Mo who was falling and said, "Use the heir stamp to break the shackles on the space now."

"Okay."

Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan answered almost at the same time. They took out the heir stamp and held it up.

Huang Yanchen was a bit surprised. She took a look at the heir stamp held by Ao Xinyan, and she bit her lip. She looked upset.

Zhang Ruochen had given such a valuable treasure to Ao Xinyan.

However, Huang Yanchen immediately suppressed her emotions and mobilized her holy Qi to trigger the power of the heir stamp. And then, large golden emperor Qi exploded.

"Let me help you, princess."

Qing Mo pressed forward with her white hands, and a holy Qi pillar gushed out, hitting the heir stamp. Suddenly, the power

of the heir stamp surged.

A blue river flew out of the stamp, slashing toward the two blood-red mountains.

That blue river was a hair from Empress Chi Yao, which contained her saintly way rules.

Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan operated the other heir stamp, letting out Emperor Qi and hitting the blood-red mountain.

Hong Long Long.

The power of the two heir stamps gushed out and crushed three snow mountains. They immediately dived and suppressed toward the three death knights.

“God-killing Cross Shield.”

The holy Qi inside Qi Sheng’s body flowed into the God-killing Cross Shield through his fingers, and then, he waved his arm. The giant cross carried a blood-red cloud, clashing with one of the heir stamps.

Hong Long.

After a blasting sound, the heir stamp and God-killing Cross Shield both bounced back, piercing through the wall of the death knight.

The Immortal Goddess raised her arm, opened her hand and yelled, “Listen to me, Xuan Yin Wind.”

Hu Hu.

Xuan Yin Wind above the Abandoned Deep Sea flew toward the palm of the Immortal Goddess, forming a whirlpool.

At the center of the wind whirlpool, a half-transparent giant formed. It was more than thirty feet tall, and there was roaring sound inside, louder than thunder.

Human-shaped wind.

The Immortal Goddess wielded the human-shaped wind, hitting another heir stamp.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the human-shaped wind, and he was dazed.

He flew to more than three hundred feet above the Abandoned Deep Sea before. He was attacked by a human-shaped wind that was around ten feet tall, yet he was not injured.

As for the human-shaped wind wielded by the Immortal Goddess, it was more than fifty feet tall. The destructive power was definitely larger.

Hong.

The human-shaped wind was terrifying. It pierced through the emperor Qi around the heir stamp and clashed with the stamp, suppressing Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo.

Zhang Ruochen had activated four thousand inscriptions on the Ancient Abyss Sword when he saw the Immortal Goddess wielding the human-shaped wind.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen slashed forward with the thousand-patterns destruction, and he cut the human-shaped wind into halves from the top to the bottom.

The shattered human-shaped wind turned into thousands of small winds and flew away.

Qing Sheng and Immortal Goddess were only targeting the heir stamp. Apparently, they wanted to stop Zhang Ruochen from breaking the space freeze from the light of the death knights.

If the space shield wasn't broken, Zhang Ruochen couldn't leave.

“Keep attacking. Let's see how long he can last.”

Qi Sheng looked cold and hostile.

The three death knights condensed their holy Qi and performed a second saint spell.

The death knight who had fallen into the ocean rushed out of the water like a trace of blood-red light. He landed in a fourth direction and condensed his saint spell also.

Meanwhile, Motian Crown Prince pulled out his sword and opened all the apertures on his palm. Holy Qi gushed out and

flooded the sword.

Inscriptions kept emerging from the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, and the force became stronger and stronger. It then hit toward Zhang Ruochen like a trace of light.

The nine blood saints from the immortal vampire race also paid attention to the far-off battlefield while they were taking the valuables from the icebergs.

“Zhang Ruochen is being encircled now, and there’s no way he can get out!” a thin blood saint sneered.

“Even Chi Wansui, who’s leading a large group of great beings from the imperial government, doesn’t dare fight us. Zhang Ruochen is only someone being hunted by the human race. How dare he challenge the entire immortal vampire race.”

“He’s not going to survive it any longer.”

That blood saint looked away and kept taking valuables from the corpses.

The ancient corpse lying on the ice was an elder wearing a golden cape. He looked like a sixty-year-old, but nobody knew how long he’d been dead.

Just as the blood saint tried to reach a jade pendant at the waist of the ancient corpse, the ancient corpse suddenly opened its eyes, and two traces of black light pillars shot the body of the blood saint.

“Ah! The corpse is revived.”

The blood saint yelled in horror, and then, it fell down into the ice-cold ocean. Another ice mountain ascended from the ocean, which sealed the body of that blood saint.

Chapter 1266 - Ancient Corpses Awaken Together

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A pained cry shocked the other Blood Saints and also traveled to the ears of Qi Sheng, Crown Prince Motian, and the Immortal Vampires.

“I’ll go check what happened. You all continue to fight Zhang Ruochen. Do not let him escape again.”

As the Immortal Goddess spoke, she jumped off of the ice mountain and flew up. She flew toward the pained cry as a beautiful shadow.

Since the Immortal Goddess would go personally, Qi Sheng and Crown Prince Motian were reassured. No matter what changes occurred, she could probably resolve it.

The inside of the Death God Light was filled with chaotic Saintly Way power. Half-Saints would be crushed into bloody mist instantly if they stood inside.

Boom, boom.

Zhang Ruochen waved his battle sword and struck 13 times. He clashed with the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword 13 times.

Emperor Motian controlled the sword technique by riding the sword and waited at ease for his opponent. Each time his sword sent Zhang Ruochen flying, it could quickly consolidate energy and strike again.

Not only was the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword a Supreme Saint ancient weapon, it was closer to a Ten-thousand-pattern

Saint Weapon. It was seventh on the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon list. Each strike could split mountains.

If I don't break through the Death God Light's repression, I'll always have the lower hand. Seems like I must activate the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Zhang Ruochen took it out, holding it in his palm. "Blackie, Holy Carnivorous Flower," he roared. "Send Holy Qi into me and help me."

The Holy Carnivorous Flower had already reached the upper-level Saint Realm. It had sizeable Holy Qi within it. The Holy Qi rushed out like a river and flowed into Zhang Ruochen's Saintly Meridians.

Blackie reached out at the same time, pressing on the Tianxin Meridian on Zhang Ruochen's back. It sent Holy Qi in.

"Xueming Death Print."

Below, four Death Knights used the strongest print of the Xueming Death Print. Boundless Holy Qi formed four huge Death God images that attacked the people inside the Death God Light.

At that moment, Qi Sheng held his breath too, wondering, The power of four Xueming Death Print is enough to kill someone in the Absolute Land Realm. Can Zhang Ruochen still fend it off?

If no accidents occurred, this could destroy Zhang Ruochen.

Crown Prince Motian stood in the distance and pulled back the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword. He also felt extreme pressure. Looking at the four Death God images, it was like four Death Gods had been brought back to life. It was terrifying.

The four Death God images were about to attack Zhang Ruochen and the others. Suddenly, a flash of gold light tore the Death God Light apart.

Various ancient runes hovered in the light. They shone with terrifying power like stars. A bronze cauldron floated in the center of the golden light. At the same time, a huge golden

Emperor Ming image appeared. It was ten times larger than the Death God image and tore the four apart with a boom.

“Oh!”

“Such...strong power...”

...

The four Death Knights all spat out blood and were thrown back. They were all heavily injured.

The four ice mountains under their feet exploded. Each one turned into bits of ice. The four ancient corpses were exposed and flew out.

The four corpses included two humans, one crystal cobra and a blood-red wolf head the size of a palace.

The four corpses flew in the air. Affected by a mysterious force, they all opened their eyes.

Qi Sheng and Crown Prince Motian didn't realize the changes in the four ancient corpses. They were all stunned by the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. They could only watch as Zhang Ruochen's group broke through the spatial restraint.

“Zhang Ruochen actually has such a strong ancient weapon... Miscalculated!”

Qi Sheng had thought of all sorts of possibilities, including Qing Mo. If Qing Mo used the silver kitchen knife, he would use the God-killing Cross Shield against her. Thus, he thought that Zhang Ruochen would definitely die under this siege.

However, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron's appearance destroyed this balance. All of Qi Sheng's calculations were ineffective too. It was now impossible to capture Zhang Ruochen again.

Boom!

A fierce Holy Qi wave spread from a cluster of ice mountains in the distance. A red and black ball of light exploded. Waves dozens of meters high rose up on the surface of the sea.

The Immortal Goddess whizzed out of the red and black light. Her face was sheet white. Flying above the waves, she sent a

message to all the Saints here. “Dead corpses back to life. Run.”

Getting this message, Qi Sheng’s expression changed again. Even the Immortal Goddess was so terrified. What exactly had happened?

He abruptly felt danger on his right. He saw a huge blood-red wolf head flying in the air. It opened its maw, revealing two rows of sword-like fangs, wanting to swallow him.

“What is that?”

Qi Sheng struck the wolf’s forehead with the God-killing Cross Shield, leaving a cross-shaped mark. The wolf head was thrown back.

Just as Qi Sheng collected the shield, a huge cold force hit his back. Bones all over his body cracked and he was sent flying. His back kept bleeding. It was like his organs were all torn apart. There was also a burst of cold Qi darting within him.

He landed on the sea surface with difficulty and turned around, looking back.

A human-shaped corpse pounced toward him. The corpse’s palms were covered in blood. Evidently, it was the one who’d hit Qi Sheng’s back.

“What is this thing?”

Qi Sheng reached out, striking the corpse with a ball of Nanling Dragon Fire.

The corpse seemed to fear fire. When it touched the Nanling Dragon Fire, it let out a pained cry. Then it fled, charging like a gray streak at a Death Knight.

Zhang Ruochen’s group stood in the air, watching the battle with wide eyes. This was too strange. The ancient corpses sealed in ice suddenly came back to life.

Just then, four Blood Saints had been killed. One Death Knight was swallowed by the cobra corpse. No one knew if he was still alive.

Mountain after mountain exploded, releasing more ancient corpses. More and more corpses came back to life. It was like the ghosts of the netherworld were awoken together.

One of the mummified human-shaped corpses had a pair of black wings. It flew into the air, pouncing at Qing Mo. The man was extremely old, with a head of white hair. It was like wrinkly skin had been pulled over a skeleton. There were many menacing lines.

“Don’t come at me... I don’t taste good... No...”

Qing Mo cried in fear. She hid behind Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, curling up.

Huang Yanchen struck with the Heir Stamp. Zhang Ruochen also brought the Abyss Ancient Sword down. They hit the human corpse at the same time.

Even the Heir Stamp was ineffective against the human corpse. It only made the corpse sway a little.

Thud.

Zhang Ruochen’s full-power strike only cut down some black feathers.

“Such terrifying strength.” Zhang Ruochen was shocked inwardly.

One could imagine that the man’s physical body had been at a crazy state when he was alive. At least, Zhang Ruochen’s body couldn’t compare to him.

Swish, swish.

The corpse seemed to be bent on getting Qing Mo. It reached out a claw again, going for Qing Mo’s neck.

Qing Mo was in a panic. She took out her kitchen knife and swung randomly with her eyes closed. She actually cut the corpse’s arm into a dozen chunks.

Zhang Ruochen hit a palm print on the corpse’s right shoulder, sending it flying horizontally.

Whoosh.

Qing Mo was still swinging with her eyes closed. The sword almost hit Zhang Ruochen's neck. Getting cold sweat in fear, Zhang Ruochen quickly moved away from Qing Mo.

Huang Yanchen moved forward to stop her. Qing Mo finally calmed down and stopped swinging the sword. Her chest rose up and down, making her seem pitiful and intimidated.

There were more than 100 corpses that had come back to life. Most were attacking the Immortal Vampire Saints. Some had also flown up to target Zhang Ruochen's group.

"This is too terrifying. We must leave immediately."

Zhang Ruochen activated the remaining Holy Qi within him. Manipulating spatial power, he used the Great Spatial Move and brought the group to hundreds of miles away instantly.

Activating the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron had used up too much of his Holy Qi. The remaining bits were only enough for one Great Spatial Move.

After getting hundreds of miles away, Zhang Ruochen turned around. He could still see the cluster of ice mountains. Holy Qi waves were extremely strong inside it and beams of power surged out. The sea tossed angrily with black waves.

Blackie gasped. "Thankfully, my self-restraint is strong enough and I suppressed the desire within me. Otherwise, I would be in the same boat as the Immortal Vampires."

Everyone rolled their eyes. If Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan hadn't restrained it earlier, it definitely wouldn't have suppressed its greed.

"The Immortal Vampires will definitely suffer great losses after getting besieged by the corpses," Ao Xinyan said. "I wonder how many can escape alive."

A long scream came from the ice mountains. Qi Sheng's six wings were all unfurled. He charged in Zhang Ruochen's direction with shocking speed.

There were dozens of corpses chasing after him.

"Qi Sheng discovered us," Blackie said. "He wants to drag us down too."

One hundred miles was neither far nor close for a Saint. They could cross it in an instant.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Ao Xinyan, Qing Mo and Blackie all used their top speed to escape into the distance. If they were surrounded by the ancient corpses, they would meet the same end as the Immortal Vampires.

While escaping, Zhang Ruochen used all his might in running circulation techniques. He absorbed Spiritual Qi to recover his Holy Qi.

Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan sent the Heir Stamps behind them to attack Qi Sheng and stop him from catching up.

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen finally recovered some Holy Qi. He used the Great Spatial Move again, bringing the group 100 miles away again.

After enlarging the gap this time, Zhang Ruochen’s group fled like crazy without waiting for Qi Sheng to catch up. They completely left the ancient corpses in the dust.

As they all panted for breath, they finally stopped. The group found an ice mountain sealing a headless corpse and climbed onto it. Taking out saint stones, they focused on absorbing the Holy Qi to recover to their peak state as soon as possible.

The Abandoned Deep Sea was honestly too dangerous. They had to be at their strongest state at all times to have a bigger chance at surviving.

As long as the ice mountain didn’t shatter, the corpse inside wouldn’t awaken. There wasn’t any danger in cultivating on the mountain.

While they were cultivating, Blackie climbed to the peak. It stood up and looked around with its big round eyes.

Suddenly, excitement filled its round eyes. Staring at a huge mountain dozens of miles away, it yelled, “Found it! Zhang Ruochen, found it! We’re too lucky. We found it!”

Chapter 1267 - Dragon Li Saint Beast King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

An iceberg that was more than five thousand feet tall floated on the ocean under the dark night. The light of the stars was scattered on the iceberg, which reflected dimming light.

The main body of the iceberg was hidden under the water as only a tip of the iceberg was being shown.

Zhang Ruochen and the others got closer to the icebeg.

They could see a giant cat sealed in the iceberg.

There were crimson scales on the body of the cat, and its head kind of looked like a dragon head. On its back were a pair of dragon wings with thorns.

They couldn't see the entire body of the giant cat at all, as most of the body was deep in the ocean.

Qing Mo's mouth was wide opening as she stared at that giant creature inside the iceberg. She said, "Such a large body. Its scale is larger than my entire body. Is it a dragon, or a cat?"

Blackie said, "Cats descend from the Dragon Li Race of Nine Li Cat race, and there's some connection between them and the ancestral dragons, which is why it has some of the features of a dragon."

"Is it the saint beast king of dragon Li race?"

Zhang Ruochen was also observing the giant cat that was sealed in the iceberg. He inspected it with his mind power, yet the ice was peculiar. It prevented mind power from inspecting it.

He could only see the shape of its corpse, but he couldn't inspect the strength and the holy Qi contained inside the corpse, which meant he couldn't tell the cultivation of that cat before it died.

Blackie said, "I can't say for sure, but I reckon it's quite possible given its size. Normal dragon Li cats under the state of saint can't have bodies this size."

The so-called saint beast kings were as powerful as human saint kings.

For a creature like this, it was dangerous even after its death. A trace of saint soul would be catastrophic for Zhang Ruochen and the others.

Nobody knew whether it would be revived after the iceberg was broken.

If it woke up, Zhang Ruochen and the others wouldn't stand a chance.

Ao Xinyan said, "Leader, let's use the heir stamp to crush the body of that Dragon Li cat Saint Beast King first."

"No. If it has the ingredients for Six Saints to the Sky Wine, it'll be destroyed as well." Zhang Ruochen stopped Ao Xinyan from doing so.

Blackie said, "With the great body constitution of the saint beast king, we can't destroy the body even with the heir stamp."

Zhang Ruochen and the others were in a very awkward situation. They wanted to get the ingredients for Six Saints to the Sky Wine, yet they didn't dare break the iceberg.

They were so close, yet it was so dangerous.

Six Saints to the Sky Wine was invaluable. Even if it couldn't make the bodies of the human race surge, it would at least improve them to a different level, making a large group of human elites.

Zhang Ruochen was so close to getting the ingredients of Six Saints to the Sky Wine, so he wouldn't just give up so easily.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and said, “Step back. Stay at least five hundred miles away. I’ll stay here.”

“I have the divine dragon silver armor. I can defend myself. I’ll stay here,” Ao Xinyan said.

Zhang Ruochen was firm. He said, “Everyone leave now. If that saint beast king really wakes up, your body will be crushed even if you’re wearing divine dragon silver armor.”

Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Blackie and Ao Xinyan all stepped hundreds of miles back. They knew that Zhang Ruochen could use the power of space to get away if he really ran into dangers.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t break the ice immediately, instead, he stood at the top of the iceberg and recovered his holy Qi. He only stood up after he’d reached his pinnacle status again.

“Abyss.”

Zhang Ruochen summoned Ancient Abyss Sword and operated the sword. And then, hundreds of traces of sword Qi flew out of the sword and landed on the iceberg.

Zhang Ruochen used the most conservative way to break the ice so as not to disturb the body.

Hua Hua.

The ice kept falling off, and the iceberg got thinner and thinner.

The forces of the giant cat emanated, and they got stronger and stronger. Traces of crimson light gushed out.

Pa!

The ice around the giant cat was crushed, and it fell off.

The horrendous power was let out of the body. The power had been accumulated for tens of thousands of years. Zhang Ruochen was knocked away even though he had prepared for it.

The two heir stamps were as large as mountains. They flew toward Zhang Ruochen and floated above him.

A silver kitchen knife was also floating between the two heir stamps.

Apparently, Huang Yanchen, Ao Xinyan and Qing Mo were worried about Zhang Ruochen, which was why they wielded the weapons to help him.

Zhang Ruochen stopped them as he could feel that it hadn't woken up yet, however, the forces from that body were too great.

“It's indeed a saint beast king.”

Without the ice, Zhang Ruochen immediately saw its cultivation after using his mind power to inspect it.

It was terrific!

When it was still alive, it had been as powerful as Blue Fire Xuanwu that was killed by Treacherous Sea Pillar in Xuanwu Void World. It was definitely a super overlord when it was still alive.

He couldn't imagine what kind of dangers it had encountered that had killed it in the Abandoned Deep Sea.

Zhang Ruochen was also an impressive saint. He had great cultivation, so he didn't fear a dead saint beast king.

Zhang Ruochen was wearing Ten Saints Blood Saint Armor. He stepped on the water as if it was ground. He walked toward the body of the saint beast king.

“That saint beast king is covered by valuables. Its scales, blood, bones and saint sources are all valuables that can tempt saints.”

If he weren't in the Abandoned Deep Sea, Zhang Ruochen would have really wanted to take the entire body away.

However, there were too many uncertainties now. If that body woke up in the space ring, it could easily destroy the space ring.

Zhang Ruochen kept telling himself that he couldn't be greedy, and that he must leave after finding the ingredients of Six Saints to the Sky Wine.

Zhang Ruochen went through layers of holy Qi and flew above the body. He closed his eyes, and his mind power flew out after turning into tens of thousands of light spots, going into the body.

Each light spot represented the mind power of Zhang Ruochen. They were searching in the body.

There were lots of devices in the body of that saint beast king. Some of them were hundreds of thousands of years old, yet they were still intact.

There were saint weapons, ancestral weapons, saint beast bones, metal fragments and stones.

Its body was a treasury.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know how the ingredients of Six Saints to the Sky Wine looked. He moved all the devices with characters out of the body.

Soon, dozens of devices showed up in front of him, piling up like a hill.

Zhang Ruochen was just trying his luck while searching for the ingredients of Six Saints to the Sky Wine. It was normal that there weren't ingredients among those devices.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dare spend too much time on the body of the saint beast king. He didn't even take the saint source of the saint beast king. He prepared to leave carrying all the dozens of devices.

Zhang Ruochen just jumped up, and a cold force came from below, numbing his feet.

“No...”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed. He immediately mobilized his holy Qi and the power of space.

Ao.

A roar was transmitted into his ears.

The sound became ripples, crushing the eardrums of Zhang Ruochen and knocking away his holy Qi.

Pu Tong.

Zhang Ruochen dived into Abandoned Deep Sea.

The Dragon Li Saint Beast King opened its eyes, and two traces of black light pillars were shot out. Its entire body gave out death Qi.

Nobody knew what kind of power there was in the Abandoned Deep Sea, the power that could revive a corpse and kill all the creatures that trespassed in this place.

The two heir stamps in the sky hit the head and the back of Dragon Li Saint Beast King at the same time.

Peng Peng.

Dragon Li Saint Beast King didn't move its body at all. The two heir stamps hit it at the same time, but the only effect was noise, and then, the heir stamps bounced away.

The silver kitchen knife slashed the neck of the Dragon Li Saint Beast King, however, it couldn't even pierce through a scale.

To a saint beast king, attacks from saints were nothing. They couldn't hurt it at all.

Even a dead saint beast king was way stronger than saints. There was a life level gap between them too.

Certainly, the heir stamps and the silver kitchen knife stalked Dragon Li Saint Beast King, which gave Zhang Ruochen some time to run away.

Zhang Ruochen was covered by Ten Saints Blood Armor, so he wasn't frozen in the ocean.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen regained his consciousness. He immediately condensed holy Qi, mobilized space rules, performed spatial move and ran a hundred miles afar.

Ao.

Drago Li Saint Beast King turned around and looked at the ocean a hundred miles away.

Zhang Ruochen was much faster than the speed of sound, yet Dragon Li Saint Beast King was even faster. It flapped its wings and it flew almost a hundred miles away.

The wind from the dragon wings suppressed the space, which made the ocean sink, forming a basin that had a diameter of more than ten miles.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the bottom of the ocean. He felt that he was being pressed by a hundred thousand mountains. He clenched his teeth, and there was blood in his eyes. Before Dragon Li Saint Beast King landed, he performed spatial move and disappeared.

“Damn it. I was locked by the body of that Dragon Li Saint Beast King. Am I going to die in the Abandoned Deep Sea today?”

Zhang Ruochen just walked out of the space, and the Dragon Li Saint Beast King showed up above his head again.

He couldn't get away even with great spatial move.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't give up fighting for his own life. He fought every second to get away.

He performed great spatial moves dozens of times, and he flew thousands of miles away. Even though Zhang Ruochen had great holy Qi, he couldn't handle it.

However, Dragon Li Saint Beast King was still chasing him. It was still less than two hundred miles away. It could catch up with him after two breaths.

Just when Zhang Ruochen wanted to fight again, he saw an ancient being standing far off, collecting valuables from more than ten icebergs.

It was the alcohol maniac he'd lost on the ancient ghost boat. He'd entered Abandoned Deep Sea as well.

Chapter 1268 - Black Demon Millstone

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Seventeen ice mountains in total were scattered about the sea surface. The Crazy Alcoholic stood on one.

A beautiful female corpse lay beside his feet. She had a purple dress and a vertical eye on her forehead. She'd died years ago in the Abandoned Deep Sea, but her skin was still snowy white. It hadn't decayed at all.

“So beautiful. What did I do to deserve you? But since I ran into you, I can't let you go.”

The Crazy Alcoholic was extremely excited. His wrinkly old hands reached out, trembling, and undid the corpse's shirt. A patch of fine skin was exposed. Then he grabbed the pendant on the corpse's neck and pulled it off.

The pendant was a small jade flower with three petals. It had nine rings of green saintly light. It was beautiful, like a green lantern shining in the darkness.

The Crazy Alcoholic held the green flower between two fingers, excitement in his eyes. “The legendary Three-Petal Nine Life Flower of the Three-eyed Ancient Race. As long as you wear it, you'll never age. Such a treasure really exists. It's too beautiful—the detailed flower veins and heavy Life Qi. How do I deserve you!? How?”

Crash.

A wave dozens of meters high rose up, crashing onto the Crazy Alcoholic. He spat out a mouthful of seawater. Putting

the flower away in fear, he clenched his fists and went into a defensive posture.

“Who?” he roared. “Who dares to steal my Three-Petal Nine Life Flower? Oh...what is that?”

A huge beastly shadow moved across the sea, looming over the Crazy Alcoholic.

Roar!

The Dragon Li Saint Beast King’s huge body appeared above the Crazy Alcoholic. It roared, extending a sharp claw, and hitting down.

The strong sound waves collapsed the sea surface. A huge basin formed. The surrounding water current quickened. It was like a huge mouth opening up in the sea to swallow the Crazy Alcoholic.

“Such strong Corpse Qi.”

The Crazy Alcoholic’s expression hardened, becoming very serious. Terrifying might rose up within his old body. It was like he was a metal needle. His entire aura sharpened.

Crack!

He stepped on the sea. A ball of black demonic Qi rolled out, covering the sea as a demonic cloud.

The Crazy Alcoholic put his hands together. The Demonic Qi in the air suddenly rushed upward like pillars. They formed a Black Demon Millstone, dozens of miles in diameter.

The millstone spun quickly. Demonic Qi filled the sky, turning the entire place into a vortex.

Boom.

The Dragon Li Saint Beast King was hit by the millstone. Thousands of scales fell off. Its huge body was also sent flying into the sea.

Roar...

The Dragon Li Saint Beast King escaped under the water. Its roar faded into the distance until it completely disappeared.

The sea returned to its calm state.

“It’s just a dead thing without any of its original mightiness. How does it dare to steal my Three-Petal Nine Life Flower? It doesn’t know its own abilities.”

The Crazy Alcoholic collected the Demonic Qi. He took out a flagon and poured in a mouthful of wine.

A voice spoke behind him. “The Black Demon Millstone is the top saint spell of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect. You are from the Demonic Sect?”

The Crazy Alcoholic wasn’t surprised at all. He turned around and looked at the young man standing at the top of the ice mountain. “Being skilled in the Black Demon Millstone makes you from the Demonic Sect?” he asked, voice raspy like a duck. “You’re skilled in the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Are you from the Buddhist Way?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like arguing with the Crazy Alcoholic. He put the Ten Saints Blood Armor away. His body was covered in bloody gashes. It was like his body had been split into numerous parts. It hurt so badly that he was numb.

The Crazy Alcoholic scoffed. “You dare to offend such a creature with your cultivation? It’s fortunate your body is a Saint already. Otherwise, your body would’ve been destroyed.”

“You think I wanted to offend it? I was looking for the Six Saints...cough...”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t continue speaking. He coughed out saintly blood. Then he took out a Spring Pill and swallowed it, starting to heal himself.

The Crazy Alcoholic widened his eyes and rushed over. “Six Saints what?” he asked anxiously. “What are you looking for? Don’t start healing. Finish your sentence first.”

He jumped up and down like a monkey. He suspected that Zhang Ruochen was speaking of what he wanted to search for too—the Six Saints to the Sky Wine recipe.

The Crazy Alcoholic had spent much time and effort, reading countless books, and going to the Savage Barren Territory to create a new Six Saints to the Sky Wine. His name would go down in history.

Of course, if he could find the original recipe, it would naturally be better.

Recently, the Crazy Alcoholic had found some traces of the recipe. The clues all pointed to the Yin Yang Sea. That was why he'd taken such a risk to try his luck at the Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen had only spoken halfway. How could he not feel anxious?

An hour later, Zhang Ruochen's injuries were 90% recovered. All the gashes on him had healed. He was filled with spirit too. As soon as he opened his eyes, he saw the Crazy Alcoholic's wrinkly old face and a pair of smiling eyes.

"Zhang Ruochen, what Six Saints thing were you talking about earlier?" the Crazy Alcoholic asked fawningly.

"Nothing," Zhang Ruochen said, smiling.

"How can it be nothing?"

"I was just speaking casually." Zhang Ruochen looked very nonchalant. He stood up and gazed at the boundless Abandoned Deep Sea. "Earlier, I think I heard you mention the Three-Petal Nine Life Flower. Is it that legendary saintly object of the Three-Eyed Ancient Race?"

"No, you misheard!" The Crazy Alcoholic shook his head, not admitting it.

The Three-Eyed Ancient Race had disappeared in the passage of time. The inheritance had been cut off in the middle ages and the entire race had gone extinct.

As their saintly object, the Three-Petal Nine Life Flower had many legends about it.

Apparently, anyone who wore it could stay youthful forever and enjoy a long life. In the legends, a Saint of the race lived for more than 10,000 years because he had this flower.

After all, a normal human Saint's lifespan was 360 years. Their lifespan would only increase if they entered a higher realm. But no matter what, it was rare for them to live past 800 years. Even if they did, it was because they'd taken many saintly medicines.

Only Saint Kings could live past 1,000 years. Supreme Saints could only live 3,000 years.

A human living 10,000 years had a lifespan even more terrifying than a Supreme Saint.

This was why the Three-Petal Nine Life Flower had such a mysterious veil about it. Any cultivator who received this treasure would be ecstatic.

Of course, these were only legends. Later cultivators had researched and calculated to realize that the legend wasn't truthful. There were some exaggerations.

Zhang Ruochen didn't press the Crazy Alcoholic or continue asking. He released his Spiritual Power and went back to find Huang Yanchen and the others.

The Crazy Alcoholic's eyes rolled. Then he flew up, landing above Zhang Ruochen's ice mountain. He cackled. "We entered the Yin Yang Sea together, so we naturally have to return together. I'll help you find them."

Zhang Ruochen's expression didn't change, but he was laughing inside. Earlier, he'd purposely said "Six Saints" to attract the Crazy Alcoholic and make him help search for the people voluntarily.

The Crazy Alcoholic was very skilled. With him there, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't escape so pathetically if they met the Dragon Li Saint Beast King again.

The rules of the Abandoned Deep Sea were a bit strange. Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power could only reach 100 miles. If it continued extending, the things he saw would become blurrier until everything disappeared.

Not only that, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Blackie also had a slight feeling to find each other's locations. But this feeling disappeared too!

When they returned to the place where they had discovered the Dragon Li Saint Beast King, Zhang Ruochen didn't find the others. They'd already left.

"This is bad. The Abandoned Deep Sea is so vast. Finding them would be like searching for a needle in a haystack."
Zhang Ruochen was worried for their safety.

The Crazy Alcoholic passed a flagon to Zhang Ruochen and smiled. "Why are you so worried? If we have wine, we should get drunk. Take a sip."

"No," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic shook his head. He lifted the flagon and started drinking by himself.

"With Qing Mo's abilities, they can probably survive attacks from the imperial court, Immortal Vampires, Nine Li Palace, and Ancient Dragon Mountain. Blackie is greedy, but it's very smart and rarely gets fooled."

Zhang Ruochen's worry dissolved gradually. Worrying couldn't do anything either, so he should just trust their abilities.

Then Zhang Ruochen took out from his spatial ring the dozens of weapons he'd found in the Dragon Li Saint Beast King body. He placed them on the ice mountain and started studying them.

The Crazy Alcoholic lay down on a concave part of the ice mountain. Glancing at the items, he smiled. "Where did you get all this scrap metal?"

"You might find a treasure in scrap metal." Zhang Ruochen squatted down. He picked up one item and studied the words on it.

The Crazy Alcoholic drank while laughing. "There are so many treasures in the Abandoned Deep Sea. Each one can shake the cultivation world. But you only found a bunch of trash. You're still too young with limited taste. Should I take out a treasure to open up your eyes?"

The Crazy Alcoholic couldn't help it. He kept rubbing the Three-Petal Nine Life Flower, wanting to take it out and show it off to Zhang Ruochen. He anticipated seeing Zhang Ruochen envious and jealous.

That scene would definitely be amazing.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen made a soft sound. He took a yellow gourd out of the pile of items. It was a wooden gourd but it had been preserved for hundreds of thousands of years without decaying. It was indeed strange.

“That gourd...is it...”

Seeing it, the Crazy Alcoholic's eyes brightened. He flipped up and reached out to snatch it.

Chapter 1269 - Mercury Gourd

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“What’re you doing?”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the gourd tightly and shot a glare at the Crazy Alcoholic.

“Why’re you so anxious? It’s just a gourd. Do you really think I’ll seize your gourd? Let me see the gourd, young man.”

The Crazy Alcoholic stared at the gourd. And he couldn’t have been more excited.

“It’s just a gourd. Why are you so pushy?”

Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t give it to him. There were some ancient characters sculpted on the gourd.

They were some characters from a long time ago. They were completely different from the characters of the present days.

Crazy alcoholic looked and said, “Can you even understand that? Let me tell you what they’re talking about. Perhaps I can give you a thousand-patterns saint weapon for that gourd. Although that gourd is worth way less than a thousand-patterns saint weapon, I can let you have it since we’re friends.”

“Do you really think I don’t know what they are? They’re seal scripts,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic looked surprised. He said, “You know they’re seal scripts? You’re impressive.”

Seal scripts were characters had descended from the ancient times, and they weren't even in the mainstream character system. Few monks these days could recognize them.

Zhang Ruochen knew what they were talking about. He sighed. "Those characters have the conception of saintly way. Unfortunately, they're just a poem. There's nothing valuable in that script."

Zhang Ruochen was a bit upset. He then looked at the gourd in his hand and said, "However, this gourd is kind of special. It looks like a treasure."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his holy Qi and infused it into the gourd.

Hua La.

A trace of holy Qi gushed out of the gourd and turned into white mist, and it made the icebergs under their feet look like they were from heaven.

The mist formed a long bridge and connected to the ocean.

The more holy Qi there was into the gourd, the more spirit holy Qi that would gush out of the gourd. After a short while, the spirit holy Qi became so dense that it started to rain.

It was raining on the ocean.

"Mercury Gourd. It's Mercury Gourd... There're so many valuables left in the Abandoned Deep Sea. Even a legendary valuable like that shows up," the Crazy Alcoholic said with excitement.

Zhang Ruochen also identified the mercury gourd.

There were five divine trees born in Kunlun's Field, and they were called the five spiritual roots.

The Plantain Divine Tree was called the water spiritual root, and there was a gourd vine grown on the divine tree, which was called the mercury vine.

The gourd grown from the mercury vine was as large as planets, and there was holy Qi of water characteristics on the surface of the gourd. It was raining the entire day.

There were more than ten planets on one vine, so the mercury vine obtained such a name.

The gourds grown on the mercury vine were all taken by the great beings from the ancient times, and they were made into incredible valuables. However, only one or two survived during the chaos at the end of the ancient times.

The eyes of the Crazy Alcoholic turned green. He stared at the mercury gourd in Zhang Ruochen's hand and said, "I heard that the guarding treasure of one of the seven ancient sects, Xinsu Sect, Difa Gourd, is made of a mercury gourd. There's a separate world inside the gourd where there's spirit divine Qi from the ancient times."

Zhang Ruochen was worried that the Crazy Alcoholic would rob him of the treasure.

Even a supreme saint would be tempted by that treasure, not to mention the Crazy Alcoholic.

The Crazy Alcoholic showed his teeth and smiled. "Let's exchange. I'll give you my Three-Petal Nine Life Flower. You're not gonna suffer any loss."

Zhang Ruochen stayed calm, smiled and said, "Are you going to rob me of my gourd if I say no?"

"Rob?"

The Crazy Alcoholic was furious. He said, "Who do you think I am? A gangster? I won't do anything like that. If I really wanted to rob you, everything you have would be mine now. I'm really negotiating with you. We're drinking buddies, how could I rob you for some valuable?"

Zhang Ruochen found that what he said made sense.

Everyone knew that Zhang Ruochen had his stamps, Buddha sarira and the world spirit of Blue Dragon Void World... Each of them was a supreme treasure.

The Crazy Alcoholic knew who he was, yet he had never attacked Zhang Ruochen for those treasures. He wasn't sure whether the Crazy Alcoholic was really a man of honor, or if he had treated Zhang Ruochen as a real friend.

He didn't have any plans to steal the mercury gourd. Instead, he really wanted to strike a bargain with Zhang Ruochen.

The behavior and characteristics of the Crazy Alcoholic were getting more and more bizarre.

He swore that he would never kill anyone, but he had never sworn that he wouldn't rob other people.

Besides, he stole all the alcohol of the Divine Dragon Half-human race. How was that a man of honor?

Zhang Ruochen decided to test him again. He said, "I'm not going to do it."

The Crazy Alcoholic was so anxious. He said, "The mercury gourd is of no use for you. It'll be a waste if you keep it."

"Then what use will it be for you?" Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic said, "Of course, it'll be of great use. Only the spirit holy Qi inside the mercury gourd can make the legendary Six Saints to Sky Wine."

"You don't have the formula to make Six Saints to Sky Wine. Even if you have the gourd, you couldn't make the wine." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

The Crazy Alcoholic shook his head and said, "Even if I'm not going to make Six Saints to Sky Wine, I can improve other wine with the spirit holy Qi in the mercury gourd. The mercury gourd can only be perfectly utilized if I have it."

"That might be the case for you, but the spirit holy Qi inside the gourd can also help me refine. The mercury gourd itself is also an impressive weapon. Perhaps there're other valuables inside the gourd," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic had a hard time suppressing his desire. He really wanted to grab the mercury gourd, but he had sworn before that he would never kill and rob.

Unless there was alcohol involved.

For an alcoholic, it would be agony if he couldn't drink the wine he saw.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a short while and said, “Perhaps you can tell me why you swore that you would never kill again.”

The Crazy Alcoholic rolled his eyes and said, “No.”

“If you want to make wine, I can give you the spirit holy Qi inside the mercury gourd.” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic was tempted. He smiled and sat down. He said, “Promise?”

“Promise.”

The Crazy Alcoholic said, “It’s not something to be ashamed of now. I can tell you everything. I’ll make the story short. Actually, I was forced by that empress to swear.”

“And then?”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised that it had something to do with Chi Yao.

The Crazy Alcoholic shrugged his shoulders. “Nothing.”

It was such a short story.

Zhang Ruochen kept asking. “Why did that empress force you to make a promise?”

The Crazy Alcoholic looked upset and he thought that Zhang Ruochen had asked too many questions. However, to get the spirit holy Qi inside the mercury gourd, he said, “I was captured by her. If I didn’t make the promise, I would have been killed.”

“When did that happen?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

“Six hundred years ago. I can’t remember when exactly!” the Crazy Alcoholic said.

“Six hundred years ago...” Zhang Ruochen mumbled. And then he smiled. “I know that Empress Chi Yao wasn’t an empress six hundred years ago. She was just a princess back then.

“It was documented that princess Chi Yao led an army to attack Moon Worship Demonic Sect and killed Demonic

Emperor in Tong Luyuan. After that, Moon Worship Demonic Sect was crushed, and eighty percent of the great beings were killed. Even after hundreds of years, it hasn't recovered yet.

“That was the last war before Chi Qing Central Empire. After that, all the ancient sects claimed that they would answer to Chi Yao and Qing Emperor.

“Were you captured during that war?”

The Crazy Alcoholic took a sip of wine and waved his hand. “I can't remember.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Crazy Alcoholic didn't want to share much about what had happened before, so he didn't ask any further questions. However, he confirmed that the Crazy Alcoholic might be someone famous from the demonic sect.

Zhang Ruochen opened the gourd and inspected the mercury gourd. He wanted to see whether it was really that mysterious or not.

Zhang Ruochen could see a small black spot inside the lid.

“What is that?”

Zhang Ruochen infused the gourd lid with holy Qi, and the lid became larger and larger. Eventually, it was the size of a lower millstone.

Those black spots also became larger, and they turned into an ancient article again.

They were also written in seal scripts.

The Crazy Alcoholic stared at the characters on the lid, then he yelled and laughed.

Zhang Ruochen was startled. He frowned and looked to the seal scripts. He then laughed, “That formula for making Six Saints to Sky Wine was sculpted on the mercury gourd.

The Crazy Alcoholic grabbed the arms of Zhang Ruochen and said, “Let's make the Sky Wine together, shall we? After all, we'll name it Two Saints to Sky Wine. Our names will be remembered forever.”

Chapter 1270 - Inside The Gourd

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Six Saints to the Sky Wine couldn't be changed to the Two Saints to the Sky Wine. Zhang Ruochen wasn't as shameless as the Crazy Alcoholic.

However, even if they found the recipe, they would need a sect leader skilled in the Alcohol Way to brew it.

The Crazy Alcoholic claimed that he was a master in brewery and Zhang Ruochen believed him for now. After all, the old man was indeed knowledgeable in alcohol. He might really be an expert brewer.

Anyway, Zhang Ruochen had both the recipe and the Mercury Gourd. He could have the Crazy Alcoholic try after they left the Yin Yang Sea. If the Crazy Alcoholic couldn't do it, Zhang Ruochen could find a master of the Alcohol Way.

"I heard that the true form of the Mercury Gourd is the size of a star. The inside must be extremely vast."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the gourd's opening. Closing his eyes, a beam of saint soul power eased out. It formed a figure the size of a rice grain before him.

That was a saint soul body. It possessed the same intelligence and knowledge as Zhang Ruochen, and had part of his strength too. With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he could even shrink himself to this size.

However, Zhang Ruochen wasn't sure about the environment inside the Mercury Gourd. He naturally wouldn't run into it by himself.

“I want to go see too.”

The Crazy Alcoholic also formed a saint soul body. Transforming into a speck of light, he followed closely after Zhang Ruochen and flew into the gourd.

Once inside, he was met with heavy water Spiritual Qi. It was like white clouds.

“This is really a cultivation paradise. Cultivating in the gourd is like cultivating on the Dead Soul Ancient Ship. It’s dozens of times faster than usual.”

Zhang Ruochen could feel water Spiritual Qi enter his body continuously, nourishing his body. The Holy Qi within his Sea of Qi also grew heavier. The feeling was indescribably nice.

Suddenly, the water Spiritual Qi grew chaotic. Dense bolts of lightning appeared, accompanied by deafening thunder. It was filled with danger.

Zhang Ruochen’s reaction speed was very fast. His body kept changing and he quickly passed through the storm area. He continued flying for a long while before finally landing on an island formed by jade.

This river was more than 800 miles long. The liquid wasn’t water—it was water spiritual saintly liquid. The water Spiritual Qi had come from this river.

The Crazy Alcoholic’s saint soul body descended from the sky. Coming to the island, he sighed. “Only this bit of saintly liquid is left.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the boundless river underfoot. He couldn’t even describe how impressed he was, but the Crazy Alcoholic came and said something like this. “Only this bit...,” he said, feeling speechless. “This is only a little bit? This is a huge river of saintly liquid!”

“In legends, the saintly liquid in the Mercury Gourd when it was first taken should be more than 1,000 times more than what you see now.”

“It was preserved from the middle ages and this much could be retained,” Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. “It’s already

impressive. The water saintly liquid of Martial City and Black Market are supplied by the Xinsu Sect and they buy it drop by drop. If the cultivators could see such a huge river, they'd go crazy.”

Saints could use Holy Qi to condense into saintly liquid. However, that was artificial. Both its purity and grade couldn't be compared to the natural saintly liquid in the Mercury Gourd.

The Crazy Alcoholic laughed. “Actually, if you turn the Mercury Gourd into a saint weapon and create a weapon spirit, it can absorb Spiritual Qi automatically. Then it'll convert it into saintly liquid inside. However, the new saintly liquid can only count as artificial. It'll be a bit lower in quality.

“This Mercury Gourd has only been refined once. It's very flexible still. If you find a weapon master, you can totally produce a powerful saint weapon. There are not many masters who can refine the Mercury Gourd in the entire Kunlun's Field. Coincidentally, I know one. Zhang Ruochen, do you want me to introduce him to you?”

“No,” Zhang Ruochen said.

First, he knew a weapon master too. He didn't need the Crazy Alcoholic's introduction. Second, he didn't plan on turning the Mercury Gourd into a saint weapon. He prepared to wait until he was more knowledgeable in time and space. Then he would turn the Mercury Gourd into a time-space item.

To Zhang Ruochen, the Mercury Gourd was the best material for producing a time-space item.

“Fine. Don't come begging me later.”

The Crazy Alcoholic huffed. Not wanting to bother with Zhang Ruochen, he waved his sleeves and flew out of the gourd in a streak of light.

Zhang Ruochen's saint soul body investigated the Mercury Gourd closely. After confirming there was no danger, he flew out of the gourd and re-entered his true body.

“The Mercury Gourd is an optimal cultivation land,” he said. “I'll prepare to go in and try for the middle level.”

After tempering his body, saintly source, and Holy Qi with the Jingmie Divine Fire, all the flawed energy within him was refined. Zhang Ruochen's cultivation could be stabilized quickly. He could try for a breakthrough now.

Before, he would have had to spend a few months to clear out the flawed energy and stabilize his saintly source and Holy Qi. After receiving the Jingmie Divine Fire, it could be said that he would no longer have to spend time to stabilize his power. His cultivation could improve quickly.

“You're trying for a breakthrough so soon? You entered the Saint Realm not long ago, right?”

The Crazy Alcoholic was shocked. After studying Zhang Ruochen, he recovered.

“Back then, it took me four years to go from the lower to upper Saint Realm. It's been so fast already. Ah! Comparing people will really piss you off. Go in and try for a breakthrough without worry. Hand the Mercury Gourd to me. I will definitely protect you.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at him with hesitation.

“Why are you looking at me like that? I swore to never do an evil thing in this life and you still won't give the Mercury Gourd to me?” The Crazy Alcoholic stood with his hands on his hips. Smoke came out of his nose in anger. He felt that Zhang Ruochen was doubting his character.

“I'm only worried,” Zhang Ruochen said. “You might be tempted by a treasure in the Abandoned Deep Sea and try to enter some death zones. You'd kill me too. After all, the higher your cultivation, the more likely you'll die in the Yin Yang Sea.”

“Don't worry. My cultivation can't be compared to those impressive thousand-year fellows, but I'm at least top ten in saving myself. You should know, it's almost impossible to survive Empress Chi Yao's sword, but I'm one of the few who did. You should know how powerful I am now, right?”

The Crazy Alcoholic jutted his chin out. Instead of feeling shame, he thought that he was very impressive.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and didn't say anything else, just telling the Crazy Alcoholic to help find Huang Yanchen and the others. Then Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move. He stepped forward, going past a layer of ripples and entering the Mercury Gourd.

“No wonder he's the Time and Space Descendant. As long as there are no spatial restraint formations, he can go anywhere in the world with ease.”

The Crazy Alcoholic was envious. Taking the Mercury Gourd, he hung it on his hip and steered the ice mountain forward quickly.

Inside the gourd, on the jade island.

“Come out.”

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward. Silver roots extended out of his body, crawling along the jade island to the white water.

The roots were too dense. They covered the entire island.

Whoosh!

A huge green vine flew out of Zhang Ruochen's back. Like a huge dragon, it rushed tens of thousands of feet above the water. There was a beautiful flower at the top of the vine. With a rain of light, it bent down, appearing before Zhang Ruochen.

There was a beautiful woman in the flower. Her skin was as white as goat fat and her figure was slender with the right curves. Her long hair tumbled down like a waterfall. A pair of spirited yet gentle eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen. The tempting red lips opened.

“Master, my current cultivation is only enough to fight half an Absolute Land Saint. If I can absorb enough saintly liquid, I'll be able to fight with a true Absolute Land Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back. “I let you out so you can absorb saintly liquid and reach new heights.”

“Thank you, Master.”

The Holy Carnivorous Flower's voice was flirtatious. She blinked her left eye as if purposely tempting Zhang Ruochen.

With a lovely laugh, the beautiful flower flew out and started absorbing the saintly liquid in the river.

“The Immortal Goddess is close to the Absolute Land Realm. The Siming Goddess of the Earth God Temple and Immortal Goddess both have immeasurable abilities and strange, unpredictable methods. In addition, there are some powerful figures that still haven’t come out. They’re very troublesome.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to have to escape whenever he met them. Thus, he desperately wanted to improve himself and become stronger.

Afterward, he’d be able to fight them squarely.

“As long as I reach the middle level, I’ll be able to counter Absolute Land Saints.”

He sat down cross-legged and formed a print with his hands. Holy Qi rushed through him with loud booms. It was like thousands of rivers crashing through him.

Whoosh—

One hundred and forty-four Holy Qi bridges rose up above the river. They rushed into the 144 apertures on Zhang Ruochen’s body, making the booming sounds inside him even louder.

Chapter 1271 - Chaos Qi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The spirit holy Qi was operated in the gourd, and it turned into holy Qi that belonged to Zhang Ruochen. It then went into the lower abdomen, clashing with the four saint sources.

Hong Long.

The holy Qi inside his body started to boil.

The whirlpools were formed by Divine Fire Jingmie and the four saint sources. They spun faster and faster, and they started to spread out around his body, surrounding the jade island.

The spirit holy Qi gushed into Zhang Ruochen's body more and more quickly. Each trace of holy Qi was like a river, tumbling.

The holy Qi inside Zhang Ruochen became thicker and thicker until it reached a limit.

“Let's add another fire.”

Zhang Ruochen took the dragon pearl that he had obtained from killing the Winged Dragon Lord and swallowed it.

After he swallowed the dragon pearl, it was struck by dozens of holy Qi. It then exploded and turned into countless traces of dragon Qi.

There were ten thousand dragons roaring in his body. Some of the phantoms went into his lower abdomen, some of them slipped into the blood, and some went into his apertures, making the apertures brighter.

After fifteen minutes, the four saint sources started to shake rapidly. It made a bizarre sound, and the four sounds formed a

symbiosis.

Hong!

A great destruction Qi gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body, shaking the spirit holy liquids on the lake.

At the next moment, another sucking power was formed in Zhang Ruochen's body, absorbing the spirit holy Qi in the sky and land.

Carnivorous Holy Flower hid far off. The beautiful woman standing at the center of the flower looked shocked. She said, "He's absorbing everything faster than me. It seems my master has become a mid-class saint."

After three hours, Zhang Ruochen slowed down swallowing the holy Qi.

The beautiful human being flew to the jade island and smiled. "Congratulations, master."

Zhang Ruochen had indeed become a mid-class saint. The saintly way rules became thicker in his body, and his body constitution had improved. Even if he didn't store holy Qi, the holy Qi inside his lower abdomen had increased six times.

Having six times more holy Qi didn't mean that his fighting power was six times higher. Even if the gap between each two levels was huge, it wasn't six times.

Divine Fire Jingmie surged in the lower abdomen again. The fire was as large as a human head. Aside from the size, the temperature also became higher.

Zhang Ruochen was pretty satisfied with the changes that happened after he made breakthrough. He smiled and looked to Carnivorous Holy Flower and asked, "Your power also surged. How strong are you now?"

"I'm not sure how powerful I am now, but I should be able to turn someone like Manlong Dragon Lord into nutrients," Carnivorous Holy Flower said with a smile.

The long vines went back to Zhang Ruochen's back again and merged with his body.

Just before Zhang Ruochen prepared to get out, a huge ripple was transmitted from his lower abdomen. It trembled the four saint sources and Divine Fire Jingmie.

“Is it because my level is improving too fast?”

Zhang Ruochen’s face froze. He immediately inspected the abdomen with his mind power to trace the origin of that destruction Qi ripple.

“Universe Spiritual Map.”

The powerful Qi came from Universe Spiritual Map.

There was a crack on the map, and colorful Qi emanated from the map.

“Is Universe World about to be born?”

Zhang Ruochen was excited but worried.

It was exhilarating for him to see a large world being born in his body.

However, he was also worried that Blackie might be annihilated, as it hadn’t found its real body yet. If the map were crushed, Blackie would die.

There was only a crack on the map, but it wasn’t broken.

“The five-colored Qi... Is that the legendary chaos Qi? Every time a new world is about to be born, there’ll be chaos Qi. It’ll be great for my Five Elements Chaotic Body to absorb the chaos Qi. My body will become sturdier.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled.

Both divine blood and divine dew would improve the body constitution.

The five-colored chaos Qi from the crack flowed into the one hundred and forty-four apertures in Zhang Ruochen’s body through his veins.

The one hundred and forty-four apertures were like one hundred and forty-four lakes. The more water there was, the more the water would nurture the land.

Every moment, Zhang Ruochen could feel that his body was being empowered as if he would become a Taigu Chaos creature.

“I can’t believe I can be benefited like that outside the Universe Spiritual Map. Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, monster ape, White Li Princess, Blood Moon Ghost King and the monks from Blue Dragon Void World have been staying outside the scroll world all this time. They’ve absorbed much more chaos Qi. Will they become chaos creatures?”

The Taigu remains had great body constitution because of the chaos Qi they absorbed.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t calm himself down at all. He couldn’t imagine the scene in the scroll world. After the Universe World was born, there would be lots of talents with great body constitution.

“I have to find Blackie as soon as possible.”

Zhang Ruochen took a long breath. He calmed himself down and walked out of the mercury gourd.

Zhang Ruochen had been through a lot with Blackie. There was a special bond between them, and Blackie was his best friend.

He couldn’t just let his best friend die.

No matter how dangerous it was, Zhang Ruochen had to help Blackie find its real body.

...

Just as the Universe Spiritual Map cracked, Blackie’s body shook on an icy land deep in the Abandoned Deep Sea. It shook and fell on the ice.

“Stop being so lazy and lead the way.”

Qing Mo walked forward and grabbed the tail of Blackie and picked it up.

But then, Qing Mo wasn’t grabbing anything. She yelled and took a step back.

Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan noticed that something was wrong with Blackie. They stopped and looked to Blackie.

Ao Xinyan was surprised as Blackie had become a cluster of ghost shadow. She asked, “Why do you only have a cluster of saint souls left? Where is your flesh?”

“I’ve never had flesh.”

Blackie climbed up and said, “Something serious is wrong with Universe Spiritual Map. The Universe World is about to be born.”

Blackie’s body was very weird. Sometimes, it had a real body, but sometimes, it turned into a cluster of ghost shadows.

“Condense,” Blackie yelled, and the spiritual Qi gushed toward it. Gradually, its body was stabilized and became flesh again.

A translucent mirror showed up above the iceberg.

Hua!

Immortal Goddess walked out of the mirror. She stepped on the ground with her white feet. Her feet were more snow-white than the ice.

She had two beautiful blood-red wings. She had long, black hair, and her eyes were gleaming like stars. She stared at Huang Yanchen and the others. “I’ve finally found them.”

Motian Crown Prince walked out of the ice, carrying the Emperor-killing Demonic Sword. There was fire flowing on his body. He said, “Zhang Ruochen isn’t here.”

“His fiancé is here. He’ll be here soon.”

Ying Huo licked her lips. She had seductive beauty. Perhaps every man would feel horny when they saw her.

Motian Crown Prince stood nearby, but he didn’t look at her. He didn’t dare look at her.

If she wasn’t in his sight, he wouldn’t be tempted.

Motian Crown Prince found an ancient valuable in the Abandoned Deep Sea, and with the power of that valuable, he

absorbed lots of saint blood from ancient corpses. He then became a mid-class saint.

Apparently, Motian Crown Prince also had great luck.

“Why isn’t Qi Sheng here yet?” Motian Crown Prince asked.

Ying Huo stared at the three women and the cat on the ice plain. She played with her hair and said, “We’ve suffered a great loss in the Abandoned Deep Sea, so we can’t encircle Zhang Ruochen. Qi Sheng prepares to team up with the Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace to kill Zhang Ruochen, and then, we’ll try to get the legendary treasure. He should come back soon.”

Hua!

A red human being flashed in the sky and disappeared.

The red human being landed on the top of an iceberg. It was Qi Sheng.

“White Li Prince and Black Li Prince have already reached an agreement. They’re willing to help us on one condition: we should keep Zhang Ruochen alive no matter how hard we crush him. White Li Princess is still with him.”

Qi Sheng was carrying God-killing Cross Shield, and his eyeballs were like two bloody balls, giving out bizarre power.

His holy Qi was merged with the cross shield and formed a circulation. The six wings on his back let out six different powers. They were wind, rain, fire, lightning, light and darkness. With the six powers, he had the strength of six great beings.

He had never utilized those powers, and it was his greatest trump card.

Motian Crown Prince thought that he was already strong enough to rival Qi Sheng, yet he still felt pressured when he was standing beside Qi Sheng.

“Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon?” Motian Crown Prince asked.

Qi Sheng chuckled. “Sky-swallowing agreed to any conditions? If it can kill Zhang Ruochen, it’ll do so faster than anyone else.”

“What an adorable dragon.”

Ying Huo made a lovely laughing sound. It was transmitted into the wind and intertwined with it, making a mesmerizing sound of nature.

Chapter 1272 - Fire Of Fury

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

When Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Mercury Gourd, the Crazy Alcoholic had already steered the ice mountain to very unfamiliar territory.

Whoosh, whoosh.

The Xuan Yin Wind in the air was even more violent. Some formed into human shapes and hit the sea surface, lifting up huge waves in the Abandoned Deep Sea.

The temperature was shockingly low. According to Zhang Ruochen's estimates, even a Half-Saint would probably freeze to death.

Half-Saints and Saints had very high vitalities. In Kunlun's Field, they could rule over a piece of land, but they would become very weak here. They couldn't withstand the extreme cold, just like regular humans.

"Is this place habitable? Even a Saint would freeze if they accidentally fell into the sea. This is terrifying."

Zhang Ruochen had the Jingmie Divine Fire, so he wasn't afraid of the cold. But he still felt shocked.

The Crazy Alcoholic's hair and whiskers were all covered in ice. Drinking the Dragon Fire Wine, he said, "We're already close to the center of the Abandoned Deep Sea. It's known as the Yin center of the Yin Yang Sea and one of the coldest places in Kunlun's Field."

"Is there news of Huang Yanchen and the others?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

“A short while ago, I caught a Saint from the imperial court. According to him, he personally saw those girls and cat enter the center of the Abandoned Deep Sea.”

A silver-white coastline appeared in the distance. One couldn't see its end. It was like the edge of the mainland.

Zhang Ruochen went to the peak of the ice mountain. Gazing toward the coastline, he was taken aback. “How can there be such an icy land in the center of the Abandoned Deep Sea? The water here won't freeze naturally. What's going on?”

The Crazy Alcoholic was also confused. Then terror flashed past his eyes. “That's not land. That's an ice mountain. It's just too big, so it looks like icy land.”

“There's no land?”

“Indeed.”

Zhang Ruochen gasped, muttering to himself, “How can this be?”

“There are two possibilities,” the Crazy Alcoholic said. “First is that countless beings died here. Each one formed an ice mountain and they connected to form this mass of land.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit moved. “How many beings must die to create such a huge piece of land?”

“The second possibility is even more terrifying.”

“How can it be?”

The Crazy Alcoholic's expression turned solemn. After a long silence, he said, “The stronger the being, the bigger the ice mountain after he dies. What if there is only one corpse under this landmass? That is even more terrifying.”

Zhang Ruochen was dumbfounded. “One corpse forming this piece of land...”

The Crazy Alcoholic nodded. “Both possibilities show that this place is extremely dangerous. We can't go in so brashly. According to my years of escape experience, we cannot step foot onto this land. At least, I'm not going.”

The ice mountain came to the edge of this land and stopped. The Crazy Alcoholic was too scared and refused to step foot onto the land. He even wanted Zhang Ruochen to return with him.

“Fine! If you won’t go, I won’t force you, but I am definitely going.”

Zhang Ruochen pushed off from the ice mountain and flew into the sky like a big bird. He landed steadily on the land.

The Crazy Alcoholic stood at the top of the ice mountain and called, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re going to die there anyway, so why don’t you give me the Mercury Gourd? You’ll be contributing to the rise of humanity.”

“Don’t jinx me.”

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to slap the Crazy Alcoholic. He hadn’t even truly ventured into the icy land and the man was already giving him the death sentence.

The Crazy Alcoholic wasn’t satisfied. Staring at Zhang Ruochen’s backside, he called again, “Give the Mercury Gourd to me for safekeeping. I’ll return it when you walk out alive. If you lose this priceless treasure in the icy land, what a loss it’ll be...”

Zhang Ruochen ignored him. He sped up, disappearing in the stinging wind.

The icy land was a vast and boundless tundra. There were no living things. Occasionally, there were some amazing mountains that didn’t fall even in the Xuan Yin Wind. It was incredible.

Zhang Ruochen suspected that Blackie, Huang Yanchen and the others might’ve really entered this land. Blackie’s physical body might be sealed here.

Entering the land, Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power was further restricted. His own eyes and ears were stronger.

Zhang Ruochen used a physical technique and rushed to the top of a peak. Using the Saintly Eye, he searched for traces of the others.

Boom.

A beam of silver light streaked past. There was a figure inside. It crashed into a mountain and fell onto the plains with a loud boom. A large mass of ice crystals flew up like a white cloud.

“That’s... Ao Xinyan’s aura...”

Overjoyed, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move and hurried to where the silver light had fallen.

A miles-long trench had opened up on the icy ground. At the end of it, there was a huge ditch. The surrounding ice had all shattered. Ao Xinyan climbed out of the ditch, her entire body trembling. Blood flowed out of cracks in her Divine Dragon Silver Armor. It was obvious how badly hurt she was. She couldn’t even stand up.

Poof!

She’d just climbed out of the ditch and only half-risen when she spat out a mouthful of blood and knelt onto the ground.

“Run! See where you can run to! Haha!”

The young Manlong Dragon lord strode over with huge steps and laughed maniacally. Charging over to Ao Xinyan, he slapped her with a huge palm, sending her into the ditch again.

An 800-meter-long red flood dragon hurried over too. It was covered in flames. Wherever it went, the ice melted into rivers.

This was a descendant of a divine beast from Ancient Dragon Mountain, known as the Flood Dragon King.

“Don’t kill her,” the Flood Dragon King said. “She has already completed the True Dragon Body. The dragon blood within her is very precious.”

“So many strong figures attacked her together, yet she almost escaped. Her silver armor must be some amazing treasure. Her speed once it’s activated is quite terrifying.”

The young Manlong Dragon lord dragged Ao Xinyan out of the ditch and threw her onto the ground with a thud. His large hand started searching around the armor, trying to take it off.

“I must say, she really is the number one beauty of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan. Not only is her face pretty, her figure is great too. Not many women on Ancient Dragon Mountain can be compared to her. After I take off the armor, I’ll do her.”

Seeing Ao Xinyan’s features so closely, the young Manlong Dragon lord was very tempted. He tried to undo the armor even more desperately.

Ao Xinyan’s face was pale and she felt hopeless. “You’re forcing me to ignite my Sea of Qi and saintly source for us to all die together.”

The young Manlong Dragon lord laughed. “You think I didn’t think of this? Right now, you’re only seeing my saint soul body. Even if you ignite your Sea of Qi and saintly source, you won’t be able to hurt me.”

Ao Xinyan clenched her fists. She wanted to push herself up and continue fighting, but she’d been besieged earlier. She was too badly hurt. It was like her body had been torn apart. She couldn’t stand up at all.

“You all deserve to die. Zhang Ruochen will definitely...kill you all...” Ao Xinyan threatened.

The young Manlong Dragon lord laughed even more loudly. “Zhang Ruochen? He just entered the Saint Realm. Even if he hurries over, he’ll just be here to die. I can kill him with one hand.”

In the distance, the Flood Dragon King transformed into human shape and scoffed. “That fiancée of his should have been captured already. The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon already said he wants to marry her to humiliate Zhang Ruochen. I actually wish he could come. That man is too arrogant. It’ll be good to make him know what pain is worse than death.”

Zhang Ruochen used five Great Spatial Moves and finally came to the vicinity. He happened to hear the young Manlong Dragon lord and Flood Dragon King’s conversation. When he

saw Ao Xinyan lying in a puddle of blood, fury rose up in his heart.

“Such big words. If you want me to know what pain is, you’re far from enough.”

With a cold cry, Zhang Ruochen transformed into a ghostly figure and shot at the young Manlong Dragon lord with the fastest speed.

Instead of shock, the young lord was pleased. Chuckling, he said, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re finally here!”

“Die.”

Zhang Ruochen struck out. A golden dragon flew out of his palm, shining with dazzling light. The young Manlong Dragon lord’s hands transformed into dragon claws. He pressed down, clashing with the golden dragon.

Crack.

The young Manlong Dragon lord’s claws and body shattered instantly into various parts. Each part further shattered into dragon-shaped balls of Holy Qi.

“It’s only a saint soul body.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes hardened. He hurriedly lowered himself to check Ao Xinyan’s injuries.

She was severely injured. Her body was all ratty, but thankfully, her True Dragon Qi connected her broken body. The Divine Dragon Silver Armor also had mysterious power that was pouring vitality into her, so she hadn’t died yet.

When she saw Zhang Ruochen, she was overjoyed and touched. Tears flowed out of her eyes.

Every time she was in danger, Zhang Ruochen would appear like her savior, rescuing her. Without realizing, she’d come to rely on Zhang Ruochen.

As long as Zhang Ruochen was here, she would feel safe.

Of course, she was still worried about Zhang Ruochen’s safety. Bearing the pain from her injuries, she said, “The Flood Dragon King is in the Xuanhuang Realm and is a Divine Beast

descendant. His combat abilities are like a Half Absolute Realm Saint. The young Manlong Dragon lord's true body is nearby too... Team Leader, you must be careful."

"Stop talking and rest well. Hand this to me. I'll make them pay tenfold."

Zhang Ruochen took out a Spring Pill and fed it to Ao Xinyan.

When the Flood Dragon King saw that Zhang Ruochen had suddenly appeared and still hadn't retreated, his expression grew happy. Zhang Ruochen seems furious, he thought. I can take this chance to kill him.

The Flood Dragon King had seen Zhang Ruochen fight before and knew his abilities. He was only a lower Saint and couldn't really do much. The Flood Dragon King wasn't afraid at all.

Smiling, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, you're here just in time. I will capture you today and give you to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon as a big gift."

Zhang Ruochen peered at him sideways and stood up. "Great," he said coldly. "I also want to kill you as a big gift to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon."

Chapter 1273 - Killing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen only saw Ao Xinyan. He didn't see Huang Yanchen, which got him worried. He became anxious and hostile, and he rushed toward Cobra King without hesitation. He clenched his fist, and blood Qi was let out, forming a blood-red cloud.

He wielded his palm, and the seven apertures on his palm were gleaming like seven stars.

The palm Qi was like a tornado, hitting Cobra King, making him unable to stand still.

“It's just the palm wind, but it's already so powerful. Is Zhang Ruochen still just a lower-class saint?”

Cobra King didn't dare underestimate Zhang Ruochen anymore. He mobilized the holy Qi in his body, and it rushed toward his legs and arms. Suddenly, his legs and arms turned into giant claws that breathed crimson fire.

The four fiery clouds melted the ice and formed a lake that was ten miles long and ten miles wide. The water was boiling.

Zhang Ruochen's palm strength tore the fiery clouds apart to hit Cobra King. Following a bone cracking sound, Cobra King's left claw was crushed.

“How can he be so powerful? I can't even handle one of his strikes?”

Cobra King felt that Zhang Ruochen was extremely powerful. A palm print was like five mountains crushing his body. He couldn't handle it at all.

Cobra King stopped fighting Zhang Ruochen directly. He turned around and started to flee.

“Stop running.” Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and showed up above Cobra King, wielding his palm again.

Cobra King was dazed. He yelled and breathed out sound waves, which turned into layers of attack waves. Meanwhile, Xuanhuang Qi gushed out of his pores. He turned back to his original body.

His original body was more than fifteen hundred feet long. He had four claws. He looked like a dragon but a snake at the same time. He curled his tail and splashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen ignored the sound wave attack and moved through the ripples. He hit the tail of Cobra King with his hand, and it almost cut the tail off.

Cobra King yelled in agony and ran faster.

“Why are you still standing by, Manlong Dragon Lord?” Cobra King yelled.

If Manlong Dragon Lord still didn't show up, Cobra King would have to use fleeing techniques to escape, as he didn't dare fight Zhang Ruochen alone anymore.

“You're just useless. You got injured so soon. No wonder you can't turn into a real dragon.”

Manlong Dragon Lord was more than fifty feet tall. He looked like a giant carrying a black axe. He was running rapidly on the ice, and each step he took was more than two thousand feet apart.

Manlong Dragon Lord's axe was destroyed by Qing Mo. The axe he was using now had been dug out from an iceberg from the Abandoned Deep Sea. It was a higher-class ancient saint weapon with great power.

Manlong Dragon Lord also had great luck these days, and his cultivation surged. His power was very close to saints at the Absolute Ground Realm now.

Before he was around ten miles away from Zhang Ruochen, Manlong Dragon Lord surged like an artillery bullet, wielding his axe.

The axe that was more than thirty feet long had thousands of inscriptions on it, giving off traces of thousand-patterns destruction. The destruction formed a cluster of clouds.

The axe became larger and was wielded toward Zhang Ruochen.

Manlong Dragon Lord's power was so terrific that Ao Xinyan was worried. She yelled, "Beware, leader!"

The icy plain started to sink.

"You're going to die, Zhang Ruochen!"

Cobra King ran while laughing.

Zhang Ruochen sneered and reached out his hand in the space. The Ancient Abyss Sword showed up in his palm, and he wielded the sword.

A black sword shadow that was more than a thousand feet long surged.

There were tens of thousands of sword Qi in the sky and land, surrounding the sword shadow.

Hong Long.

The clouds formed by thousand-patterns destruction were torn by the sword Qi. The Ancient Abyss Sword and the axe clashed with each other.

Pa! There was a crack on the axe, and essence gushed out of the crack, rushing into the blade of the Ancient Abyss Sword.

"How is that possible..."

Manlong Dragon Lord was shocked as if he had seen the most horrible thing.

That axe was a very impressive ancient saint weapon. He had gotten the axe from the body of a true saint. Manlong Dragon Lord planned to use it as his main weapon, but he didn't expect that it would crack in the first battle. It seemed that

normal ancient weapons wouldn't ward off the Ancient Abyss Sword.

Peng.

The axe completely cracked, turning into metal fragments and a cluster of black essence.

The Ancient Abyss Sword absorbed the metal fragments and the black essence.

Cobra King was frightened. Zhang Ruochen was too powerful to stop.

Without any hesitation, Cobra King performed a technique. His blood started to burn, and he became several times faster.

Even true saints couldn't catch up with him.

A space ripple showed up in front of him. Zhang Ruochen walked out of the ripples and said, "I told you that you can't run away. Why are you still trying?"

Zhang Ruochen moved his body and fell on the head of Cobra King. He performed seventeen palm prints, crushing his guarding light masks and his head.

Pa! Cobra King fell on the ground, lifeless.

In another direction, Manlong Dragon Lord was injured by the Ancient Abyss Sword. There was a huge sword wound on his back.

"Zhang Ruochen, your fiancé should've been captured by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, his highness, already, yet you still dared kill a saint beast from Ancestral Dragon Mountain. Do you know what you're facing next?" Manlong Dragon Lord said.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything. He grabbed his Abyss Ancient Sword tightly and performed human sword. He then dashed toward Manlong Dragon Lord like a trace of black light.

Hua La La.

The black light left a gully that was sixty feet deep, extending toward Manlong Dragon Lord.

“I’m not Cobra King. You can’t kill me.”

There were dragon characters on the body of Manlong Dragon Lord.

Those dragon characters formed an enchantment.

The dragon characters were scripted by a saint king from the savage dragon race. It was called ‘Solidified Dragon Enchantment.’ It had great defense power. Even true saints needed to make several strikes to break it.

Only the pure-blood members could have that enchantment on their bodies.

There was a solidified dragon enchantment on Winged Dragon Lord’s body too. Unfortunately, before it could trigger the enchantment, it was killed by Zhang Ruochen.

Peng.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t pierce through the solidified dragon enchantment. He was warded off.

The dragon characters that formed the solidified dragon enchantment were like dragons themselves, giving off golden light. It protected the body of Manlong Dragon Lord, making his body gleam.

“Useless. I have the solidified dragon enchantment to protect myself. No one can kill me. Only I can kill others.”

Manlong Dragon Lord mobilized the power all over his body. He hit the Ancient Abyss Sword.

A large sound was blasted before Zhang Ruochen was knocked away.

Savage dragons were known for their great strength. No other races could rival them in strength at the same level. The strike it wielded was at the same level as some of the monks at the Absolute Ground Realm.

“I remember that you were crushed by a girl a while ago. Your solidified dragon enchantment didn’t seem to help you much,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Manlong Dragon Lord's eyes turned red. The fight against Qing Mo was a shame of his life as he didn't have the power to fight back.

"That's not a girl! It's a ferocious plant that has tens of thousands of years of cultivation. That silver kitchen knife she holds is definitely a godly remains ancient weapon. Even a solidified dragon enchantment can't ward it off," Manlong Dragon Lord yelled.

"It's not a difficult job for me to break your solidified dragon enchantment," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Die."

Manlong Dragon Lord's palm became a dragon claw and slapped down.

That dragon claw was covered by golden enchantments. It was dozens of times larger than the body of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to dodge it. There were sounds of dragons and elephants. He slapped forward and clashed with the dragon claw.

Pa Pa.

The iceberg under his feet was crushed.

"Your strength is nothing against mine." Manlong Dragon Lord laughed.

"Break."

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's palm. There were golden enchantments from Divine Fire Jingmie, and they turned into traces of golden dragon Qi.

"Impossible... What kind of fire is that? How is it more powerful than Nanling Dragon Fire?"

Manlong Dragon Lord couldn't defend himself against Jingmie Divine Dragon at all. His claw was burnt into ashes.

Manlong Dragon Lord cut off his arm to stop the blue fire from spreading.

And then, he triggered his fleeing technique to try to escape.

“You’re not getting away!”

Zhang Ruochen stopped Manlong Dragon Lord from running away. He wielded his sword and slashed toward Manlong Dragon Lord. There was a large blood-red wound on his belly, and he almost cut his body into halves.

“Don’t kill me. Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon might’ve captured your fiancé already. Spare my life so that I can be your bargaining chip.”

Manlong Dragon Lord knew that he couldn’t run away, so he begged for his life.

“I don’t need a bargaining chip,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Then we’ll die together.”

Manlong Dragon Lord’s face was twisted. He triggered the dragon pearl in his body and tried to blow himself up.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t give him that chance at all.

Pu Chi.

The Ancient Abyss Sword fell from the sky and pierced the body of Manlong Dragon Lord. It pierced through his lower abdomen.

Zhang Ruochen took out the dragon pearls from Manlong Dragon Lord and Cobra King, and then, he rushed to Ao Xinyan and said, “Where are Yanchen, Qing Mo and Blackie? Take me to them now.”

Chapter 1274 - Five-colored Ice Gorge

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen carried the heavily injured Ao Xinyan and fled with his greatest speed. His eyes were as cold as knives. He appeared and reappeared using the Great Spatial Move.

According to Ao Xinyan, they'd suffered from a siege by many Saints from the Immortal Vampires, Nine Li Palace, and Ancient Dragon Mountain. At the critical moment, Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo activated the Heir Stamp with all their might to force an escape route for her.

Unfortunately, the young Manlong Dragon lord and Flood Dragon King were too much stronger than her. They heavily injured her and she couldn't escape in the end.

If Zhang Ruochen hadn't hurried over in time, the consequences would've been unthinkable.

Zhang Ruochen felt the urgency. He pushed his speed to the extreme.

Qing Mo was indeed powerful, but her true combat abilities weren't that strong. She also had a disadvantage in numbers, so she might not be able to last long.

After a while, Ao Xinyan brought Zhang Ruochen to where they'd been attacked. The icy land had been shattered. Some cracks reached hundreds of miles away. Some ditches were thousands of meters deep. Chaotic energy filled the world.

Some of the broken ice had been dyed red from both human and savage beast blood. There were also countless Saint

corpses sealed in ice. Some had been torn apart by cat claws. Others had been killed by a kitchen knife.

Zhang Ruochen checked one of the Blood Saint corpses. The strongest spine had actually been sliced neatly, splitting the corpse in half. It was obvious he'd suffered from a blow from the silver kitchen knife.

Had even Qing Mo gone into a rage?

They couldn't find Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo on this icy field. Zhang Ruochen's expression turned frigid.

"Enter the gourd and heal. I'll continue to search for them."

Zhang Ruochen sent Ao Xinyan into the Mercury Gourd. He found a remnant of Holy Qi from Huang Yanchen at the fringe of the plain and he chased forward.

On the ground, he found more bloodstains. The aura coming from them belonged to Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo.

"Please don't let anything happen. Please."

After around 300 miles, a gigantic ice gorge appeared on the plain. Beams of five-colored light poured out of the bottom. Like polar lights, they turned the sky multicolored, looking extremely beautiful.

Two Saint Beasts guarded the border. One was a Dragon Li Cat with thick scales. The other was a stone turtle the size of a millstone.

Those who could venture into the center of the Abandoned Deep Sea were naturally very strong. The weak ones had already died along the way.

The Dragon Li Cat was surrounded by a saint soul territory that could fend off the terrifying cold. White smoke came out of his nose. "There must be an extreme treasure in the bottom. Otherwise, why would it have five-colored light?"

"It can also be filled with danger," the stone turtle said. "The five-colored light carries Extreme Yin Dragon Qi. With our cultivation, we'll be sealed in ice the instant we touch it."

Being sealed in ice meant death.

“So you’re saying that the two injured women and the black cat definitely died after getting thrown in by the demoness and Crown Prince Qitian?”

“Anyway, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and two princes of your Nine Li Palace entered the gorge,” the stone turtle said. “Even if they didn’t die, they would have been captured. Now, we’re just waiting for Zhang Ruochen to come on a suicide mission. We’ll take care of him and then split the treasures under this ice land.”

The Dragon Li Cat laughed. “Zhang Ruochen is just too arrogant. He thinks that he’s undefeatable because he’s the Time and Space Descendant. He dares to offend the Ancient Dragon Mountain, Nine Li Palace, and Immortal Vampires at the same time. These three forces can pulverize him with just a finger.”

“Zhang Ruochen captured Princess White Li,” the stone turtle said. “That is taboo for the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. His Majesty has ordered us to capture Huang Yanchen alive and send her to the Sky-swallowing Dragon Palace to make Zhang Ruochen suffer something worse than death.”

“Where did Zhang Ruochen go? How come he still hasn’t come? Did he sense the danger and run out of the Yin Yang Sea? I wish he’d come quickly. Torturing the strongest young human must be an interesting thing.” The Dragon Li Cat sneered.

“He can escape today but not the next day. As long as he’s in Kunlun’s Field, killing him will be as easy as killing an insect for the Ancient Dragon...Mountain...”

Before the stone turtle could finish, a young human appeared before him. The man stood on the ice plain with a long sword, radiating with sharp murderous intent.

“Are you talking about me?”

The figure grew clearer. He wore a white robe and his hair fell down both sides of his cheeks, revealing a handsome face.

“Zhang Ruochen,” the stone turtle said, voice trembling. It was quite unexpected. They were just talking about Zhang

Ruochen and he actually appeared.

Purple-red light emerged from the stone turtle's stomach. Light flowed to his neck and he spat out purple-red flames. His reaction speed in a fight wasn't like a turtle at all. It was too fast. He spat out fire as soon as he saw Zhang Ruochen.

The stone turtle was a Taigu Remain and had lived for more than 1,000 years. Even though he cultivated slowly, he had a long lifespan. They had some of the longest lifespans of all races. His cultivation had also been challenged for 1,000 years. He was practically unchallenged in his own realm.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid of the stone turtle's flames. He ran through the fire. Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, he pushed out the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns and struck down.

“What? The Purple Geofire can't hurt him. Is this man's physical body made out of divine metal?”

The stone turtle stopped spitting fire. Holy Qi surged to his back. Purple-red veins appeared on his back. They looked like ancient words and actually started moving.

Boom.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was impossibly strong. It cut through seven layers of flaming words in a row, producing seven huge booms. Firelight splattered. It got closer and closer to the turtle.

The stone turtle was shocked. Even with its defensive power, it couldn't fend off Zhang Ruochen's attack. What kind of incredible weapon was that sword?

“Zhang Ruochen, you're finally here to die. I will kill you.”

The Dragon Li Cat roared. Reaching out a paw, he swatted. The cat paw was shaped like a dragon claw. The longer it stretched, the bigger it became. Finally, it was multiple times larger than the Dragon Li Cat's body.

The Dragon Li Cat was at the peak of the Xuanhuang Realm. He wasn't weak. Xuanhuang Qi surged out. The claws

produced deafening wind. The force that it carried shook the space.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Dragon Li Cat and struck down with his sword.

Poof.

Saintly blood splattered. The Dragon Li Cat's paw was shattered by Sword Qi, turning into a spray of blood.

With a pained cry, the Dragon Li Cat retreated quickly. He prepared to gather saintly power to regrow the broken claw.

The stone turtle's defense was too strong, especially after the purple-red ancient words were activated on his back. He actually formed ten layers of light. Even the Abyss Ancient Sword couldn't hack through them.

Zhang Ruochen gave up on the stone turtle. Hefting up the black sword, he rushed at the Dragon Li Cat.

Seeing the charging Zhang Ruochen, the Dragon Li Cat didn't have his earlier confidence. He retreated even faster. Right now, Zhang Ruochen was completely different from when they were on Dragon Fire Island. He was practically a death god. His combat abilities were crazy too.

"Didn't you want to kill me? Why are you escaping?" Zhang Ruochen ran up.

The Dragon Li Cat felt the icy Qi coming from Zhang Ruochen. It was even colder than the Qi in the ice gorge. He truly didn't dare to fight with Zhang Ruochen anymore. Go all out! He thought.

He suddenly jumped into the ice gorge.

The Dragon Li Cat didn't fall directly. Instead, he pounced at the five-colored ice wall on the right, wanting to gain footing on the wall.

"Die."

Zhang Ruochen slammed forward, sending a spatial crack flying. It hit the Dragon Li Cat.

Poof.

The Dragon Li Cat was shattered. Only some bits of flesh remained. They flew out from the sides of the spatial crack and fell into the ice gorge.

As soon as the bits of flesh touched the five-colored light, there were crackles and they turned into ice.

Zhang Ruochen had actually killed a Saint like the Dragon Li Cat so easily. Only a few short days had passed, but his abilities had reached a terrifying level.

The stone turtle was in fear. Trembling, he said, “You dared to kill a Saint Beast of the Nine Li Palace. You’ve utterly offended them and will definitely be punished. No human can save you anymore.”

“Not only do I want to kill him, I also want to kill you. Sword Seven.”

Zhang Ruochen was filled with overwhelming sword intent. Thousands upon thousands of sword shadows appeared in the air.

They whooshed into Zhang Ruochen’s body. Then he transformed into a streak of light and hit the stone turtle before he could even react.

Thud, thud.

The ten layers of purple-red runes on the stone turtle were all penetrated by Sword Qi. Zhang Ruochen had used all his power with this strike. With the additional power of the Abyss Ancient Sword, he was very close to a saint sword.

The stone turtle was thrown into the air. The shell was dislocated from his body.

A turtle without a shell would have reduced defensive abilities. It was like a stone worm. He fell onto the ice with a thud. The turtle was terrified and fled toward the ice gorge.

Zhang Ruochen flashed forward and appeared above the turtle. Grasping his sword hilt, he stabbed downward. The sword cut three feet in and red blood flowed down along the blade.

“Tell me,” Zhang Ruochen said coldly. “Are Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo alive or not?”

“I don’t know!” the stone turtle said while screaming in pain.

“Don’t know?”

Zhang Ruochen used more power. The Abyss Ancient Sword cut in deeper and more blood poured out, dyeing his white robe red.

“I really don’t know,” the stone turtle wailed. “Earlier, Crown Prince Qitian and the demoness from the Immortal Pavilion activated the origin power of the God-killing Cross Shield. They sent the two humans and black cat you’re looking for into the ice gorge. Before that, their bodies were already splitting apart. They probably died in the gorge.”

Poof!

With a beam of dark light, the Abyss Ancient Sword cut through the stone turtle’s skull. With a long trail of light, he beheaded the turtle.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold and sharp. He grabbed the sword hilt. Without any hesitation, he jumped down into the ice gorge.

Chapter 1275 - Kept Crushing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The ice hole led all the way to the bottom. It looked like a five-colored lake with a diameter of a hundred miles. It was relatively large.

It was shrouded down there in the ice hole. There was five-colored light flowing around. It seemed to lead to the center of the glacier land.

Some of the five-colored light was let out from the bottom. It gushed up like mist, smoke, dragons, and snakes... It emanated cold forces, and one could feel the coldness more than ten feet away.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stick to the ice wall. He jumped into the ice hole.

“What's that five-colored light?”

Zhang Ruochen was curious as the five-colored light was kind of similar to chaos Qi. He grabbed the Ancient Abyss Sword and touched the five-colored light.

Chi Chi!

There was five-colored ice on the sword. The cold Qi gushed into the arm of Zhang Ruochen, clotting the blood and holy Qi in his right arm.

Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie to repel the coldness Qi in his right arm.

“There is extreme Yin Dragon Qi inside the five-colored light.” Zhang Ruochen was dazed.

Zhang Ruochen kept performing spatial move to dodge the five-colored light.

Extreme Yin Dragon Qi was one of the coldest powers in the world. It was as strong as Nanling Dragon Fire, but they were the opposites of each other. To saints with extreme Yin body constitution, it was invaluable.

It was fatal too. If the saint couldn't tame it, he could be killed too.

The five-colored light became thicker and thicker. Even if Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of space, he found it exhausting. He had to slow down diving.

“Yanchen and Qing Mo can't mobilize the power of space. They might be frozen if they touch the five-colored light.” Zhang Ruochen couldn't be more upset.

He tried to think of something great, but he couldn't think of anything.

Relatively, Blackie was safer.

It didn't have the flesh, and instead, it was only a device from the Universal Spiritual Map. As long as the map wasn't destroyed, normal saints couldn't kill it. Even Extreme Yin Dragon Qi couldn't kill it.

There were immortal vampires and saint beasts on the right side of Zhang Ruochen.

They tried to go down with their bodies against the wall.

Obviously, they weren't just looking for Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo. They felt that there might be treasures at the bottom of the ice hole, otherwise, they wouldn't risk getting killed by going deep into the hole.

A cat lady that had reached Xuanhuang Realm stuck to the ice wall. She was wearing blue armor, and it was showing perky breasts, a white belly, and long legs.

She was a saint beast from Nine Li Palace. There was white holy light coming out of her body, and she had sharp claws.

“The five-colored light becomes thicker and thicker. If we keep going down, we might be in danger. Those two human women have been severely injured. They might’ve been killed already. There’s no need to keep searching for them.”

The cat lady crawled very slowly. She didn’t dare climb down anymore.

There was a trace of five-colored light passing her, and it almost fell on her body. The coldness from the five-colored light almost froze her body.

A golden saint cat with three eyes was walking in front of the cat lady. Its body and hair were made of gold, and it had a deep voice. “Perhaps it has great treasures left by the divine dragon race. White Li Prince and Black Li Prince are both going down. There might be some secrets down there that we don’t know of.”

“Someone’s here.”

The cat lady moved her ear. It seemed that she sensed something, and she saw a man in red standing near her. He wielded sword Qi and cut the five-colored ice wall.

Pa Pa.

There was a crack that was more than one hundred feet long on the ice wall, and ice started to fall.

Zhang Ruochen meant to break the ice wall, leaving the immortal vampires and saint beasts unbalanced so that they would fall into the ice hole.

He didn’t expect the ice wall to be that solid. Even though he used all his power to wield that sword, there was only a crack. He failed to make the ice crumble.

He had to keep killing.

The cat lady was startled, then she yelled, “Zhang Ruochen!”

“Careful. Zhang Ruochen has entered the ice hole, and he’s coming at us.”

The three-eyed golden cat stopped. She turned around with her fur stiffened like thorns. She had a great evil force coming out

of her body.

The saint beasts from Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace all made their bodies smaller to dodge the five-colored light, including that three-eye golden saint cat. It was only one foot long, as large as an ordinary cat.

All the blood saints and saint beasts stopped and looked up.

“Good. We were trying to force him to show up by capturing his fiancé. Now that he’s here, we will have fewer problems.”

“Zhang Ruochen, we’ve killed your fiancé. Are you here to pick up her body? Haha.”

“Everyone, team up and kill Zhang Ruochen first, then we’ll go look for the valuables from the divine dragon race.”

...

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ice wall. He kept diving and wielding the Ancient Abyss Sword, forming sword Qi.

The cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat were attacked by sword Qi.

Only after being exposed to the sword Qi did they realize how powerful Zhang Ruochen’s sword mastery was. There were several sword wounds on the cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat.

“How did Zhang Ruochen become so strong?”

The cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat made blood-curdling screams. They each took out an ancestral device and activated the savage barren power inside the ancestral devices. They kept going down.

Seeing the two saint beast cats, a pure-blood dragon sneered, “Zhang Ruochen can intimidate you like this. You two are a shame to Nine Li Palace! I’ll go kill him now.”

The pure-blood dragon turned into human form. It was wearing armor, and it had a giant body, holding a round shield and a fighting sword. It had tremendous power as if it were the God of War. It went to fight Zhang Ruochen, rushing by the cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat.

The cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat both looked arrogant. They both thought the pure-blood dragon was arrogant. It would definitely be killed as it didn't even know the power of Zhang Ruochen.

Peng!

Peng!

After two cracking sounds, the shield and the blade were crushed.

A blood-curdling scream was transmitted out.

The pure-blood dragon was severely injured by Zhang Ruochen. It detached from the ice wall and fell into the ice hole.

Hua!

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword, and black sword light flew out.

That pure-blood dragon turned back to its original form. It was more than three hundred feet long, and it was cut into halves. The blood was spilling like a waterfall, but it was frozen very quickly.

“Jiaolong Dragon Lord was killed after only a breath.”

They finally understood why the cat lady and the three-eye golden saint cat would choose to run. Zhang Ruochen was so powerful that he looked like a sword saint.

Hong Long Long.

Zhang Ruochen fully mobilized the holy Qi inside his body. The Ancient Abyss Sword had also been fully utilized. All of a sudden, five saints were killed, and their bodies disintegrated.

With that sword in his hand, nobody could stop him.

All the saint beasts and blood saints were terrified, and they kept running down.

Two roars came out of the ice hole.

And then, two blood-red clouds rushed upward.

There was a death knight on each blood-red cloud, and they were both wearing ten-saints blood armor. They were holding spears of death and confronting Zhang Ruochen.

The death knights had great power, and each of them had the power to fight a saint at the level of Absolute Ground Saint.

“We’re here to kill you, following the Goddess’s order,” a death knight yelled.

“You’ll be killed. I’ll kill you before I kill her.”

Zhang Ruochen wielded a sword technique. The Ancient Abyss Sword flew out, and it turned black and appeared as if it had a diameter of three hundred feet. It dived and hit the death knight underneath.

Zhang Ruochen moved his body, and the death knight on the left performed palm prints, crushing toward a dragon and an elephant.

The death knight wielded his spear, and destruction Qi gushed out, tearing the dragon and the elephant apart.

Zhang Ruochen’s body moved, and he changed his direction. He showed up beside the death knight and hit him.

Peng.

The death knight couldn’t ward off that strike. He was knocked away.

The death knight felt that his arm was hurting as if some huge hammer had hit his bone. He was shocked. “Not even the power of ten saints could stop him. How can he be that powerful? Perhaps Zhang Ruochen has become a mid-class saint already.”

The palm wind flew toward him again.

The palm strength of Zhang Ruochen was glowing with golden light, and he was hitting the death knight like a sun.

Peng Peng.

The death knight was spitting out blood. Half of his body was knocked into the ice wall. However, he was wearing Ten

Saints Blood Armor. The defense power prevented him from being killed.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop. He kept performing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. It didn't pierce through the Ten Saints Blood Armor, but it turned the body of the death knight into meat.

“So powerful. Even the death knight was killed.”

The cat lady was scared. She didn't dare stay here any longer. She tried to get to the bottom of the ice hole.

Chapter 1276 - Stone Bridge

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

One Death Knight had been beaten to death by Zhang Ruochen. Even his Ten Saints Blood Armor was useless. It couldn't survive Zhang Ruochen's palm print at all.

All the Saints present were terrified, thinking that Zhang Ruochen was an undefeatable god of death.

They thought that the three forces together could kill Zhang Ruochen as easily as killing an ant. In reality, they were very wrong. The three forces all suffered great losses. After all, not many Saints could survive all the challenges to arrive at the ice land. Now, Zhang Ruochen killed a huge group. There were less than 15 Saints in total from the three forces.

Each death was a big matter. The remaining Saints all fled in panic, rushing down.

Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move and charged at a Death Knight. He was currently neck-in-neck fighting with the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The sword spirit of the Abyss Ancient Sword emerged, hovering at the sword hilt. It was a three-inch-tall man with a pair of black wings. The sword spirit was controlling this battle sword to fight with the Death Knight.

When the Abyss Ancient Sword became a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, the sword spirit would be able to form a true body. By then, it could even cultivate on its own, absorbing Spiritual Qi. It wouldn't need Zhang Ruochen's Holy Qi for support.

As long as Zhang Ruochen's sword intent wasn't extinguished, the sword spirit would be able to take over the sword to

continue fighting. He could fly to ten thousand miles away to kill enemies.

That Death Knight had personally seen Zhang Ruochen slap another Death Knight to death. He knew that he wasn't Zhang Ruochen's match. Thus, when he saw Zhang Ruochen appear beside him, he said coldly, "Today, I will kill you and rid us of a great enemy of the Immortal Vampires."

"Where do you get the confidence to kill me?" Zhang Ruochen grabbed the hilt of the Abyss Ancient Sword. He brought it down, Sword Qi falling down like a waterfall.

"It won't be hard to kill you."

A cold decisive look filled the Death Knight's eyes. A blood-red bead inside his heart spun quickly and exploded with a boom. Then a blood-red mass of Death God Light came out of the Death Knight's body like a roaring tidal wave. It formed ring after ring of blood light, turning the ice gorge blood-red.

Zhang Ruochen cut down with a sword. Attacked by the Death God Light, the sword grew slower and slower. Even the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns was being reduced.

"Oh no, the Death God Knight used taboo force."

Zhang Ruochen had heard the Moon-burial Sword Saint mention this before. Each Death Knight had a treasure inside him that could unleash incredible force. Even he was a bit scared.

However, the treasure was fused with the Death Knight's body. Once activated, he would die too. Thus, the Death Knight wouldn't use the force unless there were no other choices.

What kind of power would make even a Sword Saint terrified?

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen activated the Ten Saints Blood Armor to protect himself. He used the Spatial Move at the same time and rushed into the Mercury Gourd.

Kaboom.

The Death Knight struck the gourd with a battle spear. The gourd seemed to be wooden, but the spear didn't leave any

marks. The gourd spun and smashed into the five-colored ice wall with a boom. A part of the ice wall collapsed.

Zhang Ruochen fell onto the jade island in the Mercury Gourd. His back was bleeding. Even though he'd escaped fast enough and had the Ten Saints Blood Armor to fend it off, the spear's Qi had still hit his back. It had almost penetrated his body.

“Such terrifying taboo strength. It's only a wisp of Qi, but I couldn't fend it off now. No wonder not many people can escape from a Death Knight's pursuit.”

If it wasn't Zhang Ruochen, and were an Absolute Land or Heaven Pass Saint instead, they would definitely get killed by the Death Knight.

That burst of power could threaten a true Saint. Of course, the stronger the power, the bigger the expenses.

Zhang Ruochen believed that the Death Knight wouldn't be able to continue fighting in that state. He could only attack a few times at most. Then his strength would plummet, even becoming weaker than before, until he was completely sapped dry.

Boom.

The Death Knight used his strongest attacks to keep attacking the Mercury Gourd, trying to smash it open. In his eyes, it was only a gourd. It couldn't protect Zhang Ruochen's life.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes, using a technique. Without using any pills or medicine, his back injury healed with a speed visible to the naked eye.

The Death Knight's attacks were weakening. Zhang Ruochen didn't wait any longer. He rushed out of the Mercury Gourd, appearing above the Death Knight. “Now,” he uttered, “it's my turn!”

Whoosh!

A beam of black sword light fell down on the Death Knight.

He'd already used up 90% of his energy and couldn't fend off the Abyss Ancient Sword at all. The sword penetrated the Ten

Saints Blood Armor, stabbing down at the Death Knight's head.

With a poof, the Death Knight's body exploded like a cracked watermelon.

Zhang Ruochen charged to the bottom of the ice gorge. A while later, an ancient hundred-meter-wide stone bridge appeared below him. It crossed the entire ice gorge, hovering in the air. Only a portion of the bridge was revealed. Most of it was covered by five-colored light.

On the surface of the ice land, the gorge was 100 miles in diameter. The lower one went, the bigger the ice gorge was. This meant that the bridge was far longer than 100 miles. Merely thinking about it was impressive.

Even a Saint couldn't construct such a majestic stone bridge in the Yin center of the Yin Yang Sea.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the end of the stone bridge. He was immediately met with an ancient aura. The feeling was very strange. It gave him the feeling that he'd suddenly been transported to the ancient times.

Each pattern carved on the stone bridge was filled with mysterious saintly power. One could comprehend a King-level technique if one studied carefully.

Even though he was inside the ice gorge, the boundless feeling that Zhang Ruochen felt was like standing in the center of the universe. This feeling didn't last long. Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt that the space was extremely cramped. It was like being stuck in a speck of dust. Even breathing was difficult.

Right now, the Saints of the Immortal Vampires, Ancient Dragon Mountain, and Nine Li Palace were all standing on the bridge. With fanatic expressions, they were operating techniques with all might, absorbing the five-colored Qi on the bridge.

That is...Chaotic Qi. There's actually Chaotic Qi here.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. A strange thought appeared in his mind. Could the five-colored light escaping from the ice

gorge be Chaotic Qi and Extreme Yin Dragon Qi?

These two were both priceless treasures.

The stone bridge was a very special place. There was only Chaotic Qi on the bridge, with no Extreme Yin Dragon Qi. Any creature could come to absorb it.

Even a shred of Chaotic Qi had endless benefits for beings. Even Taigu Remains like the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Prince White Li who'd absorbed Chaotic Qi as fetuses wouldn't mind absorbing more.

Zhang Ruochen's appearance shattered the peace on the stone bridge.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon stood on the bridge in human form. Hundreds of dragon shadows flew around him. Chaotic Qi kept getting curled into him. He opened a demonic eye and said coldly, "Zhang Ruochen, you dared to enter here alone. Are you looking for death?"

The other Saints on the bridge all radiated cold murderous Qi. The feeling was too thick, even forming a blood-red cloud. One could see thousands of soldier and horse apparitions in the clouds, as well as thousands of swords and weapons.

The tangible murderous Qi was enough to intimidate Saints.

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel any fear. Heaving his sword, he walked up the stone bridge toward them. "Where are Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo?"

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon laughed menacingly. "You're late. They're already dead!"

"If they're dead, all of you will be buried with them."

Zhang Ruochen's every word radiated with icy Qi. The murderous Qi that surged out of him formed thousands of soldiers and horses too. It clashed with the Saints on the bridge, forming explosive sounds.

The Saints on the bridge all sneered, thinking that Zhang Ruochen didn't know his own level. With their cultivations, they only needed to attack together and Zhang Ruochen would be shattered no matter how powerful he was.

Qi Sheng's expression was indifferent. "We won't accompany them. The one who'll accompany them is you. I am truly surprised that you could kill two Death Knights, but a man's power is still limited. You can't go against the heavens. The Saints present aren't nobodies either. We don't need to all work together. Only two or three working together will completely destroy you. You won't be able to escape even if you use spatial power."

Clearly, Qi Sheng admitted that he wasn't Zhang Ruochen's match by himself. He needed to work with others to kill him.

Ying Huo was covered in a thin red veil. Her curves were beautiful. She stood in a cloud of blood, her snowy-white skin coming in and out of view. She looked extremely mesmerizing and mysterious. One would be tempted to walk in and rip off her thin veil.

Not many men could resist the temptation.

Her starry eyes stared straight at Zhang Ruochen. Laughing sweetly, she said, "The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon isn't lying. Your fiancée is indeed dead already."

Then Ying Huo reached out a slender finger and pointed to the right of the stone bridge.

Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped violently. Getting a bad feeling, he looked in the direction that Ying Huo pointed. He indeed saw Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo.

An ice mountain hovered around 500 meters to the right of the bridge. Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo's bodies were broken and covered in blood, sealed in the ice mountain. The image was ineffably tragic. Even Zhang Ruochen's heart turned to ice.

The ice in the five-colored gorge was multiple times colder than the ice in the Abandoned Deep Sea. Once sealed, it could only mean death.

"No..."

Zhang Ruochen almost shattered his teeth by grinding them. He clenched his fists tightly too, unable to describe the fury and sadness in his heart.

After learning that Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo had been hit into the ice gorge, he'd already been prepared inside. But when he saw them with his own eyes, he still felt heartbroken. He couldn't accept this reality.

Chapter 1277 - Fight All the Saints Alone

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The saints led by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were all guffawing seeing Zhang Ruochen in pain.

The Ancestral Dragon Mountain and the immortal vampire race had all suffered a huge loss because of Zhang Ruochen. They all wanted to end his life. Now that they saw Zhang Ruochen in agony, they couldn't be more pleased.

“You were being suicidal challenging the Ancestral Dragon Mountain. Now, you've paid a huge price.”

“More than ten saints from the immortal vampire race were killed by you. Now, you'll know how regret feels. Do you feel really sad?”

Their laughter was ear-piercing, and they were all smug. However, Zhang Ruochen couldn't hear it at all. He stared at the iceberg that sealed Hang Yanchen and Qing Mo, and there was blood in his eyes.

The iceberg wasn't just floating there. Instead, it was connected by iron chains, and there was a dragon claw at the end of the stone bridge.

There wasn't just one iron chain around the stone bridge. Instead, there were lots of iron chains extending everywhere. Each end of the iron chains was connected to an iceberg. Inside the iceberg was a cage.

Each cage held a creature: human beings, dragons, kylins...

Some of the creatures he thought had only existed in the legends. Now, he saw their real bodies. They were sealed in the cold ice and still looked alive. They were just in a slumber as if they could wake up at any time.

This must be a place where the divine dragon race kept its prisoners.

The creatures inside the cages were all-powerful, otherwise, they wouldn't have been kept here.

The iceberg that held Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo also had another cage, imprisoning a bird.

That bird was only as large as a palm. It was black without any feathers. It looked like a roasted sparrow. It looked like an ordinary bird, yet it was trapped in such a dangerous place.

Hua!

Carnivorous Holy Flower rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's back, and it wound around the iceberg, dragging it toward the stone bridge.

Even though Huang Yanchen had died, Zhang Ruochen would bring her body back. He couldn't just leave her in the ice hole.

Ying Huo smiled. "You're such a lover. You're trapped in death already, yet you still aren't running away. You're trying to leave with the body of your fiancé. You're such a romantic person. Even I am impressed."

Qi Sheng said, "Huang Yanchen left East Region Saint Mansion, her parents and family. She turned her back on the imperial government and the Empress, gave up the rights and glories that can only be enjoyed by heirs. She was willing to run away with him, and she died because of him. How can he ask for anything else with a fiancé like that? Zhang Ruochen is a human hero. He wouldn't have just left her here."

Ying Huo nodded and said, "You're right. If Zhang Ruochen left without taking her body, he would just be a beast."

They seemed to be complimenting Zhang Ruochen, but they actually meant something bad.

If Zhang Ruochen really wanted to get away, they didn't have absolute certainty that they could take Zhang Ruochen.

However, with the body of Huang Yanchen stalling Zhang Ruochen, he was definitely going to die today.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon sneered, and there was blue fire in its eyes. It said, "Let's kill Zhang Ruochen first, then we'll absorb the chaos Qi."

"Wait."

White Li Prince stepped forward with his white hair waving in the air. He asked, "Where's my sister, Zhang Ruochen? Tell us, then you might be able to survive."

Zhang Ruochen wasn't going to repeat what he said.

When Nine Li Palace attacked Huang Yanchen, they had become enemies. There was nothing Zhang Ruochen wanted to explain.

"Do you really think you can save your life?" White Li Prince asked.

"Let's capture him and extract his memories using our techniques. We can definitely get White Li Princess back."

Black Li Prince sneered and flew out like a black shadow. He reached out his sharp claw, and it turned several feet long, covering the body of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at White Li Prince.

Zheng!

Following a sword sound, the Ancient Abyss Sword flew out and pierced through the cat claw. It then rushed toward the head of Black Li Prince like a trace of black light.

Black Li Prince was a Taigu remain, and he had become an upper-class saint. However, he was still intimidated by Zhang Ruochen. He couldn't dodge the sword Qi at all.

Besides, the destruction Qi on the Ancient Abyss Sword was too terrifying, and it suppressed the blood in his body.

"How powerful the sword is..."

Qi Sheng frowned.

It had only been several days, and Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had surged again.

Motian Crown Prince took a deep breath and said, "His sword is powerful, but he himself is stronger. Zhang Ruochen is very close to a sword saint now."

Hua La.

Just as Black Li Prince was about to be killed by Zhang Ruochen, a white circle flew out of White Li Prince's hand, and it clashed with the Ancient Abyss Sword like a trace of white light.

The white circle and Ancient Abyss Sword were both peerless weapons. When they clashed with each other, a giant power storm rushed out and knocked away Black Li Prince. White Li Prince's strike knocked away Ancient Abyss Sword, which saved his life.

At the next moment, White Li Prince disappeared. He showed up beside Zhang Ruochen as if he had performed spatial move.

It wasn't because White Li Prince was able to mobilize the power of space, but instead, White Li was so fast that nobody could see him move.

White Li Prince reached out his hand and opened his claw, grabbing toward Zhang Ruochen's neck.

To others, White Li Prince moved slowly, but to Zhang Ruochen, he was faster than lightning.

White Li Prince's comprehension of speed saintly way rules was terrifying just like Zhang Ruochen's comprehension of sword mastery. One couldn't estimate his power using his cultivation level.

As long as someone was fast enough, he could kill any enemies.

White Li Prince was way stronger than death knights, which gave Zhang Ruochen great pressure.

Zhang Ruochen then pinched his fingers into sword techniques, fighting White Li Prince.

To all the saints on the bridge, Zhang Ruochen also looked very slow, barely faster than White Li Prince.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was also extremely fast. He performed time sword technique, and he changed the time rules, which changed the flow of time around White Li Prince, which formed such a bizarre scene.

It was the fight between time rules and speed rules instead of the fight between Zhang Ruochen and White Li Prince.

Time rules were certainly stronger than speed rules, but it was very difficult to comprehend time rules. Zhang Ruochen was accomplished enough in the time rules, so he could barely overpower White Li Prince.

“What are they doing? White Li Prince is said to be the most powerful saint beast from Nine Li Palace. It’s as fast as true saints. Is that its speed?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon looked disdainful. It thought White Li Prince didn’t deserve its name. It dashed forward like a black shadow, trying to kill Zhang Ruochen.

However, as Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon walked to fifty feet away from Zhang Ruochen, it felt that it was trapped in a swamp.

“No, it’s the power of time.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon tried to step back and escape.

There was a mysterious force in the Abandoned Deep Sea which sharply weakened the senses of a monk, otherwise, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon would’ve sensed the time ripples.

“Do you really think you can get out?”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the time rules, and the time domain started to spread and become larger, covering the saints on the stone bridge.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be affected at all in the time domain, yet the other creatures would be suppressed by the power of time.

Pu.

Zhang Ruochen punched the chest of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and crushed it. Its organs were broken, and its blood was spilled on the stone bridge. It had never been injured like that before.

Seeing how miserable Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was, all the saints were dazed. Nobody could laugh anymore as they were all trapped in the time domain, and they might become just like Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

They all thought that they could kill Zhang Ruochen, yet they didn't expect his power to be that bizarre, as it was stronger than time.

What techniques could rival the power of time?

Zhang Ruochen rushed forward and tried to kill Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon felt a great danger coming. Even a proud being like it was scared. It didn't even have the time to use the Ancestral Dragon Scale as it was being suppressed by the power of time.

White Li Prince showed up again and warded off Zhang Ruochen's attack.

Only White Li Prince could fight Zhang Ruochen now.

The power of time suppressed him, yet he was only slightly slower than Zhang Ruochen. If Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to use the power of time, he couldn't take even one of its strikes.

White Li Prince was very confident in his power. He said, "You're not going to kill anyone in front of me."

"Really? Then I'll kill someone right now."

Zhang Ruochen moved his body and dashed toward Black Li Prince.

Chapter 1278 - Won't Even Retreat In Death

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

One of Prince Black Li's claws had been stabbed by the Abyss Ancient Sword earlier. It was still bleeding.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen charge over, fear filled Prince Black Li's eyes. Even Prince White Li couldn't suppress Zhang Ruochen. How could Prince Black Li fend off Zhang Ruochen with his cultivation?

He retreated hurriedly, but his speed was very slow. It was like a snail crawling.

“Die.”

Sword light shone from Zhang Ruochen's fingers, stabbing toward Prince Black Li's forehead.

Green light rushed out of Prince Black Li, making his body glitter like jade. It was completely different from before.

When Zhang Ruochen's fingers crashed against the green light, it created a crisp sound like hitting a metal stone. Prince Black Li flew back, hitting the pillar on the left of the stone bridge. Specks of green light fell down from him.

“You indeed have a powerful defensive treasure inside you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Earlier, Prince Black Li had failed at collecting Nanling Dragon Fire but didn't die. Zhang Ruochen had suspected that he had a defensive treasure inside. This point was proved now.

“I have the ancient protective weapon of the Black Li Tribe within me,” Prince Black Li said. “You can't kill me.”

Zhang Ruochen used the Heavenly Eye and looked inside Prince Black Li's heart. There was a jade ring. The ring shone brightly, blocking his attack.

“An ancient weapon can't protect you.”

Zhang Ruochen opened his hand. A huge palm print formed in the sky and pressed down on Prince Black Li.

Prince Black Li was confident in his ancient weapon. “It's no use. Not even the Nanling Dragon Fire can burn me. You can't... What...what is this fire...”

Sizzle, sizzle.

Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Jingmie Divine Fire, and it surged out of his palms. He pushed down, breaking apart the green light, and squeezed Prince Black Li's body.

A moment later, Prince Black Li was burned to dust. Only a jade ring was left in Zhang Ruochen's hand.

The jade ring didn't melt under the fire. Instead, it shone even more brilliantly. It was indeed a top-class protective treasure. Zhang Ruochen put it away to study later.

“Zhang Ruochen, you've angered me!” Prince White Li's expression hadn't changed, but his eyes shone coldly. He lifted his arms. A white ring hovered above his palms.

The ring spun rapidly with ear-piercing noises. Then it flew toward Zhang Ruochen as a streak of white light.

“Shen Sword.”

The Shen Sword was one of the defensive techniques of the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique. Not only did it contain power of the Sword Way, but it also had the power of time.

Zhang Ruochen put the Abyss Ancient Sword back. Holding it with both hands, he stabbed it downward. The sword tip crashed against the stone bridge.

Boom.

Dense Sword Qi flowed out of the tip, forming a vortex of Sword Qi. The white ring flew near the vortex. It had been moving at the speed of light, but it suddenly froze in the air.

Time had stopped.

With Zhang Ruochen's attainment in time, he could only stop time for an instant. But in that instant, thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi struck the white ring, making it change direction. It flew back toward Prince White Li.

Prince White Li's eyes narrowed. He was forced to dodge to the side.

Poof, poof!

Poof!

...

Taking advantage of this, Zhang Ruochen used the fastest speed to kill three Saints in a row. Other than that, Crown Prince Motian was also hit. He had the Ten Saints Blood Armor, but he still spat out a mouthful of blood and flew out. He was about to fall down the stone bridge and die without a burial place.

Clank!

A blood-red chain formed out of thin air. It wrapped around Crown Prince Motian, pulling him back onto the stone bridge and allowing him to escape the time territory.

Ying Huo had formed the chain out of Spiritual Power.

She'd been at the edge of the time territory, so she escaped first. She'd rescued Qi Sheng and now saved Crown Prince Motian too.

Crown Prince Motian drank a bottle of saintly blood. His broken legs grew back and he roared angrily, "Zhang Ruochen, you break my legs and I'll destroy your fiancée."

He was an absolute genius. His physical body was in the Saint Realm and he had the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword. If Qi Sheng hadn't come out of nowhere, Crown Prince Motian would definitely be the number one pride of the Immortal Vampires.

Just then, he'd almost gotten killed. Fury rose out of him, burning his entire body.

Whoosh!

The Emperor-kill Demonic Sword flew out of its sheath. It circled Crown Prince Motian and then cut down on Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo. If the ice mountain was shattered, their corpses would be shattered too.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower wrapped around the ice mountain. Discovering the flying Emperor-kill Demonic Sword, dozens of tentacles grew out of the vine. Each tentacle was as thick as an arm. All the tentacles tangled together, clashing with the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword.

“As expected of the Holy Carnivorous Flower, it actually stopped the Emperor-kill Demonic Sword.”

Qi Sheng smiled. Then he grabbed the God-killing Cross Shield. A blood-red cloud flowed out with loud booms. The air in the five-colored ice gorge shook violently.

The God-killing Cross Shield flew out, aiming at the ice mountain.

Boom, boom.

In an instant, the dozen tentacles from the Holy Carnivorous Flower exploded under the God-killing Cross Shield, turning into puffs of wood Qi.

“Master,” the Holy Carnivorous Flower said, “this weapon is too powerful. I can’t handle it.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened. Putting his hands together, he used a sword technique. The Abyss Ancient Sword streaked out in a beam of light, blocking the God-killing Cross Shield.

Boom, boom.

The Abyss Ancient Sword and God-killing Cross Shield clashed violently, producing deafening noises.

While Zhang Ruochen was distracted by the God-killing Cross Shield, Prince White Li hit Zhang Ruochen’s left shoulder with a claw print. It crashed against the Ten Saints Blood Armor, producing a huge spark.

Prince White Li's cultivation was extremely advanced. Hit by him, half of Zhang Ruochen's body was numb. The Holy Qi within him was scattered and he flew horizontally like a scarecrow.

While flying in the air, Zhang Ruochen recollected his Holy Qi. Steadying himself, he flew to the chain connecting the stone bridge. He rushed toward the ice mountain along the chain.

He would have to put the ice mountain into the spatial ring first.

Qi Sheng and Crown Prince Motian were using Huang Yanchen's corpse to restrict Zhang Ruochen and distract him. Otherwise, how could Zhang Ruochen get injured by Princess White Li?

"Zhang Ruochen is really trying hard. He actually flew out of the stone bridge. Doesn't he know that once he leaves the bridge, he'll be frozen into an ice cube by the five-colored light and Extreme Yin Dragon Qi?"

"He has to try hard. Otherwise, his fiancée's body will be shattered."

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon climbed up from the ground with a fierce expression. "Right now, Zhang Ruochen is a target hovering in the air. He can't hide even if he wants to. Let's work together to kill him."

He acted first, striking with the Ancient Dragon Scale at Zhang Ruochen on the chain. The other Saints attacked at the same time, some striking at Zhang Ruochen, some at the ice mountain.

Zhang Ruochen was one man with one sword. He stood before the ice mountain, activating the strongest power in the Abyss Ancient Sword, blocking all the incoming attacks.

Poof!

The Ancient Dragon Scale flew past Zhang Ruochen, splitting open the Ten Saints Blood Armor. It cut a one-foot long cut on his body. He was almost cut in half.

A moment later, a sword shadow penetrated Zhang Ruochen's body. It left behind a huge bloody hole. A large amount of blood flowed out.

Despite his injuries worsening, Zhang Ruochen's eyes were unprecedentedly firm. He didn't dodge because once he did, the attacks would land on the ice mountain. Huang Yanchen really wouldn't even have a corpse left.

No matter what people thought, Huang Yanchen was his wife. Since they had the titles of husband and wife, and had done the act, Zhang Ruochen would protect her even if she was dead. He wouldn't let her be hurt by anyone else.

"Zhang Ruochen, run!" the Holy Carnivorous Flower urged. "You can't take away their bodies. If you don't run, you'll really die here."

Zhang Ruochen didn't run. Instead, he summoned the Mercury Gourd, wanting to collect the ice mountain.

But just as the gourd flew out, Qi Sheng sensed it. He used the God-killing Cross Shield and hit it away so Zhang Ruochen couldn't do as he wished.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn't stop laughing. "Zhang Ruochen, you can be this pathetic too?"

Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened. He grabbed in the air and ten spatial cracks appeared, cutting toward the stone bridge.

However, mysterious power loomed over the bridge. As soon as the spatial cracks approached it, they were sealed before they could land.

Ying Huo was slightly relieved. Smiling, she said, "The Divine Dragons constructed this stone bridge, and the surrounding space is very stable. As long as we're standing on the bridge, your spatial attacks won't pose any threat."

"It's a pity. A pride who's been able to stir up a storm will die here in the end."

Qi Sheng sighed, smiling at the bloody Zhang Ruochen. He finally got the upper hand in this fight against Zhang Ruochen.

Suddenly, Qi Sheng's eyes narrowed. He looked at the ice mountain behind Zhang Ruochen with shock.

Inside the mountain, Huang Yanchen's eyes had opened without anyone realizing it. Tears flowed out of her. Shreds of golden light wrapped around her injured body.

“How is this possible?”

The Saints on the stone bridge were all taken aback. No one had expected that Huang Yanchen was still alive.

Sensing something, Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked back. He smiled, his eyes actually turning moist.

As one of the Nine Heirs, Huang Yanchen had an extraordinary mission. Empress Chi Yao had naturally bestowed upon them some self-saving powers. The gold light pouring out of Huang Yanchen was a beam of the Empress' Emperor Qi.

Fire poured out of Qing Mo, wrapping around her. It was the Wuliang Divine Fire that had been growing within her. She seemed to have not died either.

Qi Sheng got a bad feeling. “Continue attacking. We can't let them out of the ice mountain.”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened. He took out the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, pouring Holy Qi into it. Golden runes instantly flew out of the cauldron, hovering inside the ice gorge like stars in the sky.

Chapter 1279 - Break the Ice

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was floating in front of the iceberg. It kept spinning like a small mountain.

Hong Long.

Qi Sheng, Motian Crown Prince and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon kept using their attack techniques, saint spells, saint weapons. They clashed with the golden ancient characters, but they couldn't knock the ancient characters away, not to mention touch Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Behind Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, Zhang Ruochen seized this chance to swallow a spring pill. He then moved to the iceberg and pressed down.

Two clusters of divine fire gushed out of his palms, which melted the icebergs.

“Wait till I save you both.”

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen gave each other a look. One of them was outside, while the other was trapped in the iceberg. They got closer and closer as if time had been frozen at this moment.

“That girl following Huang Yanchen has an enormous amount of power, and the silver knife she holds in her hand is an invincible weapon. If we let her out and she teams up with Zhang Ruochen, we might lose control of the situation.”

Motian Crown Prince looked worried. He tried to control Emperor-killing Demonic Sword, slashing the golden ancient characters.

Ying Huo said, “That blue cauldron looks a bit weird; even my mind power is suppressed by it. It seems that it has sacrificial power.”

Qi Sheng could tell that the blue cauldron was extraordinary. Ordinary attacks skills couldn't damage it at all. He said, “Help me use the original power of the God-kill Cross Shield.”

“Okay.”

Ying Huo pointed forward, and her mind power gushed out. And then, blood-red light rain was spilled.

The light rain came into contact with the God-kill Cross Shield, and it soaked in. After a while, there was a water-flowing sound in the cross shield.

Meanwhile, Qi Sheng pressed forward and wielded two holy Qi blood pillars which infused with the God-Kill Cross Shield.

Hua La!

The original power of the God-Kill Cross Shield was activated, forming a cluster of thick blood-red clouds, which filled the ice hole and clashed with the golden ancient characters.

The space was cut into halves. On one side, blood Qi was tumbling, and on the other, there was golden light shining.

Both powers were extremely strong. As for the other saints, Motian Crown Prince and White Li Prince both performed defense techniques to protect themselves from the after-waves of the God-killing Cross Shield.

Beside Sky-swallowing Demonic dragon was a saint beast that had turned into human form. It had an enormous body with muscles everywhere. It looked greedy and said, “It can rival the God-kill Cross Shield. Is that blue cauldron a godly remains ancient weapon like the God-kill Cross Shield?”

There were four levels of saint weapons: hundred-patterns saint weapons, thousand-patterns saint weapons, ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, and supreme saint weapons.

Godly remains ancient weapons were weapons used by Gods before, and they had the power of Gods. They didn't belong to

the four categories of saint weapons. If a monk could use a godly remains ancient weapon, it could exert a power that could rival a supreme saint weapon.

Even a top-tier sect like Yin and Yang Sect didn't have a supreme saint weapon.

The value of a godly remains saint weapons might rival that of a supreme saint weapon, but they were almost at the same level. Some of the godly remains ancient weapons were supreme saint weapons themselves.

Everyone would be tempted by a godly remains ancient weapon.

“There're only a few godly remains ancient weapons. All of them have great fame, and they are controlled by the most top-tier powers. The blue cauldron brought by Zhang Ruochen has never been heard of, and there are no records of it. Did he find it in the Yin and Yang Ocean?”

“Zhang Ruochen has more than just a blue cauldron. If we can kill him, we can get everything he has,” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon teamed up with the last surviving saint beast from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, Mang Shisi, to activate the original savage barren forces, hitting the blue cauldron.

Mang Shisi was ranked in fourteenth place in the Savage bull race. Before Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had become a saint, it had protected Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Not long ago, Mang Shisi had reached Absolute Ground Realm and became a top-tier great being. It would definitely be ranked higher when it went back to the savage bull race.

The God-kill Cross Shield and Ancestral Dragon Scale were wielded at the same time, knocking away the golden ancient characters. They fell like thousands of stars.

Hong Long.

The God-kill Cross Shield and Ancestral Dragon Scale clashed with Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, shaking it fiercely and knocking

it toward the iceberg.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re so going to die this time.”

Even Ying Huo was sure that Zhang Ruochen would be killed this time.

Under the pressure of two godly remains ancient weapons, any life under a true saint would be annihilated. Even true saints might not be able to take it.

The iceberg was completely melted. Zhang Ruochen grabbed Huang Yanchen with one hand and Qing Mo with the other. He performed spatial move to dodge the attack from the two godly remains ancient weapons.

Hua.

Zhang Ruochen’s hair waved, and he moved his mind. Sword intent gushed out of the sword. He wielded the Ancient Abyss Sword to attack Qi Sheng on the stone bridge.

“No.”

Qi Sheng was using the God-kill Cross Shield. He didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen to rescue Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo that quickly. It was too late to retract the God-kill Cross Shield to defend himself.

“Six Law Universe.”

The six wings on Qi Sheng’s back let out six different powers, which formed a huge whirlpool. There were powers of wind, fire, and thunder in the whirlpool.

Six Law Universe was one of the best trump cards of Qi Sheng. It was as if there were six peerless great beings making attacks at the same time. He was able to crush a group of people at the same level. Even monks who were several levels higher than him couldn’t break that technique.

The Ancient Abyss Sword clashed with the six powers, and the sword light surged. The blade kept shaking and made ear-piercing sounds.

Peng. The Ancient Abyss Sword broke the Six Law Universe and hit Qi Sheng’s chest.

“How incredible Zhang Ruochen is.”

Qi Sheng became tense, yet he didn't panic. He activated the power of Ten Saints Blood Armor to ward off the power of the Ancient Abyss Sword.

The ten saint shadows around the Ten Saints Blood Armor crumbled at the same time. Qi Sheng spat out blood and was knocked away.

Ying Huo showed up behind Qi Sheng to resolve the power from the Ancient Abyss Sword.

She was thrilled by how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. Qi Sheng had never been defeated by monks who were at the same level, yet he wasn't able to ward off the strike from Zhang Ruochen. If the immortal vampires knew about it, everyone would be shocked.

Ying Huo heard a blood-curdling scream, and he looked to the left.

Something else happened?

A silver knife hit the chest of Mang Shisi, and it pierced through its chest. It severely injured the saint beast at the Absolute Ground Realm. Its blood spilled.

Actually, Qing Mo had wanted to kill Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, yet Mang Shisi warded the attack off for it.

Ancestral Dragon Mountain suffered a huge blow this time. Twelve saint beasts had entered Yin and Yang Ocean, yet only Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Mang Shisi were still alive. Most of the saint beasts were killed by Zhang Ruochen, so naturally, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon hated Zhang Ruochen's guts.

Zhang Ruochen sent Huang Yanchen into the mercury gourd for her to recover. He then held Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, and the golden ancient characters floated into the sky.

Among the tens of thousands of golden ancient characters condensed a huge Emperor Ming phantom, which was giving out holy light. It pressed toward all the saints on the stone bridge with a palm that was as large as a mountain.

Motian Crown Prince was holding Emperor-kill Demonic Sword. He looked up and said, “What kind of a weapon is that? It seems that it’s stronger than the God-kill Cross Shield.”

“I need to ward off the blue cauldron. You guys, attack Zhang Ruochen with your greatest techniques.”

Ying Huo wielded a token, which surged and clashed with Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

That token was called Thousand Beast Treasure Mirror, which was one of the most mysterious ancient weapons from the Immortal Temple. There were ten thousand beasts sealed inside. Not just normal savage beasts were sealed, but also powerful saint beasts.

Thousand Beast Treasure Mirror became larger and larger, and it turned into a metal tombstone that was more than five hundred feet tall. There were hundreds of beast engravings on its surface, and there were deafening roaring sounds coming from the inside.

Hundreds of beast shadows showed up, warding off the golden handprint from the top.

No wonder she’s the Immortal Goddess. She’s indeed impressive, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Ying Huo smiled really seductively. She blinked and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re nothing compared to me even when you’re at your prime. Do you really think you can take my strikes after being injured so badly?”

In another direction, Qi Sheng, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and Motian Crown Prince were all mobilizing their power, trying to kill Zhang Ruochen with a great strike.

“We can’t just wait.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t step back. He performed spatial move and showed up beside the stone bridge. He rushed toward Ying Huo.

Ying Huo knew that Zhang Ruochen could mobilize the power of time. She didn’t dare let him get close. She performed a

ghostly body technique, and she immediately stepped back.

“Where’re you going?”

Zhang Ruochen knew that Ying Huo was a great threat, so he wanted to kill her.

Both of them were extremely fast and kept changing their directions. There were dozens of shadows on the stone bridge. Ying Huo was indeed impressive. She was only a mind power monk, yet she could fight Zhang Ruochen two hundred feet away from him.

Zhang Ruochen tried everything in his power, yet he couldn’t take her down.

Qi Tian and Motian Crown Prince joined the fight also. They warded off Zhang Ruochen’s attacks as they were worried that Ying Huo might be killed by him. Zhang Ruochen was too powerful today. He had killed more than ten saints, and all of them were powerful great beings.

Such an accomplishment would definitely be thrilling to everyone in First Central Empire. Zhang Ruochen would be revered by the human saints.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was fighting the three immortal vampire great beings, Qing Mo looked to a cage nearby. She was shocked.

“That... fire...”

A black bird that was the size of a palm started to gleam with light spots. They were like sparks coming out of coal.

Chapter 1280 - Immortal Bird?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the ice mountain melted, the scorched black bird corpse was completely exposed. Who would've thought that such flames would come out of a small bird that had died so many years ago?

Crackle, crackle.

The fire burned brighter and brighter. The heat that it emitted actually created a warm feeling in the bone-chilling ice gorge.

The people fighting on the bridge—Zhang Ruochen, Qi Sheng, and the others—all stopped and stared at the cage hovering in the sky. They were all shocked.

“What is this? What happened?”

“How come I feel weak energy waves coming from the bird corpse?”

“No way! It died tens of thousands of years ago. How can it not be completely dead?”

“The creatures that can be imprisoned here are all horrible world-dominating demons. None of them are simple. Any one that escapes can overturn Kunlun's Field.”

Not only did Ying Huo have extremely strong Spiritual Power, she could also predict future danger to some extent.

Right now, her expression was a bit grave. “Hurry and leave this place,” she warned. “Otherwise, we will all die here.”

Qi Sheng and Crown Prince Motian knew that Ying Huo's gut feelings were accurate, so they didn't dare to stay here any longer. Glancing at Zhang Ruochen at the top of a stone pillar, they stopped attacking.

The two of them rushed out of the stone bridge with Ying Huo and started to climb the ice wall.

Zhang Ruochen also sensed an extremely dangerous aura, so he didn't stop them. Instead, he grouped with Qing Mo. Grabbing her wrist, he pulled her quickly out of the gorge.

Below them, the fire surging out of the bird corpse covered the entire cage. The space around the cage was actually a bit distorted.

Caw!

Then, a bird's sharp cry came out of the flames. All the Saints inside the gorge, including Zhang Ruochen, felt a stab of pain in their heads. It was like getting stabbed with a needle.

Their visions turned black and blood flowed out of their ears. All Saints lost consciousness and plummeted.

As a plant-type creature, Qing Mo wasn't too affected. She was only dazed temporarily and then quickly reacted.

She grabbed Zhang Ruochen's wrist backhandedly. The fingers on her other hand transformed into five vines. Hitting the ice wall, the vines produced five holes so they hung in the air.

Ying Huo, Qi Sheng, Crown Prince Motian, Prince White Li, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and the others weren't so lucky. They all fell from the sky and crashed against the stone bridge with loud booms.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. Rubbing his temples, he turned and looked down at the cage hovering below him.

"Such strong sound waves. Did it really awaken?"

The cage had become a huge fireball. The heat that it emitted was melting the walls of the ice gorge.

Popping sounds came from the palm-sized bird corpse. It broke out of the black shell. Dazzling feathers grew. The scene

was as breathtaking as an ugly duckling turning into a swan.

Each of the fiery-red feathers were translucent and glistening as if made out of some type of jade. The Saints on the stone bridge woke up. Seeing this, they all found it incredible.

Did it really come back to life?

Shock flashed past Ying Huo's eyes. "Is this... the legendary Immortal Bird?"

As the Goddess of the Immortal Pavilion, Ying Huo was very well-learned. She'd once read about the Immortal Bird in an ancient book. It had text and images.

The bird covered in flames in the cage looked very similar to the Immortal Bird.

Thud, thud.

The strange fiery bird crashed against the bars of the cage, wanting to escape from it. The layer of metal on the chains wrapped around the cage broke apart, revealing purple-blue electricity. Dozens of lightning bolts hit the bird.

Then the stone bridge shook violently.

Various ancient dragon runes emerged on the bridge like a celestial book.

The Divine Dragons had indeed left some things behind to imprison the monsters here, Zhang Ruochen thought. This is to prevent mutations that can let them escape.

Zhang Ruochen believed that the fiery bird had come back to life because of mutations.

Under normal conditions, even a Supreme Saint being would've died after being frozen for so long. How could it come back to life?

Zhang Ruochen was now far from the stone bridge. He could use the Great Spatial Move at any time to escape, so he stayed behind to investigate. He wanted to know what secret was hidden here.

He looked down while asking, "Where's Blackie?"

Qing Mo's brows were tightly knit. Thinking back carefully, she said, "Blackie fell down with us. While falling, Princess and I hit an ice mountain. We were instantly sealed and lost consciousness. I think Blackie should be sealed in ice too."

After a pause, Qing Mo's eyes looked around. "Could Blackie's physical body be that bird?"

"How is that possible? It's a cat." Zhang Ruochen thought that Qing Mo's thoughts were too strange and shook his head.

Qing Mo still believed that Blackie was a bird. She debated with Zhang Ruochen with a serious expression. "But Blackie has never made cat sounds. Don't you think that it might not be a cat?"

"It just doesn't like to make cat sounds."

Zhang Ruochen didn't sense Blackie's aura on that mutated fire bird.

There was a mass of cages on either side of the stone bridge. Many ancient monsters and demons were imprisoned there. Zhang Ruochen started to suspect that Blackie's physical body was in one of them.

He observed all the corpses, but none of them had a figure like Blackie. In fact, there wasn't a single cat.

Of course, some cages were inside five-colored fog, so he couldn't see clearly. He couldn't say that Blackie's body wasn't hidden inside one of them.

Qing Mo seemed to think that Zhang Ruochen was right. She nodded and then asked, "Aren't the Divine Dragons already extinct? Who would seal Blackie's physical body here? And why would they do that?"

It was a simple question, but Zhang Ruochen couldn't answer.

According to Blackie, Saint Monk Xumi had suppressed it back then. He'd sealed its physical body in the Yin Yang Sea and turned its soul into the weapon spirit of the Universe Spiritual Map.

But why would Saint Monk Xumi seal Blackie's body inside the Yin Yang Sea? Zhang Ruochen had never thought about

this before.

“Could it be that... Saint Monk Xumi isn't human and is a Divine Dragon instead?” Zhang Ruochen got a crazy idea.

It wasn't strange for a dragon to enter the Buddhist Way. Eight hundred years ago, the Buddha's ride, the “golden dragon,” was a Buddhist Saint too.

Kaboom.

The fiery bird inside the cage produced stronger and stronger force. The lightning pouring out of the stone bridge couldn't repress it anymore.

The stone bridge shook even more violently. At the same time, the five-colored fog around the bridge scattered, showing the entire bridge.

What Zhang Ruochen and the others had seen before was only a small portion of the bridge. It was hundreds of miles long and cut across the air. There were many dazzling dragon runes on the entire surface.

There was actually a five-colored ice mountain in the center of the bridge. It was thousands of meters tall and took up one-third of the bridge.

A young man stood at the bottom of the mountain. He had long blonde hair and a pair of dragon horns. His features were defined and his figure was tall and thin. He stood on the bridge with his hands behind his back. He stared into empty space, emitting an authoritative aura.

If he wasn't standing inside an ice mountain, everyone would probably think he was still alive.

“He...who is he? Why is he sealed on the bridge? Judging from his standing posture, he doesn't look like a prisoner or someone who was sealed during battle. It's so strange.”

“Did he seal himself?”

...

Zhang Ruochen was also staring at the young man in the ice mountain. Even though he was frozen, his aura was still

mighty. He was like a godly emperor gazing at the universe.

If he were still alive, he would definitely be a terrifying existence.

“He can’t be a Divine Dragon, right?” Qing Mo asked.

“If he is a Divine Dragon, then he would definitely be the last dragon of their race.”

“Why?” Qing Mo asked.

“Gut feeling.” Eyes dark, Zhang Ruochen said, “I have a feeling that something terrifying will happen next. Leave this place immediately.”

He took Qing Mo and used the Great Spatial Move, rushing out of the ice gorge and reaching the surface of the ice land.

Five-colored light burst out of the ice gorge. They transformed into a hundred-mile-wide beam of light. It shot into the sky, coloring the boundless sky above the Yin Yang Sea.

Qing Mo panicked. “What about Blackie? It might be in the ice gorge still.”

“Whether it can escape or not depends on its own abilities. With out current cultivation, rushing into the ice gorge again would just be like going to die.”

Just then, Zhang Ruochen had clearly sensed that Blackie’s connection with the Universe Spiritual Map had disappeared!

There were two possibilities. One, Blackie’s saint soul was damaged and destroyed. Two, Blackie had found its sealed physical body and used its own power to cut the connection.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the others rushed out of the ice gorge and fled to the ice land. They felt like they’d escaped from death.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon stared at Zhang Ruochen. Murderous intent flared from his body again.

The other Saints started circulating their Holy Qi too. They separated and walked toward Zhang Ruochen from different directions.

The Ancient Dragon Mountain, Nine Li Palace, and Immortal Vampires had all suffered great losses. They'd practically been wiped out and the reason was Zhang Ruochen.

How could they explain if they didn't kill him?

“Still want to fight?”

Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid. He released Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan from the Mercury Gourd. He also summoned the Holy Carnivorous Flower to face the enemies.

“We're all familiar. The imperial court will come have fun too.” Wan Huayu's laughter sounded.

A moment later, the Saints of the imperial court walked out of the wind and snow, forming the third party.

Chapter 1281 - Great Beings Arrive

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Chi Wansui, Siming Goddess, Sui Han, Wan Huayu, Bu Qianfan... The saints from the imperial government showed up. There were more than twenty of them, yet almost none of them were killed or injured. They were clearly the greatest power here now.

Chi Wansui looked to Qi Sheng and the others. He smiled. “Are you the only ones remaining here? How did you suffer such a great loss? What have you encountered?”

Qi Sheng smiled and said, “Why are you so smug? Even if we’ve suffered a great loss, it was because of Zhang Ruochen, not the so-called imperial government. To me, all the saints from the human imperial government are useless. And you guys are nothing compared to Zhang Ruochen, even combined.”

Motian Crown Princess said, “Chi Wansui, you’re a so-called heir and the greatest being among the royal young saints. You don’t even have the right to serve Zhang Ruochen.”

Apparently, immortal vampires knew that there were conflicts between the imperial government and Zhang Ruochen, which was why they said something insulting like that.

If the saints from the imperial government fought Zhang Ruochen, it would be best for the saints from the imperial government to fight Zhang Ruochen first.

A young war saint wanted to flatter Chi Wansui. He sneered, “Zhang Ruochen is nothing but a wanted person. He’s nothing

compared to Taisui King.”

Chi Wansui looked down and shot a glance at the war saint.

That war saint realized that he had said something inappropriate. He shut up and stepped back.

QI Sheng looked at Zhang Ruochen and smiled. “Hear that? To the human saints, you’re nothing but a wanted person. They don’t treat you like a human being. Why’re you even fighting for the human beings in Blue Dragon Void World, Blood God Sect, and Yin and Yang Ocean?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Mang Shisi were laughing. They both pitied Zhang Ruochen.

Ying Huo had long eyelashes. She smiled and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you might just submit to the immortal vampire race and come work for us. We can forget all the feuds from before.”

Wan Huayu and Bu Qianfan both looked anxious. Some of them were worried that Zhang Ruochen might be tempted by what the immortal vampires said and fight the imperial government.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and kept recovering. He didn’t care about those fights at all.

Huang Yanchen snorted and said, “This is a great chance for you to kill the best talents from the immortal vampires, Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace. Do you really want to wait until they become beings like Lord Pluto and Blood Queen?”

Qi Sheng and Ying Huo were both dazed. They realized that this fiancé of Zhang Ruochen was a force to be reckoned with.

If the saints from the imperial government really attacked them, Zhang Ruochen could pocket the advantage.

Chi Wansui gave an order without hesitation: “Fight. Annihilate the immortal vampires first.”

The saints from the imperial government took out their saint weapons and infused them with holy Qi, triggering traces of thousand-patterns destruction, filling the sky above the glacier.

Zhang Ruochen, Qi Sheng and the others were all shocked by the sound of a fiery bird. They were not in opposition to the imperial government.

Qi Sheng wasn't anxious at all. He smiled, "Do you really think we're the only ones who entered Yin and Yang Ocean?"

Hong Long.

More than twenty saint weapons ascended to the sky, forming a cloud that was made of thousand-patterns destruction. There was lightning that was three feet long flowing, becoming a net. There was also fire burning, forming the shape of a lotus.

The cloud that was hundreds of miles long descended, and it looked like the sky was falling.

A golden light ball showed up above Qing Sheng, Ying Huo, and Motian Crown Prince. They could see a person standing inside the light ball.

That human being reached out his hand and pointed at the sky, forming a handprint that was one hundred miles long.

All the twenty-something saint weapons clashed with the giant handprint, yet they only made cracking sounds as if there were raindrops falling on the ground.

The handprint rolled, and all the saint weapons were knocked away.

The saints from the imperial government were all terrified. They communicated with the spirits of the saint weapons before they could control the weapons again. Some of the saints were severely injured and fell to the ground.

"How powerful the skill is..."

Zhang Ruochen could feel tumbling power coming at them. He then took Huang Yanchen and the others to get away so that they wouldn't be located by that powerful immortal vampire being.

Inside the golden light ball was a human being wearing a golden cape. He had broad shoulders and a built body. He looked energetic, and his skin was golden. He stood in the sky with great energy ripples gushing out of his body.

The saint weapons wielded by the twenty-something saints were all knocked away, which meant that person was a true saint, or even an absolute saint.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the being and mumbled, “Prince Xia.”

It was Prince Xia who was standing in the golden light ball.

Prince Xia had gone to the state of Tiantai with Huangtian Crown Princess before. They had wanted to take control of Blood God Sect, yet they were encircled by the black market and the imperial government.

All the immortal vampires from Huangtian Tribe were annihilated. Prince Xia was the only one who had survived.

Seeing Prince Xia, the saints from the imperial government were all horrified. They looked to Siming Goddess and Chi Wansui and waited for their order. They wanted to get away.

Apparently, the immortal vampires also wanted to kill Chi Wansui, Siming Goddess, Sui Han and the others. Prince Xia moved his body, and the golden light ball became larger and larger. In the end, the diameter of the light ball was around fifteen-hundred feet long. It rolled toward the saints from the imperial government.

The glacier started to tremble.

“Goddess, that’s Prince Xia from Huangtian Tribe. He has great cultivation which we can’t fight against. Let’s retreat now.”

The human saint was scared. The power of that Prince Xia was too horrifying, as if he could crush all the living creatures in the world.

Siming Goddess said, “No need to fear. There’re great beings from the imperial government that entered Yin and Yang Ocean too.”

A voice came from afar. “Xia Tiansu, what’s the point of fighting those juniors from the imperial government. Let me fight you.”

A white dragon was rushing across the glacier land. Its body was more than ten miles long, and it looked like a white river from afar.

Wan Zhaoyi was standing on the head of the dragon, wearing blue dragon armor. All of a sudden, his human body turned into a blue dragon. He reached out his giant dragon claw and tore apart the golden light ball, knocking Prince Xia away.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The tenth palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, Dragon Traveling Nine Days.”

Zhang Ruochen had finished the tenth palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm already, yet he could only have an attack power of forty-two times. As for Wan Zhaoyi, it had the power of fifty times.

The gap didn't seem to be that large, yet only monks who practiced Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm knew that it was very difficult to achieve a step up after reaching the attack power of forty-two times.

Obviously, Wan Zhaoyi was way more accomplished in palm technique than Zhang Ruochen.

He might've finished the eleventh palm already.

Wan Zhaoyi's cultivation has surged in the past years. Since the rules of sky and land changed, top-tier talents are much quicker at refining themselves, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Several years ago, Wan Zhaoyi fought Sword Saint Xuanji when he went to capture Zhang Ruochen in East Region Saint Mansion.

Wan Zhaoyi couldn't even ward off one strike from Sword Saint Xuanji.

Today, Wan Zhaoyi's cultivation had surged more than ten times.

Wan Zhaoyi cheered up everyone from the imperial government after showing up. He was ranked the first on the 'Five Heroes List.' He had great cultivation which could defeat even Prince Xia.

Wan Zhaoyi looked around and said, “Everyone’s here for the thing under the glacier. Now that everyone’s arrived, why aren’t you showing yourself?”

Hong Long

The space trembled, and a blood-red cloud emerged.

There floated a white bone altar that was more than five-hundred feet tall inside the blood-red cloud. There were sixteen dragon bones at the bottom of the altar as if they were sixteen pillars, supporting the bone structure.

There were tens of thousands of human bones under the altar, and they were very thickly-dotted on the altar. Nobody could count how many bones there were, and some of the bones belonged to human saints.

There was a flag at the top of the altar, and there were two words: ‘Zhong Ying.’

A fifteen-foot-tall man stood under the flag. He was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor and looked evil. He said, “That thing under the glacier belongs to the immortal vampires. Anyone who dares fight me will die.”

After the bone altar showed up, even saints felt that they couldn’t breathe. The holy Qi didn’t flow well in his body as if it were being suppressed by an invisible power.

The man standing on the bone altar was like a God of Devils, frightening people.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, “I can’t believe Zhong Ying King has also shown up in Yin and Yang Ocean.

Zhong Ying King was the great being from Qingtian Tribe, second only to Qingtian Blood Emperor. He had fought Kong Lanyou, but he was severely injured.

Only Wan Zhaoyi could stay calm at this moment. He confronted Zhong Ying King and said, “The First Central Empire will get that object. Nobody can fight us for that.”

“You?” Zhong Ying King said.

Wan Zhaoyi smiled and said, “I won’t fight you. However, there’re two heavenly kings from the imperial government who want to meet you.”

Chapter 1282 - Kill All King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Heavenly King” was the highest noble status in the First Central Empire. It represented top glory and authority.

However, there were also three levels of Heavenly Kings: lower, middle, and upper.

Even the world-famous Wan Zhaoyi was only a lower Heavenly King.

As for middle Heavenly Kings, they were all important figures in the imperial court. They were second only to the Empress’ authority. Not only did they have powerful cultivations, they also controlled large families. They could stir up a storm in the First Central Empire. Each of their moves could greatly affect the entire human race.

There couldn’t be more than ten middle Heavenly Kings who regularly appeared in the imperial court.

The highest level—upper Heavenly Kings—were even more amazing. Most were the pioneer heroes who’d fought alongside Emperor Qing 800 years ago. They’d lived for more than 1,000 years and no longer appeared in court. They just stayed in the background. Even their heirs were now Heavenly Kings.

Of course, some also entered the upper Heavenly King level in recent centuries because of their unparalleled cultivation. These people were even more terrifying. Each one was able to shake the world.

Whoosh

Two ripples appeared 100 meters in the sky. It was like two water curtains were born out of thin air. Next, two figures walked out of the ripples. In that moment, all the beings present felt their hearts tremble. It was like the entire space trembled.

Which two Heavenly Kings were these?

Zhang Ruochen was also curious. Who could they be that even Wan Zhaoyi worshipped them?

One of them was two meters tall. He had a vertical eye on his forehead and wore purple armor. He grasped a battle axe. Hovering dozens of meters high in the sky, electricity poured out of every pore.

Lightning streaked across the sky, turning it into a sea of electricity.

A Saint from the imperial court instantly recognized the man. “He’s the Thunder Heavenly King, one of the eight department Heavenly Kings from the Earth God Temple!

The Earth God Temple was divided into eight departments. Each one had a Heavenly King.

The authority and status of the eight were second only to the temple leader. Each of them was revered by Saints.

The Thunder Heavenly King was the most skilled at combat of the eight. His Spiritual Power and Martial Way had both reached extremely advanced states too. He was definitely a legendary figure.

If one must rate beings of Kunlun’s Field who cultivated both Spiritual Power and the Martial Way, and were able to reach the highest level, then the Thunder Heavenly King would definitely be included.

“What exactly is under the ice land that even the Thunder Heavenly King has come personally?”

The hearts of the imperial court Saints flipped like tidal waves. They were filled with questions.

Other than the Siming Goddess, Chi Wansui, and Sui Han who knew some details, the other Saints had no clue about the true

reason for coming to the Yin Yang Sea. They only thought they were searching for relics of the Divine Dragons.

Who wouldn't be shocked to see the Thunder Heavenly King?

Qi Sheng, Ying Huo, and Crown Prince Motian's faces paled. Even Prince Xia's eyes filled with fear. Only King Zhongying was still composed, standing at the top of the bone altar like a demon lord.

A younger soldier Saint stared at the other man standing beside the Thunder Heavenly King. Voice trembling, he said, "Look who that is... Could it be..."

Everyone looked over. How could a soldier Saint be so terrified? Could there be someone even more frightening than the Thunder Heavenly King here?

The other Heavenly King wore a blood-red robe, standing in a black cloud. No one could see his features clearly, but merely the red robe was enough to instill heavy fear.

It wasn't that the people were cowards. The Heavenly King was practically the physical incarnation of fear. His aura automatically corroded their hearts.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the red robe. He instantly felt cold Qi circulate through his body. He was cold from head to toe as if his heart had frozen.

"Could it be the Kill All King?" Bu Qianfan inhaled sharply. Shock colored his calm eyes.

"The Kill All King of the north night, he kills all at night. Has the most terrifying man of the Ministry of War come?" Wan Huayu's face was bloodless like Bu Qianfan. Her slender figure trembled.

Bu Qianfan and Wan Huayu were both Saints of the Ministry of War. They were on the same side as the Kill All King, but they were still so frightened. So how terrified would his enemies be now?

Huang Yanchen sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. "The Kill All King's name is Ye Bei, which translates to north night. His

cultivation isn't number one in the Ministry of War, but he's the top god of death recognized by the imperial court."

"I can see that!" Zhang Ruochen said. "Even strong-willed elites like Bu Qianfan and Wan Huayu are so terrified when they see the Kill All King. He must be infamous."

"It's not just Bu Qianfan and Wan Huayu," Huang Yanchen said. "Even the middle Heavenly Kings from the imperial court are intimidated by him."

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. "Even middle Heavenly Kings are intimidated? Why does he have the title 'Kill All King'? Is he truly that terrifying?"

"Back when the imperial court attacked the Death God Sect, he was the general. The Death God Sect had promoted a cult in the south. Millions of human cultivators were brainwashed, becoming members of the Death God Sect. Their numbers snowballed bigger and bigger. It was about to move to the central region too.

"The people brainwashed by the Death God Sect there all acted like they'd gone crazy. They set fires, killed, stole, and robbed, creating chaos. According to the Death God Sect, that was following their heart's desires without letting anything restrain them. They could do whatever they wanted. However, when everyone's wishes lost their chains, the world would turn into Hell."

Zhang Ruochen gasped. He could imagine how chaotic the south had been. "The Death God Sect could use Buddhist spells to control the dead. Only the dead could be their most loyal followers."

"Yes," Huang Yanchen said. "The more people who died, the stronger the Death God Sect."

Faced with this kind of situation, even Zhang Ruochen wouldn't know what to do.

If the imperial court wanted to destroy the Death God Sect, they must first fight with the millions of followers. However, they were just regular people who'd lost their minds. It would

be impossible to reason with them. Many strong figures of the Death God Sect were hidden among the common folk too.

If the leader was soft-hearted, the result may be that the imperial court's army was wiped out. But clearly, the Kill All King wasn't soft-hearted and merciful. Otherwise, he wouldn't have this title either.

"How did he do it?" Zhang Ruochen already had some guesses.

"In one night, the Kill All King led the imperial court's army to massacre the 19 counties of the south. Everywhere they went, the ground was covered with corpses. No living soul was left behind. In the end, they attacked the headquarters of the Death God Sect, dealing great losses, so the sect escaped overseas."

Zhang Ruochen inhaled sharply, feeling cold shivers. "How many people are in 19 counties? There must have been billions."

"That night, the Empress issued three orders in a row to stop the bloodshed," Huang Yanchen said. "However, the Kill All King just replied that he was outside and wouldn't follow the orders. He was the first one who dared to go against the Empress' orders since the founding of the First Central Empire.

"After that battle, the Kill All King was imprisoned in the Nirvana Prison for 180 years. After his release, he actually improved quickly. When he returned to the Ministry of War, he led the army into the Savage Barren Territory. He forced the beasts back in ten short years, gaining millions more miles of territory for the empire. He also established 19 counties in the territory."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the red-robed figure in the black smoke. "The Kill All King of north night, he kills all at night. The Empress must place high importance on him. Otherwise, he would've been sentenced to death for massacring 19 counties in one night."

“The Empress must’ve needed someone like him to intimidate the world and maintain the peace and security of the First Central Empire.”

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “You really understand her.”

Huang Yanchen turned her snowy-white face and met Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He chuckled. “Haven’t you been wanting to train someone like that too?”

The Kill All King’s appearance also caused surprise to flash past King Zhongying’s eyes. He laughed coldly. “The Thunder Heavenly King and Kill All King have appeared together. It seems like the imperial court will definitely win this time. But don’t forget. If I’m here, the strong cultivators of the Ancient Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace will be hiding nearby too.”

The Thunder Heavenly King was domineering. “If they appear, I’ll just kill them.”

Qing Mo tugged Zhang Ruochen’s sleeves and whispered, “There will definitely be a terrifying battle here. It’s literally gods fighting. Let’s run away now, or else we won’t be able to leave later.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He didn’t want to stay for long either. Even if an extreme treasure were to appear, it wasn’t anything they could compete for.

However, just as they were about to leave, the icy ground started shaking violently. More accurately, the entire ice land was shaking.

With a loud noise, the ice under Zhang Ruochen’s foot cracked.

The crack kept widening until it was like a canyon that stretched for thousands of miles. The entire ice land was divided into two halves.

Boom.

Fiery-red light shone from the bottom of the canyon. Then the ice land cracked again into dozens of pieces.

A fiery-red mutated bird flew out of the center of the cracks. Its wings had only been 30 feet long, but when it flew into the sky, it had grown thousands of times bigger.

“It still escaped in the end.”

Zhang Ruochen looked up to the sky. His entire vision was taken up by the bird’s body. He could only see mountain-like feathers. He couldn’t see the sky nor the bird’s complete body.

Chapter 1283 - Three

Meridians Broke

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The power from the fiery bird was burning the sky and turning it into a fiery ocean. It posed a sharp contrast to the broken glacier land underneath.

The forces from the sky suppressed the saints below, and some of them were lying on the ground.

“So terrifying.”

Ao Xinyan tried everything, yet she couldn't even open her dragon wings. She felt as if hundreds of mountains were suppressing her shoulders and her head. She couldn't get away at all.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use the power of space, yet he figured that the space in this sky and land was being suppressed by a mysterious force. The structure was so solid that he couldn't tear it apart, so he couldn't perform great spatial move.

With the land being broken, a glacier that was a thousand miles long became detached.

Traces of five-colored light surged, and it was gleaming.

There was not only chaos Qi, but extreme Yin Dragon Qi in the five-colored light.

A red-caped saint was standing in the imperial government team. He stood at the edge of a glacier, and he touched a trace of Extreme Yin Dragon Qi. Suddenly, his body was frozen.

Chi Wansui, Siming Goddess, Sui Han, Wan Huayu, Bu Qianfan and the other saints from the imperial government were all suppressed by the forces from the fiery bird. They could only see the five-colored light rushing toward them.

Once they were touched by the five-colored light, all the twenty-something saints would be killed.

There was fire coming out of Wan Zhaoyi's body, and a trace of masculine Qi gushed out of his body. He got out of the suppression of the fiery bird and rushed to the front of the saints from the imperial government. They performed palm prints and pushed forward.

“Go back.”

A fiery dragon that was more than one thousand feet long flew out of his palm, knocking the five-colored light away.

Zhang Ruochen thought, No wonder Wan Zhaoyi is the first being on the ‘Five Heroes List’. His cultivation and skills are so forceful that he can break the suppression from the sky and land and make an attack at the same time.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he couldn't get out of the pressure from the fiery bizarre bird no matter how hard he tried. He couldn't even move his fingers. He was nothing compared to Wan Zhaoyi.

Thunder Heavenly King was holding a hammer. He floated in the sky and said, “Little Saint God, take them and leave this place now. The further you go, the better.”

“Okay.”

Wan Zhaoyi clenched his fist and made a strike, crushing the glacier.

He waved his hand, which led to a tornado that covered all the saints from the imperial government, bringing them to a block of ice that was fifteen-hundred feet long.

That ice was like a boat, sailing away from the Abandoned Deep Sea.

In another direction, Prince Xia brought Qi Sheng, Ying Huo, Motian Crown Prince, White Li Prince, Sky-swallowing

Demonic Dragon, and Mang Shisi away, driving another glacier.

Obviously, the immortal vampire race, Ancestral Dragon Mountain, and Nine Li Palace had secretly reached an agreement.

Ying Huo looked at Zhang Ruochen and the others and smiled as if they were going to die soon.

“We’re going to leave now. As for you, you’re going to die soon! Haha!” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon laughed.

Mang Shisi sighed. “What a pity. He has a godly remains ancient weapons. Perhaps it’ll sink to the bottom with his corpse.”

They couldn’t seize the valuables from Zhang Ruochen at all. The most important thing now was to leave here and to survive.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, White Li Prince and Qi Sheng were all tempted by what Mang Shisi said.

Even the top-tier powers like immortal vampire race, Ancestral Dragon Mountain and Nine Li Palace only had few godly remains ancient weapons.

They immediately transmitted their voices with their mind powers and passed the news of the godly remains ancient weapons.

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that several traces of powerful mind power passed through his body. Zhong Ying King, who was standing at the top of the altar, took a look at him. One look made the meridians, saint meridians, and blood meridians pop.

After all three meridians popped, holy Qi couldn’t circulate in his body anymore, and neither could blood. Zhang Ruochen felt that his power was gone, and he couldn’t withstand the pressure from the fiery bizarre bird anymore. He spat out blood and fell to the ground.

The creatures were all saints, so they all knew what had happened to Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen is so damaged now. Let’s see how he’s going to escape Yin and Yang Ocean.”

“Zhang Ruochen’s so going to die here.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and some other immortal vampires were all satisfied.

They had been crushed by Zhang Ruochen after they came to Yin and Yang Ocean. Now, after seeing him crushed, they couldn’t be more pleased.

Qi Sheng was relieved. Since Zhang Ruochen had shown up, he felt a mountain pressuring him the entire time, and his luck and glory was all robbed.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was completely crushed, which meant he would be the greatest young saint in Kunlun’s Field.

A creature whose meridians were all destroyed could never recover no matter what healing pills they took.

“No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen is, he’s nothing in front of someone who’s absolutely stronger than him. There will be no Time and Space Descendant in the future.” A saint from the imperial government sighed.

Both Wan Huayu and Wan Qianfan owed Zhang Ruochen a favor. At this moment, they both really wanted to help Zhang Ruochen.

However, they couldn’t do anything to help with their cultivation.

They didn’t have any say here, and besides, they didn’t dare say anything.

Both Thunder Heavenly King and Shajin King were standing in the sky. Anyone who dared speak for Zhang Ruochen would be killed.

Wan Zhaoyi and Prince Xia led the saints suppressed by both sides away from the sea.

“He destroyed all the meridians, saint meridians, and blood meridians to prevent me from getting away. I should’ve let Lan You kill him in Sikong Zen Temple.”

Zhang Ruochen lay on the ice and was in extreme pain.

He wasn't just lying there to die. He clenched his fist and teeth, mobilized his holy Qi and tried to stand up again.

Holy Qi gushed into his lower abdomen, rushing into his body recklessly. He felt that his body was about to burst.

Without meridians and saint meridians, holy Qi couldn't circulate at all.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took back his holy Qi.

His entire body had turned red as the blood couldn't flow. If it weren't for his great cultivation and sanctified body, his body would have been necrotizing already.

Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan were both very worried about Zhang Ruochen. However, they were both suppressed by the saint might of the fiery bird. They couldn't move at all, and they couldn't do anything about it.

“Am I really going to die here today? There's so much for me to do.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the fiery sky. And then, balls of flames fell from the feathers of the fiery bizarre bird as if it was raining fire. It looked mesmerizing, yet it had the destructive power to burn everything.

Hua La.

A water sound blasted beside Zhang Ruochen.

The Crazy Alcoholic stuck his head out from the ocean and only flew out of the ocean after locating Zhang Ruochen.

“Follow me.”

The Crazy Alcoholic grabbed Zhang Ruochen and decided to leave with him.

Zhang Ruochen was very surprised, as the Crazy Alcoholic was very loyal to his friends and didn't leave them when they were in danger.

“Take them with you.” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Such a trouble.”

The Crazy Alcoholic reached out his arm and spun his rugged sleeves. Black demonic Qi gushed out, and then, he put Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Ao Xinyan, and Qing Mo into his sleeves.

The fiery bizarre bird was flying in the sky. It didn't leave. Apparently, it was waiting for the object to come out.

Zhong Ying King was aware of the fiery bizarre bird and the two heavenly kings from the imperial government. He only realized what was going on when the Crazy Alcoholic had put Zhang Ruochen and the others into his sleeves.

“Which asshole dares help the person I want to kill?”

Zhong Ying King opened his eyes wide. Two blood-red light pillars shot out of his eyes and hit toward the Crazy Alcoholic.

“Damn it.”

The Crazy Alcoholic was shocked and started to run like hell on the ocean. He ran so fast that even the two blood-red light pillars couldn't catch up with him.

Zhong Ying King was startled as he realized that this old guy wasn't a weak guy. He then got serious and raised his arm, pressing toward the space.

“Let's see how you're going to get away.”

A blood-red cloud showed up above the Crazy Alcoholic, which covered an area of hundreds of square miles. It looked like the palm of a God pressing down.

Thunder Heavenly King and Shajin King saw the Crazy Alcoholic running away. They were surprised that someone dared to save someone Zhong Ying King wanted to kill.

“Why are you pushing me so hard?”

The Crazy Alcoholic looked at the blood-red handprint in the sky and swore. And then, he took out a crimson metal wine pot which was only two inches tall. It looked tiny and delicate, just like a wine glass.

He opened the lid and sipped the wine.

And then, flames that were hundreds of feet tall gushed out of the body of the Crazy Alcoholic. He was fast like a trace of light, and he rushed forward and disappeared before the red handprint got him.

Zhong Ying King was a bit upset, as that elder was running too fast. Even he couldn't get him.

The object under the glacier was about to be born, so Zhong Ying King didn't bother chasing him.

The Crazy Alcoholic took Zhang Ruochen and the others and left the Abandoned Deep Sea. They boarded an ancient ghost boat before he stopped and let the four of them out.

“Zhang Ruochen, I've paid a huge price to save you guys. Just give me something to say thank you, like that mercury gourd.”

The Crazy Alcoholic started searching Zhang Ruochen's body for the mercury gourd.

Chapter 1284 - Divine Weapon Appearing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Mercury Gourd was a natural spiritual treasure. It could be as large as a star or as small as a speck of light. Zhang Ruochen stored it in his Sea of Qi the entire time. The Crazy Alcoholic naturally couldn't find it.

Zhang Ruochen was annoyed to be touched by the Crazy Alcoholic. He was practically an old pervert. He dared to touch the private spots without feeling any shame.

Zhang Ruochen felt speechless. "Are you taking advantage of me?" he asked, annoyed.

"How could I do those things with my character and morals? I'm not stealing the Mercury Gourd. I just want to touch it."

His wrinkly hand reached into Zhang Ruochen's collar and started patting again.

"Old alcoholic, Zhang Ruochen is badly hurt. You better get away, or else I'll kill you."

Huang Yanchen didn't know the Crazy Alcoholic. She unsheathed her saintly sword and cut downward, producing a beam of white sword Qi.

The Crazy Alcoholic quickly dodged the sword Qi. "What are you doing? Burning your bridges? I drank legendary wine I preserved for 200 years to save you just now. Can't I ask for some payment?"

Qing Mo couldn't stand this. "Grandpa, Sir Zhang's veins, meridians, and Saintly Meridians have all been shattered. The

Princess is just worried that you'll hurt him, so she attacked you. Plus, you just drank a flagon of your own wine. It's not that high of a cost. You shouldn't demand something like the Mercury Gourd from him."

"Just a flagon of wine?" The Crazy Alcoholic was instantly upset. "Little girl, don't you know that after drinking that wine, you'll have multiple times the speed? You can escape from any enemy. I prepared to drink that wine when I was in danger and use it to escape. I didn't think I'd waste it on you all."

A flagon of wine represented a way to escape.

Qing Mo pursed her lips. Looking to the side, she chuckled and said, "Weren't you in danger earlier? It counts as helping yourself too."

"I..." The Crazy Alcoholic thought that this girl was heartless. "If I wasn't trying to save you all, I wouldn't have been up against those cruel figures! I wouldn't have been in danger! I wouldn't have drunk that flagon! So the source of everything is all because of you."

"If you want to find the source, it's not us," Qing Mo said.

The Crazy Alcoholic was stunned. "Not because of you?"

Qing Mo nodded seriously. "We came into the Yin Yang Sea to help Blackie find its sealed physical body. If not for it, we wouldn't have entered the Yin Yang Sea or run into any danger. So Blackie's the one who owes you. You should go ask it for compensation."

"That fat cat?" The Crazy Alcoholic was taken aback. Thinking carefully, he nodded. The girl seemed to make sense, but it still felt wrong. What was amiss?

Did he really have to find that fat cat and ask for compensation?

Huang Yanchen checked Zhang Ruochen's condition. His injuries were very serious. There was practically no way he could recover.

To a proud talent, having his cultivation disabled would be worse than death. Many people wouldn't be able to accept this and would give up on themselves, even committing suicide.

“Zhang Ruochen...”

Huang Yanchen's eyes reddened and shone with unshed tears. She was worried that Zhang Ruochen would also follow their steps.

Zhang Ruochen moved his lips with difficulty and smiled. “I'm not dead yet. Why are you crying? There are Spring Pills in my spatial ring. Take one out for me.”

Huang Yanchen shook her head. “No, your meridians and Saintly Meridians have all exploded. If you take the Spring Pill and the Pill Spirit spreads out, it won't circulate within you. It'll only dart around randomly and could worsen your injuries instead.”

“Oh, right. I don't have meridians and Saintly Meridians anymore. I can't use Holy Qi anymore.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled. He didn't show any negative feelings. He tried to keep calm instead.

Huang Yanchen realized that she'd said the wrong thing. “Don't think too much,” she quickly said. “When we return to the First Central Empire, I'll definitely find the best pill master to help reconnect your meridians.”

Ao Xinyan bit her red lip with her white teeth. “Team Leader, come with me to the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan. I'll definitely send people to find the best healing medicine. We'll heal you no matter how high the cost.”

Zhang Ruochen was clearer than the others about his own body. It was practically impossible to heal shattered meridians to their original state, unless a miracle happened.

The Crazy Alcoholic walked over. He looked at Zhang Ruochen in Huang Yanchen's arms with a complex look. Earlier, he'd seemed to be searching for the Mercury Gourd. He'd actually been checking Zhang Ruochen's injuries.

“Kid,” he said. “I know a Saint of the Pill Way. We have a good relationship. We'll go find him now. That old guy is

pretty respected as a doctor in Kunlun's Field. He might be able to make you as good as new."

Ao Xinyan and Huang Yanchen's eyes brightened. They stared at the Crazy Alcoholic.

Huang Yanchen's attitude toward him completely changed. "Senior, do you really know a Saint of the Pill Way?"

Only those with Spiritual Power above level 55 who also had high attainments in the Pill Way could be called Pill Saints. Their statuses were comparable to Saint Kings. It wasn't easy to find one of them.

Plus, even if they found one, he might not help a junior in the Saint Realm.

The Crazy Alcoholic smiled confidently. "I don't have many friends, but each one is skilled. When I was young, I was like brothers with that Pill Saint. If I ask, he'll definitely heal Zhang Ruochen."

"You were like brothers when you were young. What about now?" Ao Xinyan felt that the Crazy Alcoholic was unreliable, so she had to make sure.

The Crazy Alcoholic paused and then smiled. "Naturally, we're closer than brothers now. Come, trust me. With that Pill Saint's skills, Zhang Ruochen can recover even if his meridians were shattered."

Kaboom.

A strong burst of Holy Qi flooded out of the Abandoned Deep Sea. The Dead Soul Ancient Ship shook violently.

"Is a large battle finally erupting?"

Zhang Ruochen had Huang Yanchen help him stand up. He gazed toward the Abandoned Deep Sea.

The sky was covered in fire, turning red. The huge Holy Qi waves came from the cloud of fire. It was terrifying even from such a faraway distance.

The waves on the sea grew taller and taller as if wanting to overturn the ship. Gradually, the group saw an enormous

mountain rise up over the sea. It shone with five-colored light, scattering the firelight. It colored the Yin Yang Sea.

“How come such a huge mountain came out of nowhere? We’re already outside the Abandoned Deep Sea, but we can still see the mountain’s features. How high must this mountain be?”

The Crazy Alcoholic widened his eyes. He stared at the mountain’s shadow. It felt like a tower, but it was too far away. He couldn’t see clearly.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan, Huang Yanchen, and Qing Mo were all extremely shocked and dumbfounded. They couldn’t even breathe. Could this be the legendary Dragon Sun Moon Mix Tower?

A divine weapon appearing was definitely earth-shattering news. It was enough to change the balance of powers in Kunlun’s Field. If this news spread, it would definitely shake the world.

The Crazy Alcoholic’s eyes shone with a hot look. He couldn’t stop rubbing his hands. “If cruel figures like King Zhongying, the Thunder Heavenly King, and All Kill King enter the Abandoned Deep Sea, there must be an amazing treasure coming out. As to what it is, I do kind of want to see. Maybe I can get some leftovers.”

The Crazy Alcoholic sensed that Zhang Ruochen’s group had strange expressions. “You know what it is, right?” he asked suspiciously. “Did you really enter the Yin Yang Sea to find the fat cat’s physical body?”

Zhang Ruochen wanted to hide the fact, not wanting the Crazy Alcoholic to know about the Dragon Sun Moon Mix Tower. If the Crazy Alcoholic knew about it, he definitely wouldn’t leave the Yin Yang Sea anymore. He’d want to fight for it.

Competing with people like King Zhongying and Kill All King was like fighting for a tiger’s food. Any mishap could kill them.

Before Zhang Ruochen could speak, Qing Mo came out and said, “It’s the Dragon Sun Moon Mix Tower.”

“What?” The Crazy Alcoholic’s eyeballs almost fell to the ground. Yelping, he ran over and grabbed Qing Mo’s shoulder, sputtering, “Little...little girl...what did you say?”

“The Dragon Sun Moon Mix Tower,” Qing Mo repeated, not thinking anything was wrong. “Blackie said that the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, one of the top ten divine weapons, is in the Yin Yang Sea. The mountain that came out of the Abandoned Deep Sea’s center is too huge and its aura is too terrifying. It must be the Dragon Sun Moon Mix.”

The Crazy Alcoholic trembled with excitement and laughed maniacally. “I was wondering why those fierce figures would risk their lives and enter the Yin Yang Sea. They’d come for the Dragon Sun Moon Mix! Why didn’t you say so earlier?”

Zhang Ruochen could see that the Crazy Alcoholic wanted to return to the Abandoned Deep Sea. He quickly reminded him, “A divine weapon’s appearance will definitely cause a bloody storm. Even if you happen to get it, it might not be a good thing.”

“I obviously know that, but if I leave without seeing a legendary divine weapon clearly when it’s right in front of me, I’ll regret it for life.”

The Crazy Alcoholic took an ancient yellow jade out. He handed it to Zhang Ruochen and told him a name, letting him go search for that Pill Saint alone.

Whoosh!

The Crazy Alcoholic flew into the air and rushed to the Abandoned Deep Sea as a beam of light.

Zhang Ruochen clutched the yellow jade. He stared at the Crazy Alcoholic’s back and glanced at the “mountain” above the sea. In the end, he just sighed.

Who wouldn’t be tempted when faced with a divine weapon?

If not for their low cultivation, Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan would probably want to try their luck in the Abandoned Deep Sea too. What if they were lucky and received the Dragon Sun Moon Mix?

They naturally understood the Crazy Alcoholic's thoughts.

The Dead Soul Ancient Ship started off. It created ripples and gradually left the Abandoned Deep Sea.

Chapter 1285 - Escape Yin and Yang Ocean

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There were rumbling sounds coming out of the Abandoned Deep Sea. It was like thunder, making the water in Yin and Yang Ocean tumble.

Those creatures were too powerful. If Zhang Ruochen and the others were still in the Abandoned Deep Sea, the after-waves from the fight could annihilate them.

“Who can get Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower? If Ancestral Dragon Mountain or the immortal vampire race gets it, the situation in Kunlun’s Field will be drastically changed. The entire human race will be in danger,” Huang Yanchen mumbled.

Qing Mo blinked her eyes and looked to the fiery sky. “I remember that the immortal bird will burn itself to death every five thousand years. Every time it dies, it’s going to be reborn. Blackie might have been an immortal bird before, but after it was reborn, its forces would have been completely different.”

“Immortal bird? Are you saying that fiery and bizarre bird is the legendary immortal bird?” Ao Xinyan was surprised.

Qing Mo nodded and said, “I’ve read about the immortal birds before. I’m sure that it’s an immortal bird.”

After hearing what Qing Mo said, Zhang Ruochen also recalled some of the information he knew about immortal birds.

If that fiery bird was an immortal bird, it might be the flesh of Blackie.

There were so many creatures sealed on the stone bridge, yet it was the only one that had been awakened. There must have been some external force that triggered it. It might have been Blackie's saint soul entering the body of the bird.

Besides, just as the immortal bird woke up, Zhang Ruochen lost the connection with Blackie, which was too coincidental.

Zhang Ruochen said, "If the immortal bird really is Blackie, it might not be a good thing. Blackie followed my orders before because I have the Universe Spiritual Map to suppress it, and it also needed my strength to find its body. Now, it cut the connection with the Universe Spiritual Map and has such power. Who can suppress it in the future?"

There must have been a reason why Saint Monk Xumi sealed Blackie's body in Yin and Yang Ocean and the Universe Spiritual Map. That guy was definitely not a good being before. Perhaps it really was someone who killed and endangered everyone.

"It doesn't matter whether the immortal bird is Blackie or not. To a great being like that, we're nothing but ants. We need to leave Yin and Yang Ocean as soon as possible to save our lives," Huang Yanchen said.

All the meridians in Zhang Ruochen's body had been broken. He couldn't use the power of the martial way or his body. However, he still had great mind power.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't given up at all. He kept mobilizing his mind power to build virtual meridians.

They were not real veins, but invisible veins that helped his blood flow. There was some activity in his body structure and constitution.

Human veins were very complicated. There were billions of capillaries. Zhang Ruochen's mind power was at level fifty-one, so he had already reconstructed ten percent of the meridian system.

Only mind power saints who were stronger could help him build the entire meridian system.

Zhang Ruochen's meridian system was fragile. He needed to use his mind power to sustain it all the time, otherwise, it would crumble immediately.

Gradually, his skin turned back to its normal color.

He could still stand and walk like a normal monk.

"Please lie down. Don't try anything now," Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and shook his head. He took out saint jades and saint stones, starting to establish a transportation formation on the deck of the ancient ghost boat.

"The monks from the imperial government and the immortal vampire race must've known that I escaped Abandoned Deep Sea. I can't fight them now. I have to leave Yin and Yang Ocean as soon as possible."

Zhang Ruochen was weaker than he thought. He felt tired after only half an hour, and he had to sit down and rest.

Zhang Ruochen then instructed Huang Yanchen and Ao Xinyan to place the saint jades and saint stones. He would only do it himself when he was drawing the space formation inscriptions.

It took them two days to finish the transportation formation. Fortunately, they didn't run into the people from the immortal vampire race and the imperial government.

The battle in the Abandoned Deep Sea was still not finished. Nobody knew how it was going to end.

Hua.

The space formation started to be operated and gave out gleaming light.

After the light withered away, Zhang Ruochen and the others were still standing in the formation, but they were not on the ancient ghost boat anymore. They came to the edge of Yin and Yang Ocean.

Before entering Yin and Yang Ocean, Zhang Ruochen had established a space transportation formation. It helped them a

lot now.

“We should be leaving Yin and Yang Ocean before them. Let’s go,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen and the others went back to the savage barren mountains through the space wormhole.

“Leader, follow me to the Divine Dragon Half-human race. Perhaps there’re saint pills that can help you recover,” Ao Xinyan said.

The Divine Dream Marsh was a holy place where there were lots of rare saint pills. The people from the Divine Dragon Half-human race had been staying in the Divine Dream Marsh. There might be saint pills in the treasury that could help monks rebuild their three meridians.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to give up any hope. He followed Ao Xinyan into the Divine Dream Marsh, to Dragon Spirit Island.

After learning what had happened to Zhang Ruochen, Ao Yi sighed. He used to be a peerless talent who might become an emperor in the future, yet he was so crushed now.

There was no way to heal the three broken meridians.

Ao Yi wasn’t a short-sighted person. He didn’t refuse Zhang Ruochen just because he had lost the potential to become a supreme being.

Ao Xinyan had made a great breakthrough and had become a saint after Yin and Yang Ocean, and she had completely refined her true dragon body.

This was all because of Zhang Ruochen, so the Divine Dragon Half-human race owed him a lot.

Ao Yi gave an order. “Ao Zhan, bring the thousand-year connecting golden lotuses and silver saint vines. Give them to Zhang Ruochen.”

Connecting golden lotuses and silver saint vines were both saint pills that were used to treat meridians and saint meridians. They had grown for ten thousand years, and they had great medicinal power.

Ao Yi was showing sincerity in bringing these two saint pills out.

“Thank you, clan leader,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The two saint pills indeed had the power to connect meridians and saint meridians, however, Zhang Ruochen’s meridians and saint meridians were not broken, but crushed. There wasn’t a single meridian that was intact.

Even if he took the two saint pills, it wouldn’t help him much.

Ao Yi knew that. He said, “That’s all I can do. What other plans do you have for later, Zhang Ruochen? If you don’t have other places to go, just stay here to recover. The Divine Dragon Half-human race isn’t some top-tier power, but it has its ways to protect itself. No one can trespass here.”

Ao Xinyan said, “My grandpa is right, leader. Just stay in the Divine Dream Marsh and heal yourself. I’ll send someone to ask that pill way saint teacher to come here.”

The saint teacher mentioned by the Crazy Alcoholic lived in the north, and it was very far from the Divine Dream Marsh. Ao Xinyan was worried that Zhang Ruochen might run into something dangerous, so she wanted him to stay.

Zhang Ruochen had too many enemies. If they knew that his meridians were crushed, many people would go to kill him.

It was a far distance from the east to the north. No matter how well he hid himself, he might be found.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I’ll bring you lots of trouble if I stay here.”

Actually, Ao Yi was just doing so because of politeness. He didn’t really want Zhang Ruochen to stay in the Divine Dream Marsh. Zhang Ruochen had too many enemies, Ancestral Dragon Mountain, Nine Li Palace, the immortal vampire race and some other human powers. Each of them had the power to annihilate the Divine Dragon Half-human race.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to leave after noticing this.

Ao Xinyan wanted to convince him to stay again. He stopped her and smiled. “Do you really think I’m useless now, your

highness? Relax. Ordinary enemies can't do anything to me. Besides, I have Yanchen and Qing Mo to accompany me."

Ao Xinyan knew that she couldn't convince Zhang Ruochen to stay. She said, "I'll come with you to the north. I need to heal you no matter what."

Ao Yi wouldn't let Ao Xinyan leave easily, as it was too dangerous for her to go to the north with Zhang Ruochen.

Hong Long.

There came a blasting sound from the space wormhole to Yin and Yang Ocean.

The divine dragon palace shook, and there were waves dozens of feet high on the Divine Dream Swamp. The spirit Qi was shaking.

What happened?

"Did those great beings leave Yin and Yang Ocean?"

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo and Ao Xinyan walked out of the divine dragon palace. They went to a higher place and looked to the savage barren secret region.

That sound had come from the space wormhole.

A blood-red cloud flew in the sky, and there was a bone altar in the blood-red cloud. Zhong Ying King was standing on the altar, and there were wounds everywhere on his body. He was trying to flee.

"Who injured Zhong Ying King that severely?" Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

With his cultivation, even if Zhong Ying King couldn't get Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower, it should be easy for him to leave safely. Yet he was crushed, with his bone altar being made rugged.

Did someone seize Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower and activate it?

Chapter 1286 - Dragon King's Might

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

King Zhongying had the White Bone Altar and Hundred Saint Blood Armor. He could unleash extreme combat ability and also have strong defensive powers. He'd also completed the top palm technique, Universe Divine-Stele Palm of the Immortal Vampires. Such a figure was practically undefeatable for cultivators below the Supreme Saint Realm.

Not everyone had cultivations as high as Kong Lanyou. It wasn't easy to hurt King Zhongying to this extent.

Zhang Ruochen immediately thought that someone had collected the Dragon Sun Moon Mix and used the extreme power from the weapon to hurt King Zhongying, forcing him to run out of the Yin Yang Sea.

So, who could've taken the Dragon Sun Moon Mix?

Strong energy ripples kept coming out of the Savage Barren Territory. Various mountains were shaking. The beasts in the sky and on the ground were all fleeing. The closest place was Divine Dream Marsh. It would suffer from the most direct hit.

Black clouds covered the sky. Lightning would streak past occasionally with huge cracks of thunder. Wild wind blew, wailing like the roars of savage beasts.

The people of the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan felt that the end of the world was coming. They all trembled in fear.

Earlier, Ao Yi had heard from Ao Xinyan that the monstrous figures of all top forces were fighting for a divine weapon in

the Yin Yang Sea. Since such strong energy waves were coming from the Savage Barren Territory, he was naturally a bit afraid. He feared that the fierce battle would extend to the Divine Dream Marsh.

“Activate all defensive barriers.”

Whoosh!

Beams of light rose up along 80,000 miles of the Divine Dream Marsh. All the formations were activated, forming light shield after light shield. They were like bubbles, looming over this saintly land filled with Spiritual Qi and protecting it.

Roar!

Before the defensive formation was completely activated, a deafening dragon’s roar came out of a spatial wormhole. Soon after, a brilliant silver cloud appeared in the sky. A silver dragon, miles long, flew in the cloud. After spreading its wings, it covered the entire sky.

The aura radiating from the silver dragon transformed into strong pressure. It fell upon all the beings. Even Half-Saints spat out blood and fell to the ground from the pressure.

This was a dragon as strong as King Zhongying. However, the silver dragon seemed to have been hurt badly. Its abdomen had a 1,000-meter-long injury caused by a sharp weapon. It couldn’t heal and blood kept raining down from the cut.

Dragon blood contained strong icy energy. Even a drop on the ground could make a large patch of land ice over.

When the silver dragon flew into the Divine Dream Marsh, it created a tornado, making the waves in the rivers curl up even higher.

Boom, boom.

The defensive formations hadn’t been activated completely. They were shattered like eggshells, unable to block the dragon at all.

“That is a Dragon King of the Winged Dragons. He’s a domineering lord of the Ancient Dragon Mountain.”

Ao Yi's expression was pained. Earlier, two Winged Dragon emissaries had died in the Divine Dream Marsh. This Winged Dragon King might have come to take revenge.

Saints took large amounts of resources to develop. They were important figures in any force. The death of a Saint was definitely big news. It couldn't be forgiven so easily.

"The Winged Dragon King must have competed in the Yin Yang Sea for the Dragon Sun Moon Mix Tower. It might've failed, so it came to the Divine Dream Marsh to take its anger out on us." Ao Yi was mentally prepared.

Kaboom.

The ancient formation that protected Dragon Spirit Island was activated. Beams of dragon-shaped light shot up alongside the island. They projected various chainlike runes. Soaring between the heavens and earth, they loomed over the entire island.

Seeing the ancient formation activated, Ao Yi finally let out a relieved breath.

This ancient formation had been set up by a Divine Dragon. It always protected the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan. It could fend off Supreme Saints and couldn't be destroyed from the outside.

Even when the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan almost went extinct before, it had been because of inside conflicts. Someone had damaged the ancient formation, thus making the clan suffer from unprecedented danger.

Roar!

The Winged Dragon King broke through layers of defenses and came to the Dragon Spirit Island. It flew in the air, its large body shining with brilliant silver light. The river below turned silver too.

Just as Ao Yi had thought, the Winged Dragon King had failed at getting the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, so he'd come to the Divine Dream Marsh. However, he hadn't come just to take revenge. He had another motive.

“Ao Yi, not only did you not welcome me after seeing me come to the Divine Dream Marsh, you even dared to activate the defensive formation to stop me. Do you not want to live anymore?”

The Winged Dragon King’s voice shook the earth and sky. Every word was filled with enormous power, terrifying the beings on Dragon Spirit Island.

The dragons are indeed domineering, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The Saint Dragons, young dragon lords, Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Winged Dragon King... Each dragon that Zhang Ruochen met was more aggressive than the last. It was as if they were the noblest beings in the world and everyone else was lower than them.

Ao Yi was a clan leader and naturally had pride too. He was very unhappy to see how the Winged Dragon King was here to assign blame.

“Earlier, I didn’t know that you were coming to the Divine Dragon Marsh,” he said. “I thought that a beast from the Savage Barren Territory had broken in, so I activated the defensive formation.”

“Since you know that it is I,” the Winged Dragon King said coldly, “why don’t you immediately open the formation?”

Ao Yi shook his head. “No, there is unrest in the Savage Barren Territory. If I open it, what if a beast is let in and starts a massacre? This will be a catastrophe to the entire Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan.”

The Winged Dragon King could hear Ao Yi’s unsaid message. How dare a mere half-blood dragon compare a proper Dragon King to a beast? This was blasphemy.

Without wasting more time, the Winged Dragon King said directly, “Saint Dragon Ye Feng and Ye Yun died in the Divine Dream Marsh. Since you’re the leader, shouldn’t you give me an explanation?”

“There’s nothing to explain,” Ao Yi said. “Their deaths had nothing to do with the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan.”

Ao Yi's attitude infuriated the Winged Dragon King even more. "I know that they were killed by a human junior. He must be hiding in the Divine Dream Marsh right now, correct? If yes, then hand him over and I'll forgive you and even give you a merit. When the Ancient Dragon Mountain controls the Savage Barren Territory in the future, your clan will have many advantages."

The Winged Dragon King had failed at getting the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, so he hoped to get something else. He wanted to take that ancient relic from Zhang Ruochen.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had sent a message that Zhang Ruochen had more than the ancient weapon. He also had other secret treasures, such as the Heir Stamp, the Buddha's sarira, and the Blue Dragon Void World's World Spirit.

These treasures weren't comparable to a divine weapon, but they were all tempting to the Winged Dragon King. If he could take these things from Zhang Ruochen, this trip would be worth it.

So you've come for me.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and glanced at Ao Yi. He wanted to know what the leader of the Divine Dragon and Half Human clan would do.

Zhang Ruochen didn't have a deep relationship with the clan. It wasn't worth it to offend a Dragon King for him.

Ao Xinyan feared that Ao Yi would agree to the Winged Dragon King's conditions. "Grandfather," she said hurriedly. "You can't hand Zhang Ruochen over. He killed the two Dragon Saints to help our clan. How can we hand him over in his most difficult time to protect ourselves?"

"When did I say that I'd hand him over?" Ao Yi said.

"Thank you, Grandfather." Ao Xinyan was slightly relieved. Then she looked at Zhang Ruochen and nodded her elegant head. Her eyes took away his worries.

Ao Yi knew that the Ancient Dragon Mountain was cruel. Even if he handed over Zhang Ruochen, the Winged Dragon

King still might not let the clan go.

Seeing that Ao Yi didn't reply, the Winged Dragon King began attacking Dragon Spirit Island.

He extended a claw. It shone with silver light. Then Spiritual Qi from within 1,000 miles in diameter surged into the claw, forming a silver ball. The ball's light was as fierce as the sun. It blinded and pained everyone's eyes.

Boom!

The ball of light crashed against the ancient formation and exploded. Various dragon-shaped beams of icy Qi surged out, continuing to strike the formation. A moment later, all the water around Dragon Spirit Island turned to ice.

After the ball of light scattered, the formation was still undamaged. Clearly, even someone as strong as the Winged Dragon King couldn't dent the formation set up by the ancient Divine Dragons.

"Human, you think you can escape this by hiding inside the formation?"

The Winged Dragon King was aggressive and violent. He was also angry from being injured by the Kill All King in the Yin Yang Sea. After coming to the Divine Dragon and Half Human Clan, he was even stopped outside. Murderous intent instantly exploded out of him.

He spread his huge wings and turned his large body, leaving the sky above Dragon Spirit Island.

"Is he leaving?" Watching the Winged Dragon King go into the distance, Ao Xinyan was slightly relieved.

Boom.

A huge explosion came from the river in the distance. The Winged Dragon King had destroyed the defensive formation on a small island in Divine Dream Marsh. He flew above the island.

The island actually wasn't that small. It just looked tiny compared to Dragon Spirit Island. In actuality, it was hundreds

of miles long and wide. More than one million clansmen lived there.

The Winged Dragon King used a devouring spell, producing gales of wind across the entire island. The clansmen on the island were all swept into the air and into the dragon's mouth.

“Help...”

“Such strong wind! The Dragon King has come for punishment. Everyone will die.”

...

Cries for help and forgiveness mixed together on the island, but the Winged Dragon King didn't care. He was very cruel and didn't plan on showing mercy at all.

A moment later, the one million people on the island were all swallowed into his stomach, becoming his food.

After swallowing the Divine Dragon and Half Humans on the island, the Winged Dragon King let out a long cry. He flew back to Dragon Spirit Island and said coldly, “Ao Yi, Divine Dragon and Half Humans taste pretty nice. I'm only half-full now. There are thousands of islands in the Divine Dream Marsh. What are your thoughts now?”

Chapter 1287 - Arrive in the North

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Half of the people from the Divine Dragon Half-human race lived on Dragon Spirit Island. Some of the people lived on other islands, so they couldn't retreat in time.

Winged Dragon King wanted to use those people on the small islands to threaten Ao Yi, forcing him to give him Zhang Ruochen.

More than one million people from the Divine Dragon Half-human race were swallowed. It was a bloody massacre.

Winged Dragon King couldn't be more furious. He yelled, "I've made myself clear. Give me that human brat, then Ancestral Dragon Mountain will protect the Divine Dragon Half-human race. If you don't, then you'll be annihilated."

Ao Yi said, "Activate Thousand Stars Attack Formation."

The Divine Dragon Half-human race only activated the defense formation in the Divine Dream Marsh. They didn't want to fight Winged Dragon King at all, but now, they had to do it given what he had done.

They had to fight.

Hong Long Long.

Stuffy sounds came out of the Divine Dream Marsh, and the water was vibrating. And then, stone mountains that were more than ten thousand feet tall emerged from the water. They flew to the sky.

On the surface of the mountains were thickly-dotted inscriptions which were giving out gleaming light as if there were tens of thousands of stars shining.

It was a formation from the ancient times. Although it wasn't complete, it could kill any enemy that trespassed in the Divine Dream Marsh.

Winged Dragon King knew how powerful the thousand stars formation was, so he chose not to confront it. Instead, he flew to a larger island to break the defense formation.

There were more than eight million people of the Divine Dragon Half-human race on that island.

If the Thousand Stars Formation attacked it, it would kill all the people on the island.

“You want to use that formation to fight me, but you need to pay a huge price.” Winged Dragon King guffawed as he was sure that Ao Yi wouldn't risk the lives of almost ten million people of the Divine Dragon Half-human race.

An elder stepped forward and tried to stop Ao Yi. He said, “Winged Dragon King has great cultivation. Even if we use the thousand stars formation, we might not be able to kill him, and we might suffer more.”

Ao Yi said, “There's nothing else to do. We'd rather fight than die in silence.”

“There is another choice.”

The saint from the Divine Dragon Half-human race shot a glance at the direction where Zhang Ruo Chen was.

“It's not worth it to risk ten million lives for a broken person. It's such a huge price to pay!”

There were conflicts within the Divine Dragon Half-human race. Some saints thought that they should just give Zhang Ruo Chen away. After all, Zhang Ruo Chen was already a broken person. Even if they handed him over to Winged Dragon King, it was no big deal.

They said it in a loud voice so that Zhang Ruo Chen could hear it.

“If Zhang Ruochen is a man of honor, he shouldn’t put us in such an awkward position. He should step up himself.”

“What do you mean? Zhang Ruochen is a guest of our race, not a tool for our safety.”

Ao Xinyan was very angry. She pulled out her saint sword and slashed toward that saint, stopped by the Taishang Elder of the Divine Dragon Half-human race.

Huang Yanchen smiled and transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. She said, “You made a wise choice. You shouldn’t stay in the Divine Dragon Half-human race.”

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t show any emotions. He walked to Ao Xinyan and talked to her.

“Are you really leaving? I’ll leave with you.” Ao Xinyan felt sorry. She knew that it wasn’t realistic for Zhang Ruochen to stay in the Divine Dragon Half-human race now.

However, she wasn’t afraid of danger. She decided to follow Zhang Ruochen until he was healed.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “You must stay here and guard the space transportation formation for me. I only trust you.”

Zhang Ruochen took off his space ring and gave it to Ao Xinyan. He let her take the formation board of Space Transportation Formation.

Zhang Ruochen had obtained a space transportation formation at the first level in the Endless Abyss. He had been carrying it around, and the space formation was connected to the outer realm. He could leave Kunlun’s Field and go to the deeper area of the universe.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to use it unless the situation was dire.

Zhang Ruochen walked into the space formation. He didn’t go to the outer realm. Instead, he changed some space inscriptions in the formation and located a space coordinate in the north.

He wasn't using fixed transportation this time. Instead, he used single-direction transportation. There might be a huge error.

Before activating the space formation, Zhang Ruochen said to Ao Xinyan, "This space formation is very important. Please guard it for me. I'll come get it after I recover."

"Rest assured. If anyone comes for the space transportation formation, I'll slay them." Ao Xinyan's eyes were red. She stared at a tired being who was standing in the formation. She said, "Please, leader, recover quickly."

Zhang Ruochen smiled at her and activated space transportation formation.

Hua.

The space transportation formation started to spin and gave out gleaming white light. Even Winged Dragon King could sense the strong space ripples coming from Dragon Spirit Island.

The saints from the Divine Dragon Half-human race were all dazed as they found it to be impossible.

"Zhang Ruochen is already broken. How did he use the space skills?"

"Is that the legendary space transportation formation?"

...

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Qing Mo had left, and there was only a space transportation formation on the ground. Ao Xinyan picked up the formation board and put it in the space ring.

Ao Xinyan knew that it'd be almost impossible for Zhang Ruochen to heal. She didn't know whether she was going to see him again.

She was upset, staring toward the north.

Some of the saints from the Divine Dragon Half-human race wanted to take the space transportation formation, but nobody dared wrong Ao Xinyan.

Winged Dragon King knew that Zhang Ruochen had run away. It yelled in indignation, and it performed swallowing saint

spells. It slaughtered the people on the island and swallowed them.

“There are no other methods. We have to use the thousand stars formation to attack him.”

Ao Yi’s eyes gleamed with fire. He stopped waiting and gave an order to make attacks. Suddenly, the sky above the Divine Dream Marsh turned dark.

Layers of clouds showed up and tumbled in the sky. Even the stones and mountains became dim.

“What happened?”

The monks from the Divine Dragon Half-human race were all confused as they didn’t understand why it had turned dark all of a sudden.

Winged Dragon King stopped and felt a grave danger coming at him. His dragon eyes popped as he stared at the black clouds.

Hong Long.

A five-colored divine tower landed from the black clouds.

Winged Dragon King looked terrified. He opened his wings and tried to run.

The divine tower which had five colors hit his body like a giant mountain.

Ao.

Winged Dragon King yelled. He tried to fly away, shaking the island, and the ground was being cracked, yet he couldn’t get away at all.

A golden-light human being landed like a God. He stood in the space with golden hair waving in the sky. He had the power to suppress everyone.

He was a very handsome man with golden dragon antlers on his head. He had a complicated look on his face, and there were tens of thousands of dragon shadows surrounding his body.

If Zhang Ruochen was still on Dragon Spirit Island, he would definitely be startled.

That person was the man who had been sealed in the stone bridge. He was still alive, and he walked out of the ice.

The handsome man reached out his palm, and the five-colored divine tower kept getting smaller, until it was only half a foot tall.

Ao!

There was a dragon sound coming out of the tower.

All the creatures in the Divine Dream Marsh were shocked. A dragon king from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, a top-tier overlord in Kunlun's Field, was easily crushed and kept captive.

Where did that golden-haired man come from?

“The Divine Dream Marsh is a very dangerous place. You can't stay here anymore. People from the Divine Dragon Half-human race, follow me into Yin and Yang Ocean. The resources of the divine dragon race will be open to all of you. As for how many people can awaken the divine dragon bloodline, it'll depend on your power and luck.”

The golden-haired man's voice spread to the entire Divine Dream Marsh and echoed in the sky and land.

...

The north had a long history and countless ancient legends. It used to be the most prosperous place of the human race.

With the witchcraft in the north declining, it declined along with it. It couldn't rival the central region now, and it was even inferior to the east, the south, and the west.

The north had been raided by immortal vampires, and all the powers were fighting each other. The north was tainted by blood, and it was left in ruins.

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Qing Mo were all transported to a hill where there were lots of human bodies. They were corpses of refiners, elders, children, and women.

All the corpses had been sucked dry and there was no blood.

There was a blood-red pond which had an area of five-hundred square feet at the bottom. There were immortal vampire soldiers wearing armor surrounding the blood-red pond.

It seemed to be an important place for immortal vampires to store blood.

Chapter 1288 - Chaotic Veins

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Immortal Vampires started killing so much to take the blood. Their cultivations could only improve quickly by drinking enough blood.

Amongst all blood, human blood was the most attractive. It didn't need to be refined. They could absorb it directly and transform it into cultivation and strength. Drinking the blood of savage beasts was also beneficial, but they had to spend a lot of time to refine it. It was relatively more troublesome.

If they could drink human Saint blood every day, an Immortal Vampire's cultivation speed would make a human pride feel despair.

Every time the Immortal Vampires conquered land in the north, they would gather all the human corpses. They'd extract the blood and form a blood pool.

Only the Immortal Vampires that had killed the most enemies in battle qualified to cultivate by the blood pool and improve themselves.

The blood pool at the bottom of the ravine wasn't large or small. It was medium sized. The Immortal Vampires gathered there were practically all Half-Saints. There were 67 people.

"They killed so many humans. They must die." Looking at the withered human corpses in the ravine, Huang Yanchen's eyes shone with cold light. She took out her saintly sword, wanting to rush over and kill the Immortal Half-Saints by the blood pool.

"Don't be so brash." Zhang Ruochen stopped Huang Yanchen and said, "We've just arrived in the north and aren't clear

about the situation yet. We can't act impulsively. If we kill them, we'll attract the Immortal Vampires' attention. It's not beneficial to us."

"Are we going to just let them go?" Huang Yanchen said, voice low.

"We can find out our specific location and the battle situation of the north first. Then we can kill them."

Zhang Ruochen had no positive feelings toward the Immortal Vampires either. The fury in his heart was even more violent. However, he was calmer than Huang Yanchen. He knew what he should and shouldn't do.

"Princess," Qing Mo whispered. "We came to the north to search for the Pill Saint in Xianji Ravine and heal Lord Zhang. That's the most important thing."

Hearing this, Huang Yanchen finally calmed down.

There were dozens of Immortal Half-Saints in this ravine. It looked dangerous, but it was actually safer. No one would guess that there were humans hiding here.

Huang Yanchen left the ravine alone to search for information. Qing Mo remained to protect Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo created a cave inside all the mummified corpses for a temporary hiding spot. Qing Mo guarded the entrance while Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged. He took out the two saintly medicines that Ao Yi had gifted him—the Intermittent Gold Lotus and Silverthread Saint Ivy.

"These are all treasures for healing the meridians and Saintly Meridians. I'll give it a try."

Zhang Ruochen naturally wasn't willing to be a disabled man. He wanted to reconnect his meridians and go back onto the path of cultivation. Thus, he took a leaf from the Intermittent Gold Lotus. Putting it in his mouth, he started absorbing the medicinal power in it.

As the medicine seeped into his body, his body produced some vitality, but nothing about his meridians changed. If he

couldn't connect the meridians, it was useless no matter how much vitality his physical body produced. It would be lost.

He sighed. Not wanting to waste the saintly medicine, he stopped taking it. He put the Intermittent Gold Lotus and Silverthread Saint Ivy back.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen couldn't cultivate his physical body and Martial Way anymore, but he could still cultivate Spiritual Power. As long as he could make himself strong, it was an option.

Just as Zhang Ruochen prepared to cultivate Spiritual Power, he happened to realize that his body was different from before.

The formless blood vessels he created with Spiritual Power actually had a layer of five-colored light. It was filled with indescribable spirituality.

“It's...Chaotic Qi...”

Five-colored Chaotic Qi kept leaking out of the crack in the Universe Spiritual Map. It flooded into Zhang Ruochen's ratty body, seeping into his flesh and bones.

Chaotic Qi was only formed at the creation of a world. It was filled with endless vitality and could create everything in the world. Many ancient creatures were born in this turbidity.

Now, Zhang Ruochen's meridians were all broken. The meridians in his body had all disappeared and it was a bit similar to a new world. There were no rules or networks. Everything was chaos.

This kind of environment seemed dead, but it was actually filled with endless vitality and variables.

“Chaotic Qi can actually form vessels. This is incredible.”

It was like Zhang Ruochen saw a lantern in the darkness. He was ecstatic.

The vessels formed by Chaotic Qi followed the guidance of Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power. They weren't stable; they were only threads of Qi. It wouldn't be easy to turn them into real blood vessels.

Perhaps only a Pill Saint was able to turn a Qi network into true blood vessels.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to find the Crazy Alcoholic's Pill Saint even more now. If he could reconstruct the meridians with the help of the Chaotic Qi, he could get something good out of this disaster. Going from an artificial creature to a natural creature, his potential and body would both improve.

Of course, this was only an optimistic idea.

After all, even a Pill Saint might not be able to reconstruct a disabled man's meridians.

With Zhang Ruochen's current Spiritual Power, he could only construct ten or 20% of a blood vessel network. If he wanted to construct the entire network, he needed stronger Spiritual Power.”

With my current condition, I can only cultivate Spiritual Power before reforming my meridians.

He could only strengthen his Spiritual Power by observing and comprehending. Of course, this was only the most traditional method. Improvement was relatively slow.

Zhang Ruochen had a large amount of resources to quickly improve his Spiritual Power. He didn't need to use traditional methods.

For example, the Blue Dragon Divine Dew on the Seven Star Sacred Tuber was a great treasure for improving Spiritual Power.

He could also absorb other Saints' memories and knowledge from the saintly sources he had. This could also increase his speed of improvement.

In the end, he chose the more conservative method. He strengthened his Spiritual Power by absorbing the Blue Dragon Divine Dew.

While he was cultivating Spiritual Power, some important things were also happening outside.

...

The battle at Yin Yang Sea quickly spread throughout Kunlun's Field. Both the large human forces and creatures of other races were shocked.

The Dragon Sun Moon Mix, one of the top ten divine weapons, had actually appeared. The aura that it radiated made all the saintly weapons with weapon spirits tremble.

A divine weapon was like a god in the weapon world.

Everyone in the world discussed the Dragon Sun Moon Mix that day.

“A divine dragon awoke in the Yin Yang Sea. Holding the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, he suppressed the Winged Dragon King and injured the Thunder Heavenly King and Kill All King. He was horribly strong.”

“Since he's so powerful, why doesn't he walk out of Yin Yang Sea and rule the world?”

“That strong figure in the Yin Yang Sea probably isn't a divine dragon. If a divine dragon awoke, how could the Thunder Heavenly King and Kill All King escape?”

Some people were doubtful. They felt that the strong cultivator in the Yin Yang Sea wasn't that strong. At least, he hadn't reached the peak yet.

He was probably afraid of the figures at the true peak of Kunlun's Field, such as Emperor Bi of Ancient Dragon Mountain, Qitian Blood Emperor of the Immortal Vampires, Nine Life Heavenly Emperor of Nine Li Palace and more...

Since a divine weapon had appeared, the emperors and kings standing at the top of Kunlun's Field would definitely be tempted.

That strong cultivator in the Yin Yang Sea wasn't strong enough to fight Emperor Bi, Qitian Blood Emperor, and Nine Life Heavenly Emperor. He was worried he couldn't keep the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, so he didn't leave the Yin Yang Sea.

Of course, some cultivators also believed that the figure in the Yin Yang Sea was a divine dragon. However, he'd been sealed

in ice for too long and hadn't recovered his cultivation yet. This was why he chose to hide.

When his cultivation recovered fully, probably no one in Kunlun's Field could counter him.

The next day, news came from the Savage Barren Territory that another battle had erupted in the Yin Yang Sea. It seemed that an emperor-like figure had broken in to take the Dragon Sun Moon Mix.

The battle lasted for half a day. The water of the Yin Yang Sea surged violently, flooding thousands of miles of glaciers along the coast.

In the end, the seemingly emperor-like figure retreated with injuries. He escaped from the Yin Yang Sea. His large body disappeared in the savage barrenness.

No creature could stay calm with the appearance of a divine weapon.

Five days passed. Eight creatures with extremely strong auras broke into the Yin Yang Sea, but all returned with injuries.

"He has the geographical advantage and also has the Dragon Sun Moon Mix. No one in the Yin Yang Sea could be his match." This saying spread throughout the Immortal Vampires. Apparently, Qitian Blood Emperor had said this personally.

Not long ago, Qitian Blood Emperor and the Blood Emperor of another tribe had entered the Yin Yang Sea together. They'd fought with the newly-awoken strong figure for an entire day. In the end, the two Blood Emperors escaped with heavy injuries.

Another Saint of the Immortal Vampires also revealed that, even with Qitian Blood Emperor's cultivation, he still couldn't see the cultivator's identity. He wasn't sure if it was a Divine Dragon.

The appearance of the divine weapon touched the nerves of the top figures of Kunlun's Field. At the same time, news of Zhang Ruochen being disabled by King Zhongying also created a huge uproar among the younger humans.

“Didn’t Zhang Ruochen die while going through the Pre-Saint Trial? How did he get disabled by King Zhongying in the Yin Yang Sea?” Many cultivators were confused.

“What kind of figure is Zhang Ruochen? How could he die in a Pre-Saint Trial? That was just a method for escaping. In reality, he’d gone into the Yin Yang Sea and killed a large group of Immortal Vampire Saints. In the end, he angered King Zhongying, thus coming to this kind of disaster.”

“Shameless. King Zhongying is a domineering figure who’d lived for more than 1,000 years. How could he attack a junior?”

Zhang Ruochen was very famous among the young humans. Many cultivators treated him like an idol. They wanted to quickly grow up and shed blood everywhere like him, making the young savage beasts and Immortal Vampires tremble when hearing their names.

Learning that Zhang Ruochen had been disabled, many people felt pity and regret. Many girls who looked up to him wiped at their tears. The number one figure of the young human Saints had still fallen in the end. There would never be another emperor who could protect the human race.

Chapter 1289 - Black Hand

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Now that Zhang Ruochen has been broken and lost his potential to grow, he should give up the resources he has to refine. He needs to make some contributions to the human race. The savage beasts and immortal vampires are both rising. Human beings should help each other.”

What that person said was echoed by many monks.

One of the saint monks from the Life Death Temple showed up in Sky Buddha Holy City and said, “If Zhang Ruochen is willing to give the Buddha Emperor sarira to us, he’ll be the most respected guest for the Life Death Temple and any enemy of his will be ours. We’ll pay everything for the Life Death Temple.”

If they didn’t mention the Buddha Emperor sarira, people would think that the Life Death Temple was actually offering to help Zhang Ruochen.

However, everyone could tell that the Life Death Temple was craving the Buddha Emperor sarira, and they were threatening.

Moon Worship Demonic Sect also gave a piece of information. “If Zhang Ruochen can return the heir stamp, we’ll forget all the grudges. If not, Moon Worship Demonic Sect will send great beings to the central royal city to invite his mom.”

All the monks who were friends with Zhang Ruochen stood up and accused Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

The feud among monks should not involve their families, especially when this family member of Zhang Ruochen’s was just an ordinary being who couldn’t refine herself.

Zhu Hongtao rushed to the territory of Moon Worship Demonic Sect and yelled, “Can you be more shameless, Moon Worship Demonic Sect? Do you really think you can do anything to him just because his meridians are crushed? If you dare touch Zhang Ruochen’s mother, I’ll destroy one hundred subsidiaries of Moon Worship Demonic Sect.”

Zhu Hongtao didn’t have family, so he wasn’t afraid of Moon Worship Demonic Sect at all.

If a saint committed slaughter without concern, it would be a terrifying thing. The power of a saint was enough to destroy a city.

Even a top-tier power like Moon Worship Demonic Sect would have a hard time dealing with a mad saint.

The master of Painting Sect was very upset. He showed up in the city and accused Moon Worship Demonic Sect of lacking the manners of an ancient sect.

Chu Siyuan didn’t offer Zhang Ruochen direct help because they belonged to different teams, however, it was already admirable for him to step forward and condemn those who had a hidden agenda.

On the same day, the deity of Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Ouyang Huan, said, “I really want to get my heir stamp back, but I’ll get it back with my own power. I never threatened him with hurting his family, nor have I asked any disciples from the sect to do so. Someone’s hiding in the sect doing despicable things, and I’ll check it out myself.”

Saintess Palace, Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

Ling Feiyu had come out, and her cultivation had surged. She summoned Mu Lingxi after hearing about what had happened to Zhang Ruochen. “Zhang Ruochen is in grave danger now. Did he send a message to you? Has he told you where he’s hiding now?”

“No.”

Mu Lingxi was worried about Zhang Ruochen after learning of what happened, yet she hadn’t heard from him yet. She wanted to find Zhang Ruochen more than anyone else.

How badly was Zhang Ruochen injured? Where was he now?
Was she being chased by his enemies?

Mu Lingxi couldn't calm down thinking about it as she wanted to go look for him now, but she didn't know where to start.

Ling Feixu said, "Zhang Ruochen has a couple of treasures that are tempting even to saint kings and supreme saints. Some people are trying to lure him out using his mother. Go check who's doing that."

Ling Feiyu gave Mu Lingxi a token which granted her access to all the important places in the sect.

"Okay."

Mu Lingxi took the token and left.

"Where are you, Zhang Ruochen?" Ling Feiyu mumbled, disappearing from Saintess Palace and showing up at the top of a spiritual mountain.

She was standing on the mountain, and her hair was waving in the cold wind. She looked down with her beautiful eyes, and her look was like sword light coming from a divine sword.

Hua!

She disappeared and went into an ocean of clouds, slicing all the clouds and leaving a trace of a sword.

Few monks knew about Zhang Ruochen's mother.

However, after this, all the monks knew about her.

Even if Moon Worship Demonic Sect didn't plan to lure Zhang Ruochen with Concubine Lin, it would motivate some monks from other powers.

The purpose of this whole thing was to point out a way for those who were greedy.

Concubine Lin was Zhang Ruochen's weakness.

If Concubine Lin was captured, Zhang Ruochen would definitely show up.

Ling Feiyu knew exactly what was happening. She knew that someone incredible was planning the whole thing. After all,

what Zhang Ruochen possessed was too tempting to saint kings and even supreme saints.

Who was manipulating the whole thing? Moon Worship Demonic Sect? The imperial government? Or some other powers?

If that person was using Concubine Lin as the bait, he or she must be in the central emperor city and controlling the entire situation.

Ling Feiyu left the demonic sect and headed to the central empire city herself. She wanted to meet the person who was planning the whole thing.

The headquarters of Sacred Central Crypt was built in a hidden place. It wasn't built on the ground. Instead, it was in the sky, more than one million feet above the ground on a planet.

Normally, a planet wouldn't seem to be that close to the ground.

That planet was actually a godly remains ancient place where a God lived. There were many mysteries in that place, and without the guide of those from Sacred Central Crypt, even saints couldn't find that place, not to mention landing on the planet.

Fierce holy Qi ripples came out of a red building on the planet, forming ripples and trembling the sky and land here.

“How dare you, Zhong Ying King.”

A seven-colored peacock rushed out of the minor planet and opened its wings that carried hostility everywhere.

All the monks in Sacred Central Crypt were terrified as they didn't understand why the saint ancestor was so angry.

They were only relieved after the seven-colored peacock disappeared. They climbed up but still had a lingering fear.

The valuables carried by Zhang Ruochen made all the greedy monks crazy.

“Buddha Emperor sarira has all the cultivation and knowledges of the two Buddha saints, Buddha Emperor and Golden Dragon. If you can refine it, you can definitely become the human emperor.”

“Zhang Ruochen has a cauldron ancient weapon. Its power is stronger than that of God-kill Cross Shield. A sect will last forever if it can get the cauldron.”

“The Abyss Ancient Sword is made of the same materials used to make the Divine Blood Sword. It can swallow other weapons and keep being improved until it becomes a divine weapon.”

“Zhang Ruochen obtained the entire treasury of Blue Dragon Dynasty. He has the world spirit of Blue Dragon Void World. If you can find him, you’ll have endless wealth.”

...

All the monks from Kunlun’s Field were driven crazy. They wanted to find Zhang Ruochen right now and to obtain everything he had. In the stories told by many, even the flesh of Zhang Ruochen was described as a true treasure which could improve the body constitution of monks.

Anyone who was not a retard could tell that someone was trying to instigate people’s emotions so that they could find Zhang Ruochen right now.

To everyone, Zhang Ruochen was a powerless person now. If someone could find him, even an ordinary warrior could take him down and seize his treasures.

Once someone had that thought, he would lose his rationality very soon.

Everyone wanted to become someone like Zhang Ruochen, fighting a deity, defeating a saintess and becoming someone who everyone admired.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea what was happening outside.

Zhang Ruochen had been taking lots of blue dragon divine dew for seven days, and his mind power had surged to level fifty-two.

Mind power monks who had reached level fifty-two could rival upper-class saints. Some of the people who had practiced high-class spells or had great mind power saint weapons could even kill saints at the Xuanhuang Realm.

Even Siming Goddess from the Earth God Temple and Ying Huo from the Immortal Temple only had level fifty-three mind power.

However, the valuables they had were not ordinary. If they didn't meet creatures at true-saint level, they could crush everyone.

“I can construct fifty percent of my bloodline system since my mind power has reached level fifty-two.”

Zhang Ruochen's bloodline system became more complete, and he was livelier now. His body constitution became stronger under the nurturing of chaos Qi.

It could be predicted that, if he could construct a complete bloodline system, Zhang Ruochen's body constitution and power would reach another level.

Chapter 1290 - Before Leaving

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The unique feature of Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was the control of thunder and lightning. Amongst Spiritual Power cultivators, this represented attack and combat.

However, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation for thunder was the lowest before. He only had some low-level Spiritual Power weapons too. Even though he was at level 52, he was still the weakest of the Spiritual Power cultivators in his level.

Crackle.

He opened his right hand. Shreds of lightning appeared in his palm. They were woven into balls and shone with purple light.

This was the Lightning Ball, a Level-1 spell.

He didn't strike with this spell. Using Spiritual Power, he scattered the lightning until it disappeared.

Then he activated more Spiritual Power to observe the Holy Carnivorous Flower's condition.

When King Zhongying had shattered Zhang Ruochen's meridians, he'd also hurt the Holy Carnivorous Flower. The flower had fallen into a deep slumber and still hadn't woken up.

Thankfully, the flower was hurt. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have been able to control it with his current state.

Huang Yanchen had already returned to the ravine. She stood in the distance. Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was quite spirited,

a faint smile appeared on her pretty face. “You seem to have gotten a bit better.”

“It’s alright. Only my Spiritual Power has some improvements.” Zhang Ruochen didn’t want her to be worried, so he remained positive. “According to the Crazy Alcoholic, that Pill Saint lives in Black Wind County of Red River Mansion. How far is that from us?”

Zhang Ruochen urgently wished to reconnect his meridians.

“The north is divided into 36 mansions,” Huang Yanchen said. “Red River Mansion is in the center. It’s where the Immortal Vampires and the imperial court are fighting the most intensely. Right now, we are in Serene Wind Mansion. It’s in the north and completely invaded by the Immortal Vampires.”

“The entire mansion is invaded?”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s spirits fell.

After the First Central Empire was established, they divided the world into mansions and counties. The entire north only had 36 mansions; each mansion was further divided into 36 counties. Each county was very vast, more than 100,000 miles wide.

The humans were able to live peacefully during the centuries of prosperity, so the population multiplied quickly. There were at least a few billion people in each county.

One mansion was millions of miles of territory. The population was in the hundreds of billions.

If the entire mansion was conquered by the Immortal Vampires, one could imagine how shocking the news was. How many humans had died, turning into white skeletons? How many humans had become beasts raised by the Immortal Vampires to provide them with an endless source of blood?

Huang Yanchen’s expression was solemn. “In reality, the northern region already has ten mansions that are conquered. Each of the ten Immortal Vampire tribes has one mansion. They’re also mustering soldiers and horses to continue to attack more mansions. Right now, the most intense battles are in Red River Mansion. Apparently, the ten strategic passes of

Red River Mansion are all dyed red with blood. They fight day and night. Both sides have suffered great losses.”

“How long has it been...and already ten mansions have fallen?” Zhang Ruochen said coldly. “What is the army of the imperial court doing?”

Huang Yanchen sighed. “The First Central Empire has been at peace for centuries. The disciples of clans and sects have all become arrogant and superfluous. Very few have experienced horrible battles. How could they be compared to the bloodthirsty Immortal Vampires? Plus, the Immortal Vampires have much stronger vitality. They already have a great advantage. They can keep drinking blood on the battlefield to recover and maintain their combat abilities.”

After a pause, Huang Yanchen continued, “However, after these two years of life-or-death battles, the human cultivators have visibly improved. They can counter the Immortal Vampires now, instead of being defeated miserably.”

Zhang Ruochen was a wanted criminal and nemesis of the Empress. However, he wasn't heartless. He couldn't remain unmoved at seeing the humans get massacred and turned into food.

“Judging by the time, the internal cleansing of the Confucius Way and the imperial court should be over. The Saint Lady should publish the Vampire Secrets in a few days.”

Zhang Ruochen thought that the battle situation would change after the Vampire Secrets was revealed. At the same time, he was also thinking about how to brew the Six Saints to the Sky Wine as soon as possible. This could strengthen the human race's overall physique and develop more strong cultivators.

Only Half-Saints and Saints could support a race. They were the main force.

Zhang Ruochen soon smiled bitterly. He was a half-disabled man now. It was a big question as to whether he could even recover, yet he was thinking about working for the entire human race. Wasn't he getting too ahead of himself?

Let's not think about this yet. There are many people in the human race who are stronger than me. They can solve these problems. Right now, reconnecting my meridians and recovering my cultivation is the most important thing.

Zhang Ruochen laughed at himself.

Then he asked, "Is there a result from the Yin Yang Sea battle?"

Huang Yanchen nodded. "The Dragon Sun Moon Mix appeared and the top figures of Kunlun's Field all came to fight for it. The Savage Barren Territory fell into more chaos."

Zhang Ruochen had already guessed this, but he was still shaken to hear that the Dragon Sun Moon Mix had appeared. "Who won the Dragon Sun Moon Mix in the end?" he asked impatiently.

"Do you remember the mysterious creature sealed on the ice bridge?" Huang Yanchen asked. "He came back to life. Controlling the Dragon Sun Moon Mix, he defeated the emperor-like figures of the various forces, becoming the sovereign of the Yin Yang Sea."

"It's him." Zhang Ruochen found this to be incredible. Then he asked, "Is there news of Blackie?"

Huang Yanchen shook her head. "Blackie hasn't contacted us. There's no information about it in the outside world either."

"What about the Immortal Bird?" Zhang Ruochen didn't believe Blackie had died. He suspected that it was the Immortal Bird.

"A witness claims that the Immortal Bird injured the strong cultivator from Yin Yang Sea and escaped into the Savage Barren Territory. There was no more sign of it afterward."

Zhang Ruochen fell silent. A moment later, he finally chuckled and asked, "Is there news about me in the outside world? News of me being disabled by King Zhongying must have spread throughout."

"Don't worry about all that. Rest and recover in peace. You can only do what you want after you heal."

Huang Yanchen didn't tell Zhang Ruochen about the outside world. She worried that he would be affected and lose reason. This was disadvantageous for his injuries.

Zhang Ruochen could tell that Huang Yanchen was hiding something, but he didn't continue asking, because she was right. With his current health, he should focus all his energy on recovering.

If his injuries couldn't heal, he wouldn't be able to do anything.

“Come! Let's go to Red River Mansion.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up. Together with Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo, he walked out of the cave built from a pile of mummies. He stood in the ravine filled with bloody Qi and stared at the blood pool at the bottom.

Around 60 Immortal Vampire Half-Saints were sitting there cross-legged, cultivating. They inhaled the blood Qi and their auras kept strengthening.

Huang Yanchen could sense the murderous Qi radiating from Zhang Ruochen. Knowing what he was thinking, she said, “This ravine is close to Langxing County City. There are close to one million Immortal Vampire soldiers in the city. Three Blood Saints are in the army. With our cultivations, we can easily escape as long as we're not surrounded.”

“Then let's give them another lesson before leaving. I can use this to test my current Spiritual Power attacks and abilities.”

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the bottom of the ravine with light steps. The Immortal Vampire Half-Saints who were cultivating sensed a human's aura. They all stopped and looked at Zhang Ruochen's trio with shock.

“Where did this human come from? You actually dare to enter Wanxin Ravine? Don't you know this is a forbidden zone?”

An Immortal Vampire Half-Saint stood up. Grabbing a blood-red crystal spear, he stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's heart with lightning speed.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen waved his finger. Activating Spiritual Power, he struck with an electric sword and cut the Immortal Vampire in half. The two halves turned scorched black and all the vitality leaked out. Even though he was an Immortal Vampire, he was completely dead now.

“How dare you!”

All the Immortal Vampire Half-Saints were furious. They all gathered their Holy Qi. Some cast saintly spells while others activated their saintly weapons.

Zhang Ruochen extended a finger and pointed at the sky. All the Spiritual Qi gathered above his head, forming bolts of lightning.

Before the Immortal Vampire Half-Saints could attack with their spells and weapons, the lightning bolts already fell upon them.

Boom!

The entire ravine was covered by lightning. All the mummified corpses were turned to dust. Even the rocks and dirt melted into liquid.

A large mass of Immortal Vampire Saints beside the blood pool fell down. Twenty to thirty of them were turned to ash. The others were heavily injured, lying on the ground on their last breath.

Spiritual Power Saints didn't have an obvious advantage when fighting with Martial Saints of the same level. However, their strong point was that they could fight many enemies by themselves. On a battlefield, their destructiveness was incomparable to Martial Saints. If they utilized their strengths well, they could even turn the tides.

A Martial Saint wouldn't be able to take care of dozens of Half-Saints as easily as Zhang Ruochen did.

He looked at the lightning in his palm and then at the Immortal Vampire Half-Saints on the ground. He sighed. “It seems that I must learn some more advanced spells. I couldn't kill them all with this Level-1 spell.”

“Which Spiritual Power Saint has come to Langxing County?
Let me come meet you!”

A roar came from outside Wanxin Ravine. Then a large mass of bloody fog surged over from the distance. It hovered in the sky above the ravine. Powerful Holy Qi came out of the fog. Then a Blood Saint with four wings walked out.

Chapter 1291 - Kill with Maltreatment

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

That blood saint was seven feet tall, and his skin was blood-red. There were black engravings all over his body, and after he opened his wings, he was more than two hundred feet long. He had great power.

The four-wing blood saint saw that more than half of the immortal vampire half-saints practicing in the valley had been killed, and he yelled, "You're going to die for killing so many half saints!"

It would take a lot of resources to cultivate a half saint.

Dozens of half saints being killed meant a large group of backbone beings was annihilated. Any power would be crazed.

Zhang Ruochen looked up and said, "I've killed more than one immortal vampire saint, not to mention some half saints."

"Do you dare tell me your name?"

The power of the four-wing blood saint was nothing against Zhang Ruochen's. He couldn't even see the face of Zhang Ruochen, and he didn't know who he was.

Zhang Ruochen didn't answer his question. He raised his hand and mobilized mind power again.

Traces of spiritual Qi were turned into lightning, flowing in the air.

Pu Chi!

"Ah!"

The lightning turned into long spears and hit all the immortal vampire half saints, killing all of them.

“How dare you...”

The four-wing blood saint couldn't be angrier. A human being dared to slaughter immortal vampires in front of him?

In the north, there were only immortal vampires killing human beings, not the other way around.

The eyes of the four-wing blood saint became incredibly bright, and they floated in the blood-red clouds. Inside the two fireballs, fierce power was bred. The two fiery light pillars hit toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and performed a thunder technique, ‘Thunder-chasing technique.’ He moved his body and rushed forward like a trace of light, dodging the attacks of the four-wing blood saint. He came to a higher position in the valley.

“Thunder Fire Whirlpool.”

Zhang Ruochen performed a level-three thunder system. All of a sudden, a whirlpool that had a diameter of eight hundred feet was condensed in the sky. There was light and fire in the lightning.

The spells were performed by Zhang Ruochen, but they were all inferior spells. He had refined them when he was still a half saint.

Although they were all elementary spells, their power couldn't be handled by ordinary saints when they were performed by a mind power saint whose mind power was at level fifty-two.

The thunder fire whirlpools covered the four-wing blood saint, and the lightning and fire kept striking the four-wing blood saint, and there was saint blood falling from the whirlpool.

When the four-wing blood saint got out of the thunder fire whirlpool, his body had become black, and almost half of his body was gone.

“Die.”

The four-wing blood saint knew the weaknesses of mind power saints. As long as their opponent got close to their bodies, they would be killed.

Although he had been severely injured, the four-wing blood saint still wanted to strike back. He dived and reached out his silver-white thorns, piercing toward Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. After his three meridians were crushed, he was in trouble. Before, he would've killed that four-wing blood saint.

Now, he had to dodge him.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm. A lightning ball flew out and hit the body of the four-wing blood saint, which forced him to scream again.

However, the spells performed by Zhang Ruochen were too rudimentary. They could only hurt the four-wing blood saint instead of killing him.

What an annoying guy. He has great mind power, yet he keeps using the most elementary spells. He's trying to shame me.

The four-wing blood saint didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had never practiced any high-level mind power spells. He just thought that Zhang Ruochen was trying to kill him with maltreatment, so he felt insulted and furious.

"Let you be smug for now. The other two blood saints are coming here, and after that, you'll die."

The four-wing blood saint knew that he was being tortured, yet he was still waiting for help. He had to make this reckless human being pay. He had to suck him dry and turn him into a blood slave.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen felt awkward as well. The life and recovering power of immortal vampires were too strong. He couldn't kill him with elementary spells.

Peng Peng.

The lightning balls and electric knife kept diving and falling on the body of the four-wing blood saint, leaving him with dozens of wounds. He kept yelling, with blood being spilled.

Just when the four-wing blood saint couldn't hold it anymore, two traces of saintly way forces came from the southwestern area of the valley.

At the same time, many immortal vampires rushed into the valley. They were the elite army, and there were hundreds of thousands of them forming an alliance. Their marching was shaking the valley.

The four-wing blood saint was so excited that he was about to cry. He saw a silver lining, and he yelled as if he had just been reborn. "Jingyun Blood Saint, Hongtian Blood Saint, help me kill this human mind power saint, and we'll share his saint blood."

However, before the two blood saints could land from the blood-red clouds, a silver kitchen knife flew out and hit one of the blood saints.

Pu Chi.

A blood-curdling scream came from the blood-red cloud.

And then, the body of a blood saint fell from the sky.

The silver kitchen knife spun and killed another blood saint.

Two blood saints were killed at the same time. They didn't have time to run.

The four-wing blood saint was dazed. He stared at that innocent girl standing behind Huang Yanchen.

He had always thought that Zhang Ruochen was the most powerful among them three, and that they were just servants of Zhang Ruochen, so he had ignored both of them.

He didn't expect them to be more powerful.

He should've just run away if he'd known they were this powerful.

After Blue Dragon Void World, Blood God Sect and Yin and Yang Ocean, Qing Mo was still timid, but she at least dared kill people now.

A monk would only grow after the trial of death and blood.

Huang Yanchen was watching the fight between Zhang Ruochen and the four-wing blood saint, and she would help if Zhang Ruochen was in danger.

However, she found out that Zhang Ruochen was still incredible after his meridians being crushed. Normal saints would only be crushed by him.

“Brother Chen, let’s kill him now. The immortal vampire army is coming. We need to leave now.” Huang Yanchen also found the power of Zhang Ruochen to be unfathomable.

Those hundreds of thousands of immortal vampires weren’t just some slack soldiers. Instead, they had formed a formation. If they really encircled the three of them, they’d be in grave danger.

That four-wing blood saint couldn’t hold it anymore. He was already severely injured, and after learning that Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo were both saints, he didn’t dare keep fighting anymore. He performed a body technique and rushed out of the valley.

If the four-wing blood saint didn’t try to run away, it would take Zhang Ruochen a long time to kill him. However, him trying to run away gave Zhang Ruochen a chance.

Zhang Ruochen rushed forward and clenched his palm into a knife shape. “Nine Lightning Blade.”

Nine long blades dashed forward like a wave, and they kept slashing the body of the four-wing blood saint.

The four-wing blood saint warded off the first seven blades. The eighth blade tore the four blood-red wings into pieces, using its fierce lightning power.

The ninth blade cut the four-wing blood saint into halves, and he died.

Huang Yanchen walked toward the four-wing blood saint and Zhang Ruochen and said, “You can become an emperor in the future even if you just practice your mind power. Anyone who dares underestimate you will pay a huge price.”

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit tired. He said, "Let's go. We can't be chased by the immortal vampire great beings."

After all, they were in the area of the immortal vampire race. The seniors of the immortal vampires would definitely be alerted.

Huang Yanchen collected the saint sources of the three blood saints.

Huang Yanchen was leading Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo. They formed a triangle, clashing with the hundreds of thousands of immortal vampire soldiers.

The formation hadn't been completed yet, so they couldn't resist Zhang Ruochen and the other two.

After a short while, the three of them rushed out and disappeared.

Outside the valley were lots of bodies. More than thirty thousand immortal vampires had died, and countless others were injured.

Ningfeng Mansion was a territory owned by one of the ten tribes, Qingtian Tribe. The news of the killing was immediately passed to the seniors from Qingtian Tribe.

Zhong Ying King was the second being in Qingtian Tribe, second only to Emperor Qing.

A trace of an avatar of Zhong Ying King stood in a palace, and he was holding a signal flare. He mumbled, "Three blood saints were killed, and thirty thousand soldiers were killed. Who are they?"

A woman wearing a black cape stood below Zhong Ying King. She said, "Every saint in the north has been documented. Some of them belong to us, and some of them are on the 'Death List'. As for the others, we're trying to recruit them. However, the three of them are not on my list."

That woman was called Zhu Qingyi, and was a disciple of Zhong Ying King. She was also an impressive saint.

"Not saints from the north?" Zhong Ying King asked.

Zhu Qingyi said, “One of them was a mind power saint. Are they great beings sent by Earth God Temple who try to create chaos in Ningfeng Mansion? Are they trying to stop Qingtian Tribe and the other three tribes from encircling Hongchuan Mansion?”

Zhong Ying King said, “Four blood emperors gave an order at the same time. Tens of millions of soldiers were gathered. They’re so going to get Hongchuan Mansion. This is a trend that no one can stop. It’s impossible to stall the armies of Qingtian Tribe by disturbing Ningfeng Mansion.”

Zhong Ying King then asked, “Where did the three human saints go after fleeing Langxin County?”

“Hongchuan Mansion,” Zhu Qingyi said.

Chapter 1292 - Hammer of the Thunder God

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“They killed someone in the territory of the Qingtian Tribe,” King Zhongying said. “How can we let them leave so easily? Go personally and stop them. You must not let them loose back in the wild.”

“According to our intelligence, their cultivations aren’t very strong. Why should I go personally? They can be killed easily by any Death Knight.” Zhu Qingyi had a demonic red flower print on her forehead. It shone faintly, making her seem even more demonic.

“Killing them is only one of the missions,” King Zhongying said. “This trip, your true motive is to visit Red River Mansion and invite a Pill Saint to the Qingtian Tribe.”

“A Pill Saint.” Zhu Qingyi’s expression grew more solemn. She had to take this seriously.

Pill Saints were able to create divine pills. They had the ability to create dead people and make skeletons come back to life. Getting a Pill Saint would improve the Qingtian Tribe’s overall abilities.

There were only two Pill Saints in the northern region. Each one was able to become an esteemed guest of the Blood Emperor. How could one not take someone like this seriously?

King Zhongying flicked his finger. A white letter flew out from his fingers. “This letter notes information about that Pill Saint. You must hurry over. I heard that the other tribes have

sent strong figures to invite this man too. Do not let them get him first.”

The ten tribes worked together but were also competitors.

Zhu Qingyi grabbed the letter. She smiled, her phoenix-like eyes curling up. Her beautiful eyes contained murderous intent. “Since I’m going to the Red River Mansion, I’ll kill those three human Saints along the way.”

Whoosh!

She transformed into a puff of black smoke and vanished from the pavilion.

It was very far from Serene Wind Mansion to Red River Mansion. They were two million miles apart. A regular person wouldn’t be able to cross this distance in their entire lives.

There was a spatial wormhole connecting the two mansions. One could arrive instantly. However, the Immortal Vampires guarded the entrance of the wormhole. Zhang Ruochen’s trio couldn’t use it, so they could only fly to Red River Mansion.

Along the way, Huang Yanchen killed an Immortal Vampire general and stole his chariot. It was pulled by two upper Grade Six beasts. It could drive over land or fly in the air. It was also as fast as a lower Saint and could cross a few hundred thousand miles per day.

Zhang Ruochen sat in the chariot and meditated with his eyes closed, going through the memories in his mind.

Eight hundred years ago, he’d read the Sacred Central Empire’s Spiritual Power Scripture. He’d seen many advanced thunder spells. He prepared to choose one or two to cultivate and improve himself.

He couldn’t demonstrate a Spiritual Power Saint’s true ability with basic spells. For example, he couldn’t kill the four-winged Blood Saint even after casting a dozen basic spells.

There were ten levels for spells.

Zhang Ruochen had only cultivated a few low-level spells now. The most powerful one was the Thunder Fire Vortex, but

it was only at level three. It couldn't be compared to a level ten spell at all.

There were more powerful techniques above the tenth level. They were known as saintly spells.

Only a Spiritual Power Saint was strong enough to successfully cultivate saintly spells. Each saintly spell contained shocking might. It could flatten a mountain, burn a sea, or destroy a huge city.

Saintly spells also had ten levels. Even the first level was difficult to cultivate. One must spend a long time in comprehending it.

“First level saintly spell, Hammer of Thunder God,” Zhang Ruochen uttered. A dense passage of words appeared instantly in his mind.

Technically, a spell would take up an entire book of records. One could only successfully cultivate it by comprehending the book.

A saintly spell would need a room of books to explain and describe. One could only successfully cultivate it by comprehending the entire room of books.

The content and description of the Hammer of Thunder God were already in Zhang Ruochen's mind. However, comprehending it was another matter. He only meditated for a short while and he felt dizzy. His thoughts grew fuzzy.

However, he didn't give up. He used great Spiritual Power and studied each book in his mind. He overcame obstacle after obstacle.

After all, with Zhang Ruochen's current Spiritual Power, he could memorize and understand an entire book in a breath's time. However, it took two full days to fully organize all the content about the spell and he'd only understood around half of it.

“Continue.”

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to improve himself. He had to cultivate a saintly spell quickly. Only then would he have a

bigger chance when facing a Xuanhuang Realm Saint.

Xuanhuang Realm Saints were already very powerful amongst all Saints.

After that, Zhang Ruochen spent another day and night reading the content again. He understood around 70 to 80% of the facts.

After cultivating for three days without rest, Zhang Ruochen's current body couldn't take it anymore. He was forced to stop.

When he'd recovered a bit, he went outside the chariot and tried casting the saintly spell.

He formed a print with his hands. Spiritual Qi in the sky gathered toward him, transforming into bolts of purple lightning and weaving together.

The entire sky darkened. Black clouds rolled, forming an enormous Qi. All the beings within 100 miles looked up at the terrifying phenomenon in the sky. They felt the shocking pressure and shook in fear.

However, the lightning scattered before the Hammer of Thunder God could form. It vanished and the sky cleared up.

The spell had failed.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give up. He just smiled and shook his head, casting it a second time.

The second time failed again.

The third time failed.

...

After failing more than 20 times in a row, Zhang Ruochen felt a bit tired, so he stopped. While recovering, he thought carefully about why he'd failed.

Huang Yanchen kept quiet the entire time. She didn't say anything and just watched Zhang Ruochen.

Qing Mo sent a message to her. "Princess, Lord Zhang seems to have run into trouble. It's impossible for him to successfully

cultivate a saintly spell without the guidance of a Spiritual Power senior.”

Spiritual Power cultivators also had teachers. A teacher not only taught them how to cultivate Spiritual Power, but they also taught how to cultivate spells and saintly spells.

Some techniques and details in cultivation weren't recorded in a book. One would take many wrong turns while comprehending alone. Even if one spent a few months or even years, one still might not succeed with a saintly spell.

“Zhang Ruochen isn't an average man,” Huang Yanchen said. “He's rarely ever had a teacher since he started cultivating. He learned it all by himself. In the end, it's just that no one can teach him. It's evident that his comprehension is unparalleled by regular people. A saintly spell won't be too hard for him.”

Qing Mo felt that the princess had blind faith in Zhang Ruochen. Did she think that he was all-powerful just because she loved him?

“I see. I can only cast the saintly spell by combining the Spiritual Power Saint Look with Spiritual Qi.”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out his Saint Look. It was human-shaped and formed by lightning. It shone with dazzling light, reflecting purple light onto the dark night sky.

Spiritual Qi flowed toward the Spiritual Saint Look, forming a lightning hammer.

Qing Mo stared dumbfounded at the huge lightning figure behind Zhang Ruochen. It looked like a thunder god holding a hammer of lightning. The aura it emitted was very aggressive.

Qing Mo stuck her tongue out. She had to be impressed. “So powerful,” she muttered to herself. “He only spent three days to learn a saintly spell by himself.”

Just then, Zhang Ruochen seemed to sense something. He glanced behind him and sent the Hammer of Thunder God out, hitting a mountain 60 miles away.

A Death Knight wearing the Ten Saints Blood Armor stood on the peak of the mountain. Seeing the falling hammer of

lightning, he hurriedly lifted a shield with a skull. A huge red skull flew out of the shield and crashed against the Hammer of Thunder God.

Kaboom.

A 2000-meter-tall mountain collapsed, turning into flat land. Even some rocks melted into lava. Electricity flowed across the lava.

The Death Knight didn't fall. He remained standing while holding the shield.

Crack!

The shield in his hands shattered into pieces of metal. The Death Knight spat out blood. A bit injured, he quickly retreated. He met with another Death Knight and they stood shoulder-to-shoulder.

“Did the Immortal Pavilion send Death Knights after us?”

Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo quickly circulated their Holy Qi and entered battle state.

A woman with a black veil walked out from behind the two Death Knights. Her body was curvy and slender, but her eyes carried demonic force. “I underestimated you before coming,” she said gently. “Judging by the combat power you just displayed, your Spiritual Power must have reached level 52, right?”

“Are you a human or an Immortal Vampire?” Zhang Ruochen asked. He asked this because the woman didn't have any blood wings.

She smiled. “Half of my blood is Immortal Vampire and half is human. I forgot to tell you that my name is Zhu Qingyi. I am the direct disciple of King Zhongying.”

“King Zhongying's disciple.” Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed coldly.

Enemies always met.

“Your Spiritual Power is not bad,” Zhu Qingyi said. “You're a talent. Tell me your name and background and I might let you

live.”

Chapter 1293 - Bei Yutian

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Immortal vampires wouldn't kill all the human beings. They would try to tame some human saints as well.

If a human saint surrendered to the immortal vampires, yet the human beings didn't know, then that human saint was of great value to the immortal vampires.

Zhu Qingyi wanted to change Zhang Ruochen's allegiance.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't tell Zhu Qingyi's cultivation. He only knew that Zhu Qingyi was extremely powerful, perhaps stronger than the Immortal Goddess, Ying Huo.

"Make a full-strength strike and retreat to the north."

Zhang Ruochen transmitted his voice to Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo. He let out his mind power and condensed 'Thunder God Hammer.' They tried to attack the three great beings led by Zhu Qingyi.

Meanwhile, Huang Yanchen wielded her divine sword, forming thousands of traces of sword Qi, which made a sword river, making a cracking sound. There were sword traces everywhere on the ground.

"I've given you a chance, yet you don't cherish it."

Seeing the attacks from Huang Yanchen and Zhang Ruochen, Zhu Qingyi shook her head mildly and looked upset. She pointed forward, and a layer of blood mist was condensed in front of her finger.

Peng Peng.

Thunder God Hammer clashed with the saint sword, however, they couldn't pierce through the water curtain at all.

Just as Zhu Qingyi was about to make a strike back to kill Zhang Ruochen and the other two, a trace of silver light flew toward the water curtain and tore it apart.

Zhu Qingyi was startled. She opened her hands, and she clapped forward, making two crimson fiery clouds.

The silver light clashed with the fiery clouds, and it became slower. Zhu Qingyi finally saw that it was a kitchen knife among the silver light.

Hong Long.

Zhu Qing stepped back thousands of feet back before she dissolved the power on the silver kitchen knife and balanced herself again. She looked forward, and she saw the three human saints run away.

“There's someone so powerful among the three of them. Chase them!”

Zhu Qingyi looked more serious, and she dissolved her beautiful body into dozens of traces of black mist.

“How impressive.”

Zhang Ruochen was still surprised.

The kitchen knife held by Qing Mo was definitely not an ordinary saint weapon. It might be a godly remains ancient weapon, and every time Qing Mo wielded that knife, there would be bloodshed. However, Zhu Qingyi could ward off that silver kitchen knife.

Zhang Ruochen suspected that even the power of origin used by the silver knife couldn't touch her.

All three of them felt that death was coming for them. Zhu Qingyi was too powerful to defeat.

Huang Yanchen took a look behind her, and she saw Zhu Qingyi approaching them quickly. “How fast she is. She's catching up with us. We have to use our fleeing secret techniques.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to stop Huang Yanchen. He said, “Using the fleeing secret technique can make us several times faster, but there’s going to be huge side effect. We’ll be weak for a long time, and if you sustain the technique for too long, you might fall behind.”

“We have to use a technique like that to survive.” Huang Yanchen looked anxious. “Let me go. If Zhu Qingyi catches up with us, we’ll all be killed.”

“Let me do it,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Huang Yanchen looked confused. Zhang Ruochen’s meridians were all crushed already. How was he supposed to perform the fleeing secret technique?

Zhang Ruochen looked firm. And then, he took out the Buddha Emperor sarira and held it in his hand.

The sarira was only as large as a peanut, and it was golden. The gleaming light made it difficult for Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo to keep their eyes open.

Pa!

Zhang Ruochen moved all his mind power to his right hand. He pinched his fingers, and the fourth layer of the seal was broken.

Zhang Ruochen swallowed the sarira. After a short while, his body started to glow with golden light, and there was thousand Buddha enchantment coming out of his body, and there was Buddha enchantment on his skin. Countless Buddha shadows rushed out of his body.

Zhang Ruochen’s mind power had just reached level fifty-two, and it was surging now. It seemed that it was going to reach level fifty-three.

The sarira contained the power of the Buddha Emperor and Golden Dragon, who were both supreme saints. They were invaluable.

The Buddha Emperor and Golden Dragon practiced both martial way and mind power, so the sarira contained endless mind power.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to swallow the sarira to make his power surge. Some other monks swallowed saint sources to become saints, but then, their power would be limited after reaching a certain level. Their cultivation would stop, which meant they had killed their own potential.

Zhang Ruochen only planned to absorb the power from the sarira slowly. He never planned to swallow the sarira.

Sarira was much more valuable than saint sources, so even if it had lots of side effects, they would only show after becoming a supreme saint.

To most of the monks, their biggest dream was to become a supreme saint, so they wouldn't care about the potential side effects at all.

Hua!

The enormous amount of power from the sarira was flowing in Zhang Ruochen's body, making his speed surge. He grabbed Huang Yanchen with one hand and Qing Mo with the other. They disappeared in the clouds like a trace of golden light.

"How powerful the Buddha force is. Are they really great beings sent by the Earth God Temple? Or beings sent by the Thousand Buddha Way in the west."

Zhu Qingyi went forward for hundreds of miles, yet she couldn't catch up with Zhang Ruochen and the other two. She stopped.

There was hostility in her eyes. She couldn't even stop three human saints, which meant many saints would laugh at her.

After a short while, the two knights caught up with her, and they were standing behind Zhu Qingyi.

The death knight on the left said, "How powerful the three human saints are... Even you can't stop them."

Zhu Qingyi said, "That human mind power saint swallowed a sarira, so his mind power surged in an instant, and that's how he was several times faster than usual. His mind power won't be at that level, and his speed will return to its original level, and that's when he's going to die."

Zhu Qingyi and the two death knights searched for the remaining smell in the air. They kept rushing forward and tried to kill Zhang Ruochen and the other two. They thought that they were a great threat to the immortal vampires.

Hua.

The blade light was like a moon connecting the sky and land. It flew out of a mountain and slashed toward Zhu Qingyi.

The sky and land were shaking when the blade light was wielded, as if the rules of sky and land were cut in half.

Zhu Qingyi was dazed, and she grabbed toward the space and the two death knights showed up in her hands as if they were two shields to protect her.

Hong Long.

The two death knights and Zhu Qingyi all bounced back and hit a mountain before falling on the ground.

The two death knights disintegrated in their Ten Saints Blood Armor, and their saint bones turned into powder.

Zhu Qingyi was also miserable. She was bleeding everywhere, and her arms were crushed. She didn't expect to meet someone that powerful.

Who had wielded the blade just now?

There were less than ten people in the north who had such exquisite blade techniques.

“Is it him?”

Zhu Qingyi recalled a name that was at the front of the ‘Must-kill List’ of the immortal vampire race.

She saw a grey being walk out carrying a stone blade.

That blade was rugged, so nobody could expect that a blade like that could kill two death knights and severely injured Zhu Qingyi.

Zhu Qingyi was certain who he was after seeing that stone blade. She took a deep breath and said a name: “Pei Yutian.”

“Impressive. You survived my blade, which means you’re a force among the immortal vampires. If I can cut off your head, I can exchange that for some top-tier training resources,” the grey being said.

Zhu Qingyi knew that man was powerful, so there was no way she could escape, yet she still kept calm and said, “If you surrender yourself to Qingtian Tribe, I assure you that you’ll get endless refining resources given your power. If you waste time collecting resources like that, you’ll only waste lots of time, then you won’t be able to catch up with the other four on the ‘Five-hero List.’”

That grey being was one of the five great beings on the ‘Five-hero List,’ Pei Yutian, and he was the only one on that list who didn’t have any solid background. He became a top-tier human being with his efforts and adventures.

“Are you trying to thwart me and gain my allegiance?” Pei Yutian said coldly.

“That’s right. A great being like you shouldn’t be left buried. If you can surrender to the immortal vampires, you’ll definitely surpass the other four and become the strongest on the ‘Five-hero List,’” Zhu Qingyi said.

Pei Yutian curled his lips, and the stone blade in his hand gave out coldness. And then, a layer of ice spread toward Zhu Qingyi from under his feet.

Just when Zhu Qingyi was about to be swallowed by the coldness, a tall person rushed out and walked to Zhu Qingyi’s side. The thick blood mist gushed out of his body and warded off the mist that came toward him.

Zhu Qingyi looked at the being standing in front of her and was relieved. She said, “Big brother, you’re finally here!”

Chapter 1294 - Situ Fengcheng

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The man beside Zhu Qingyi was Situ Fengcheng. He was the senior disciple of King Zhongying and the sub-general of the Qingtian Tribe army that charged into Red River Mansion. He controlled millions of soldiers and was a true sovereign.

Situ Chengfeng was close to two meters tall. He had broad shoulders and a muscular body. His features were defined as if carved with an axe. He radiated masculinity.

Voice deep and booming, he said, “Qingyi, Master always says you’re smart. I didn’t think you’d make such a basic mistake either.”

“What mistake?” Zhu Qingyi stood up again. Holy light poured out of her body and all the blood on her disappeared. No longer seeming so pathetic, she recovered the elegance a top figure should have.

“Pei Yutian is on the Must-Kill List,” Situ Fengcheng said.

“That means that there’s no way he’ll join the Immortal Vampires. What use is there to try convincing him?”

“Senior Brother, you are right.” A sly smile appeared on Zhu Qingyi’s face. “But it’s not entirely useless. At least, I could drag things out and wait for you to come save me.”

The entire time, Pei Yutian stood quietly on the side. His aura gradually sharpened. Some ancient lines appeared on his stone sword. These patterns were shockingly similar to the geographical pattern of the northern region.

Situ Fengcheng put his hands behind his back. His armor shone with metallic light under the moon. “Wutian of the east, Wufa of the west, Xinshu of the south, Yutian of the north, Wan Zhaoyi of the nine counties of the central region. I heard long ago that the Five Heroes are the strongest humans in the recent centuries. Now that I’ve seen you today, you didn’t disappoint. Your attainments in the broadsword are enough to become a Broadsword Saint of the north.”

“Situ Fengcheng,” Pei Yutian said, “I’ve heard your name more than once. I’ve already killed 42 Blood Saints. I hope you’ll become the 43rd.”

Situ Fengcheng smiled. “You’re not a bad prey. Unfortunately, I have other things today. I won’t fight you.”

“That’s not up to you. If you want to leave, you need my permission.”

“If I want to leave, you can’t stop me.”

Situ Fengcheng chuckled. He pointed forward and an earsplitting boom sounded in that direction. A figure wrapped in 64 layers of blood light shattered a mountain and walked out of it.

It was a middle-aged man covered in bloody patterns. He grasped a saintly sword and had six more on his back. Sword Qi shot out of him, going directly toward Pei Yutian.

Boom.

The Broadsword and Sword Qi from that strike tore apart the land. Even the clouds in the sky were torn. It became a place of death. Any being that ventured in would die.

Situ Fengcheng and Zhu Qingyi had already retreated to 500 miles away. Situ Fengcheng’s eyes narrowed. Staring at the windy and dusty area, he said, “As expected of Pei Yutian. He truly is an extremely powerful figure. He’s only cultivated for a few centuries, but he’s already so strong. He must be killed as soon as possible.”

Zhu Qingyi also inhaled sharply. Even if she used all the techniques she knew, she probably still couldn’t take three of Pei Yutian’s attacks.

“Senior Brother, where did you find that Sword Way figure? He can even counter Pei Yutian.”

“That’s a human Sword Saint,” Situ Fengcheng said.

“Sword Saint?”

Zhu Qingyi couldn’t stay calm. She was shocked. After all, there were only two human Sword Saints in the entire northern region. They were both old creatures who’d lived for more than 500 years. Each one was like a star that could shock the entire world with one strike.

“This man is Wang Beilie, once the leader of the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians. After the Blood Emperor captured him, he was turned into a blood slave. Now, he works for the Qingtian Tribe. I thought that he was strong enough to kill Pei Yutian, but I couldn’t have imagined that Pei Yutian would be this strong.”

“After becoming a blood slave,” Zhu Qingyi said, “Wang Beilie’s mind would be reduced. He won’t be able to perform with his original abilities. Otherwise, Pei Yutian wouldn’t be able to stop him.”

Situ Fengcheng stopped looking at the battlefield. Gazing at Zhu Qingying’s beautiful features, he said, “Master must have sent you to Red River Mansion for a secret mission, right?”

“I indeed have an important mission,” Zhu Qingyi answered. “Pick some powerful Saints from your army. I need to hurry over.”

...

Zhang Ruochen brought Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo, escaping to tens of thousands of miles away with extreme speed.

Gradually, the sharira’s power calmed and Zhang Ruochen’s speed recovered to normal. The three didn’t stop. They continued to flee like crazy while erasing traces of their auras so the Immortal Vampires couldn’t find them.

Red River Mansion had indeed gone up in flames. Everywhere they went there was scorched dirt and it was hard to see a

living being.

Some towns had sank into the ground from a strike, becoming a sky ditch. Other cities were destroyed and filled with dried corpses. Mountains were dyed red with blood. Rivers were filled with floating corpses that emanated disgusting smells.

It was too bloody. Rather than a human world, it was like a world of death.

Continuing forward, Zhang Ruochen's group ran into some small Immortal Vampire armies. They killed through and finally reached a human city that hadn't been conquered yet.

This city pass was very majestic. The city walls were hundreds of feet tall. They were imposing. From far away, it looked like a black mountain on the horizon.

"Zhilin Pass is the last major pass within Red River Mansion," Huang Yanchen said. "It's also the place where the imperial court and Immortal Vampires are fighting the most intensely. Once this pass is broken through, the entire Red River Mansion will fall. Shall we go in and look for information?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "It's best not to alert the strong figures of the imperial court, so we don't get attacked on both sides. Let's go through the place with the weakest defenses and go straight to Black Wind County."

Zhilin Pass wasn't far from Black Wind County. They were almost at the destination.

The imperial court's defense wasn't without holes. Zhang Ruochen's group was able to pass through easily and continue toward Black Wind County.

The next few days, Zhang Ruochen kept absorbing the Spiritual Power from the sharira. His Spiritual Power improved quickly. He had already reached the peak of level 52.

"With this speed, I should reach level 53 in a few days."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't care about anything else now. He put his all into raising his combat abilities. This way, he wouldn't be helpless the next time he met Zhu Qingyi.

He could only think of a way to resolve the disadvantages of using the sharira in the future.

Can I use spatial power with only Spiritual Power?

Zhang Ruochen's biggest trump card was the power of time and space. If he still had these two abilities, he wouldn't have to escape so pathetically when he met Zhu Qingyi.

However, these two needed to be supported by Holy Qi to be activated. Zhang Ruochen only had blood vessels constructed from Spiritual Power. He didn't have meridians and Saintly Meridians. He couldn't use Holy Qi at all.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't willing. Spiritual Power can manipulate Spiritual Qi. I might be able to use spatial power with the help of Spiritual Qi.

“Spatial crack.”

Zhang Ruochen used Spiritual Power as the foundation and Spiritual Qi as the medium. He raised his arm and cut down. The space didn't rip apart, but just trembled.

However, the slight tremble made Zhang Ruochen overjoyed. “There's something.”

Next, Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and started studying the ways of space seriously.

Before becoming a Saint, Zhang Ruochen had always been focused on cultivating palm and sword techniques. Now, he was finally able to calm down and study space.

Space has no boundaries but exists for eternity.

By “no boundaries,” it means that any point in space can be a starting point.

By “exists for eternity,” it means that space will always appear in the current time.

...

The knowledge contained in space was very abstruse and vast. Zhang Ruochen only dared to research it closely after becoming a Saint. There wouldn't have been any advantages in going too deeply before that.

As for the power of time, Zhang Ruochen still didn't dare to touch it. If he sank into an illusion of time, he might break down entirely.

His eyes focused on one page. It described a technique of space—Spatial Twist. He'd cultivated this before too, but his knowledge of the technique remained in the shallowest level. If he met a true top figure, it would lose effectiveness. Any random attack from the enemy would pass through the distorted space.

After studying this technique closely, Zhang Ruochen realized that Spatial Twist was actually very powerful. It was filled with endless variations. Not only could it be used to resolve an enemy attack, it could also change an attack's direction and send it back to the enemy.

Other than that, Spatial Twist could also be used to change a mountain's shape, the direction of a river, break through formations, and even create spatial mazes. No material within space could escape from Spatial Twist.

“Distort the space on either side and connect them, stabilizing them together. That's true Spatial Twist. What I did before was only distorting the two sides. I didn't connect them, so it wasn't as stable. It had limited power too.”

After understanding the reasoning, Zhang Ruochen began cultivating Spatial Twist again.

He raised both hands at once and released Spiritual Power. He used Spiritual Qi to change the rules of space, distorting the space on the left and right.

“Connect,” he uttered.

He put his hands together in the middle. The distorted space on either side connected immediately.

Whoosh!

The path before the carriage had been dozens of meters wide. After the space distorted, the path disappeared, closing in immediately. The sky-reaching trees on either side crashed suddenly. Some trunks and branches actually overlapped. Many leaves fluttered down.

Even the spatial structure was changed forever.

“The path disappeared!” Qing Mo, who’d been steering the chariot, was frightened. She hurriedly controlled the savage beast pulling the chariot to make it stop.

Huang Yanchen wasn’t surprised at all. Instead, her red lips curled up into a knowing and beautiful smile. “As expected,” she murmured to herself. “One can only become stronger by becoming desperate. His potential is boundless.”

Chapter 1295 - Xianji Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the chariot. He grabbed toward the space in front of him, and the space structure became twisted. The path that had been closed was opened again.

Qing Mo was shocked. No matter how powerful other monks were, they couldn't have a skill like that. She said, "Is this the power of space, Mr Zhang?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "The space power is mysterious and endless. I need to spend a lot of time studying even one move of space twist."

Now, Zhang Ruochen could only manipulate space twist at a very rudimentary level. However, it was a huge step on the path of space.

The three of them kept walking forward, and they entered the territory of Black Wind County and Xianji Mountain, which was surrounded by mist.

According to the Crazy Alcoholic, that pill saint master lived in Xianji Mountain.

Xianji Mountain was one of the famous mountains in the north. It used to be a top-tier practice field during the ancient times. There were tens of millions of monks refining here. It had abundant spirit Qi and an immense amount of resources. It was definitely a holy land.

There were mountains everywhere, and hundreds of mountains hid behind the clouds and mist. Sometimes, the roaring of

savage beasts came from the mist, which was mysterious and ethereal.

“Which power is occupying Xianji Mountain these days?” Zhang Ruochen asked Huang Yanchen.

She’d gone to check before, so she knew something about Xianji Mountain.

Huang Yanchen thought for a while and said, “During the ancient times, this place was a practice field for Xianji Sect, the greatest sect in the north. Xianji Sect was destroyed during the great chaos at the end of the ancient times. After the great chaos, some powers tried to get to Xianji Mountain and to occupy the refining holy land, yet they all failed and suffered great losses.

“Everyone knew that Xianji Mountain had lots of treasures from the ancient times, even some holy medicine and some important inheritances. As for now, no power is able to occupy this place.”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised that nobody occupied such a refining holy land. What kind of great beings hid in the mountain that crushed everyone who tried to conquer this place?

“What kind of dangers are there in Xianji Mountain?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Huang Yanchen looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “There’s a rumor that Xianji Sect was annihilated by a power outside the domain at the end of the ancient times.

“Xianji Sect used some forbidden skill to trap all the great beings from that outer-domain power in Xianji Mountain. Those powers who tried to occupy Xianji Mountain were all attacked by mysterious skills. They might come from the outer-domain great beings.”

That rumor shocked Zhang Ruochen. He said, “An outer-domain power is able to destroy a top-tier sect in Kunlun’s Field? Even an upper-class void world wouldn’t be able to do that.”

Blue Dragon Void World was an upper-class void world, and it was prosperous. However, it still couldn't rival a top-tier sect in Kunlun's Field.

Huang Yanchen stayed silent for a short while and said, "Not just some upper-class void world. It's said that it was a giant world that could rival Kunlun's Field, and it might have been larger than Kunlun's Field. The great chaos during the ancient times might have had something to do with that world."

Zhang Ruochen was still calm. He said, "It's impossible that something like that wasn't recorded. Even if there is a giant world as large as Kunlun's Field, they might not be able to get to Kunlun's Field en masse."

Huang Yanchen smiled and said, "They're just rumors. Nobody treats them seriously. There's even a rumor that a demonic god is still living in Xianji Mountain. How can you believe that?"

There were many rumors about Xianji Mountain, and some of the rumors might incite some saints.

It didn't matter whether those rumors were true or not. One thing that was for sure was that this was a very dangerous place, not just some holy land.

"Why is that pill saint master secluding himself here? Weird," Qing Mo said.

Zhang Ruochen was confused as well, but he still had trust in the Crazy Alcoholic. He wouldn't tell him about a forbidden place.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt a strong holy Qi ripple. He said, "Some great beings are rushing to Xianji Mountain."

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Qing Mo moved their bodies and rushed into Xianji Mountain.

And then, the twelve white Buddha pearls around Zhang Ruochen's wrist were glowing with white light, covering the three of them.

The twelve Buddha pearls were made by the Buddha Emperor, and they could hide their forces.

After a moment, a crimson cloud flew toward Xianji Mountain.

Twelve white-armored soldiers walked out. They were all beautiful girls. They didn't just have cute faces. Instead, the forces coming out of their bodies were mighty. None of them were weak.

“How powerful. Which organization are they from?”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked as they weren't ordinary monks. Instead, they were twelve female saints. Their forces felt similar, and they were overlapping each other. Any two, three, or four of them could form a formation. The forces of those twelve saints seemed to be overlapping.

A power that had twelve saints was considered a giant power in Kunlun's Field.

As for the twelve female saints, they were not just exquisite, but practiced the same techniques as well. They all stood in a streamlined way. Apparently, they had been trained strictly since they were kids, and they knew how to cooperate with each other.

It would be difficult even for the seven ancient sects to cultivate twelve saints like that.

A beautiful woman wearing fiery armor walked out of the fiery cloud. She walked to the front of the twelve female saints. The forces coming from that girl could rival those of Zhu Qingyi.

She had a beautiful face and a lithe body. Her breasts were perky, and her crimson hair was waving like fire. She carried a saint sword on her back. She looked like a female martial god.

“It's her,” Huang Yanchen mumbled.

“Who?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Cang Lan Martial Saint, one of the nine heavenly maidens of the Empress. She's the strongest among them, and I've seen her in Ziwei Palace. Cang Lan Martial Saint is connected to you on some level,” Huang Yanchen said.

“How?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Huang Yanchen said, “She’s one of the six sword holders of the Pluto Sword Tomb, Fentian Sword. However, the Fentian Sword has been lost, stolen by Situ Fengcheng, a great talent from Qingtian Tribe.”

Zhang Ruochen had heard of the name of Canglan Martial Saint before, and he had gotten into contact with Saint Lady and Siming Goddess. He could guess how powerful she was.

However, a great talent from Qingtian Tribe was able to rob her of Fentian Sword, which was incredible.

Huang Yanchen could tell that Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised. She said, “Situ Fengcheng was the oldest disciple of Zhong Ying King, and he’s also the big brother of Zhu Qingyi. He has greater potential than Qingtian Crown Prince, and many people think he’ll surpass Zhong Ying King and become the next Blood Emperor.”

“What an era of talents.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed, but he wasn’t that surprised. After, Cang Lan Martial Saint, Zhu Qingyi and Situ Fengcheng had all refined much longer than he had.

He was already the most powerful one given his age, and perhaps the aforementioned people would feel great pressure as they might be surpassed if they slacked.

Huang Yanchen then said, “The twelve female saints following Cang Lan Martial Saints should be the twelve white feather saints from the seventy-two palaces. They used to only be maidservants for the Empress, but then, they practiced enough to become saints, and they have a different status.”

Every girl who entered Ziwei Palace to become a maidservant had an incredible background.

Besides, Ziwei Palace was the place where there was the most spiritual Qi in Kunlun’s Field. It was normal that some of the talented ones could become saints.

At this moment, another holy Qi ripple flew from afar.

Dozens of areas of black mist flew among the mountains, then they overlapped. They formed a girl wearing a black gauze

scarf, and it was Zhu Qingyi.

Hong Long Long.

There came a deafening sound from the underground.

Four blood saints flew up and landed behind Zhu Qingyi. They all looked ferocious, and after they landed, the ground turned blood-red as if there was blood.

Zhu Qingyi sneered and said, "I can't believe one of the nine heavenly maidens came here for the saint pills from the ancient pine nut."

Cang Lan Martial Saint said, "I came to Hongchuan Mansion not just for the pills, but for Fentian Sword."

"My big brother has Fentian Sword. However, you're not powerful enough to ever get it back," Zhu Qingyi said.

Cang Lan Martial Saint took a look at the four blood saints behind Zhu Qingyi. "You dare trespass in Hongchuan Mansion with just a couple of blood saints? I admire you. Now that you're here, you're not leaving."

"Do you think this is still Central Empire City, where you rule it all? The rules are about to be changed in Hongchuan Mansion."

Zhu Qingyi took a look and said, "Motian Tribe, Qitian Tribe, Fengtian Tribe... why don't your monks show yourselves? If you can capture a nine heavenly maiden, we'll crush the imperial government."

Chapter 1296 - Clash

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Countless blood-red lines appeared on the ground. They were like thousands upon thousands of bloody creeks. Covering hundreds of miles on the ground, even the sky turned red from the reflection.

All the Blood Saints from the Motian, Qitian, and Fengtian Tribes came out of the bloody creeks. There were close to 20 Blood Saints combined.

Among them, the leaders of the three tribes were all top figures. Their abilities were comparable to Zhu Qingyi.

Faced with such a strong group, Martial Saint Canglan's expression changed. Instead of choosing to clash head-on, she chose to retreat immediately, rushing into Xianji Mountain with the other Saints.

“I've always wanted one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens as a mistress. Martial Saint Canglan is a good choice, haha.”

The leader of the Motian Tribe was Blood Saint Miefeng. He was 30 feet tall and his body was as thick as a millstone. He laughed heartily and grabbed a silver sword. He rushed forward and cut down before Martial Saint Canglan and the Twelve White Feather Saints, stopping them from leaving.

Sword Qi flowed like a river. It was thousands of meters long and swept downward. Every Sword Qi that landed would cut a huge trench on the ground.

Martial Saint Canglan huffed coldly. She twisted her attractive body and the saint sword on her back flew out of its sheath. Like a beam of white light, it crashed against Blood Saint Miefeng's battle sword.

Boom.

White fog trembled violently. Countless beams of Sword Qi surged, producing loud whistles.

In the end, Blood Saint Miefeng couldn't block Martial Saint Canglan's sword technique. Sword Qi fell upon him like rain, crashing against his armor.

"As expected of the Nine Heavenly Maidens. You're indeed powerful."

After Blood Saint Miefeng flew back, there were various dents in his armor. Blood Qi surged within him. If his defenses weren't strong enough, he might have been injured already.

After all, Blood Saint Miefeng was a Heaven Pass Blood General. Among the Immortal Vampires, only the strongest of the Heaven Pass Realm Saints could qualify for that title. They were known as the strongest of all beings below the True Saint Realm.

There were only a few Heaven Pass Blood Generals in each tribe. Each of them was a mighty figure. If they used their hidden cards, they could even fight with a True Saint.

"She defeated Blood Saint Miefeng with one strike. She can't be underestimated."

Zhu Qingyi's eyes turned even colder. She transformed into black smoke and chased into Xianji Mountain. She carried overwhelming murderous Qi. There was no way she could let Martial Saint Canglan and the Twelve White Feather Saints leave.

At the same time, the other three leaders and Blood Saints of the four tribes transformed into streaks of light. With loud booms, they pursued from different directions.

A moment later, deafening battle explosions sounded within Xianji Mountain. The beasts all fled in fear. Some ran out of the mountain; others escaped deep into the mountain.

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Qing Mo walked out of the white fog. They looked toward the source of the noise.

Their eyes were all solemn and grave. There were large amounts of Saints from both the imperial court and Immortal Vampires in Xianji Mountain. It definitely wasn't good news.

"They have the same goal as us. They're here for Gu Songzi too." Huang Yanchen's eyes were filled with worry.

The Pill Saint that the Crazy Alcoholic spoke of was named Gu Songzi.

"How come I heard that Gu Songzi received the formula for the Hua Divine Pill," Qing Mo said. "The Hua Divine Pill is a legendary Divine Pill. It's like a Saintly Source. As long as a Half-Saint ingests the Hua Divine Pill, he'll have a very big chance of becoming a Saint."

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew the value of the Hua Divine Pill. Apparently, a Pill Sect in the middle ages was able to produce this kind of pill and created a golden era. Merely one sect was able to produce thousands of Saints.

Unfortunately, great goods come with great losses. The Hua Divine Pill was honestly too valuable and countless people were jealous. The sect was met with disaster and destroyed by a mysterious force.

After the sect was destroyed, the formula for the Hua Divine Pill disappeared too.

"I don't know where they got the information," Zhang Ruochen said. "However, if the formula reappears, the various forces will definitely act as soon as they get the news. We must find Senior Gu Songzi before them."

"But large amounts of Immortal Vampire Saints have entered Xianji Mountain," Qing Mo said, a bit worried. "If we run into them, we'll be dead."

"The Immortal Vampires want to kill me, but I want to kill them too. It should be time that the Shi Family has finished producing the Blood Repression Runes."

Murderous intent emerged in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Before going to the Yin Yang Sea, Zhang Ruochen had sent ten million drops of divine blood to the Shi Family so they

could help produce Blood Repression Runes. If this batch was fully completed, Zhang Ruochen could kill whoever he wanted when faced with the Immortal Vampires.

He could even repress a strong cultivator like Zhu Qingyi.

“Yanchen,” he said. “Visit the Pluto Sword Tomb and take out that batch of Blood Repression Runes for me.”

Huang Yanchen was clear about the current situation too. Pondering, she said, “I’ll go to the Pluto Sword Tomb alone. Qing Mo will remain to protect you. With your current health, you can’t force anything when you run into danger.”

“Don’t worry. I’m not unreasonable like that.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Huang Yanchen turned to leave.

“Yanchen,” Zhang Ruochen called.

Then he walked over and caressed her snow-white cheek with a hand. He pressed a light kiss onto her lips.

Huang Yanchen blushed and actually grew nervous. She stopped breathing and her long lashes trembled. The two stared at each other, eyes filled with emotion.

A moment later, their lips separated.

“You should be careful too,” Zhang Ruochen reminded. “Battle has erupted everywhere in Kunlun’s Field. Nowhere is safe.”

After Huang Yanchen left, Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo also entered Xianji Mountain.

This wasn’t only one mountain. Instead, Xianji Mountain was a cluster of rolling mountains and forests. It took up a very large expanse. Even Saints would have difficulty going deep into it.

The sounds of battle were scattered in different directions. Clearly, the four Immortal Vampire tribes and Martial Saint Canglan and the Twelve White Feather Saints had separated into different battlefields.

Or, one party was executing a siege.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to get involved in their battle. With his white robes, he looked like a weak scholar and hurried along the road.

Qing Mo followed behind him without any of a Saint's presence. She was no different from a little servant.

Hearing the battles, she seemed anxious. Her eyes kept darting around and her lips quivered. Finally, she couldn't help it anymore. "Lord, Martial Saint Canglan and the Twelve White Feather Saints aren't the Immortal Vampires' match. Shouldn't we help them?"

"I don't have anything to do with them. Why should I take such a large risk to help them?" Zhang Ruochen asked in return without looking back.

Martial Saint Canglan and the Twelve White Feather Saints were Chi Yao's guards, but Zhang Ruochen didn't transfer his hatred of Chi Yao onto them. It was just like how he didn't hate the Saint Lady, one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens, and instead saw her as a close friend.

He didn't want to fight because he was heavily injured. He couldn't even protect himself, so he obviously couldn't help others and get into more trouble.

"Now, the most important task is to find Gu Songzi and repair my meridians."

Qing Mo wanted to persuade Zhang Ruochen. "But a human Saintess will definitely be humiliated at the hands of the Immortal Vampires," she continued. "Especially Martial Saint Canglan, one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens. If she's captured, this will affect the entire human army's morale. If Zhilin Pass is breached, the Immortal Vampires will conquer Red River Mansion. How many more humans will die? How many more will become the food of the Immortal Vampires?"

"Lord, you've always cared for humanity. You're not as cold as you seem. Can you really stand seeing the Immortal Vampires humiliate the humans?"

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking and turned. He stared into Qing Mo's eyes. Qing Mo hurriedly lowered her head, not

daring to meet Zhang Ruochen's gaze.

"Who taught you to say that? Yanchen?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't think that Qing Mo was wise enough to say those words. Not only was she able to analyze everything, she'd also given him the lofty title of caring for humanity.

Qing Mo didn't reply.

Kaboom.

Up ahead, strong Holy Qi swept through the entire mountain. A black sickle flew over Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo's heads. Then came a woman's pained cry.

Drops of saintly blood rained down.

With a thud, a female Saint in white armor fell into the forest not far from Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo. All the trees there toppled, turning into decaying dirt.

That female Saint was badly injured. She clutched her stomach where there was a long bloody gash. What weapon had hurt her?

Evil black Qi flowed out of her injury, shrouding her slender frame. Her pallor was sickly pale and her expression was pained.

Whoosh!

Another Saintess in white flew down, flapping her wings. She held a saintly sword. Hurriedly helping the Saintess up, she said, "Yuansu, I'll help you leave."

"You want to leave?" A cold laugh rang out.

Then a Blood Saint with a menacing face charged out of the white fog. He held a sickle stained with blood and had a pair of blood wings. He blocked the two Saintess' exit path.

Another bald Blood Saint also ran out. Eyes filled with lust, he sneered and said, "I heard that you 72 Saintesses all live in Ziwei Palace. You're the closest officials to the Empress. Usually, you're all high and mighty. Even the county and region lords have to be polite with you. I wonder what those

humans who view you as goddesses will think if I capture one of you and turn you into a sex slave. Ha.”

Three more Blood Saints hurried over.

Five Blood Saints in total surrounded the two Saintesses. They all laughed as if already declaring their fate.

Chapter 1297 - Defeat the Enemies

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Both the female saints were at Xuanhuang Realm, and after they performed their combined power, their strength was only stronger.

However, there were five blood saints, three saints at Xuanhuang Realm and two pinnacle-upper-class saints. They had an absolute advantage in the number. They couldn't change the results with their combined attack technique.

Those two female saints had great cultivation. However, their minds couldn't rival those blood saints who were put in danger all the time. When facing such a dangerous situation, they couldn't keep calm at all. They started to unravel.

The female saint named Yuan Lai was already severely injured. She saw those blood saints staring at her, and she felt despair. She lost her desire to live, and she said, "Sister Li, you can try to break the encirclement. If I can't get out of here alive, I'll blow myself up and kill them with me."

The blood saint holding a sickle sneered, "There're five immortal saints here. Do you really think you can break the encirclement?"

Hua La.

The five blood saints displayed a saint weapon each. They floated in the sky and locked down this area to prevent that female saint from running away.

Also, if Yuan Shu Female Saint was really going to blow up her saint source, the saint weapons could form a defense circle

and suppress the destructive power from the self-explosion.

That bald blood saint kept having an evil smile on his face. He stopped waiting and rushed toward the two female saints.

The blood saint holding the sickle stood on the ground and infused his black sickle with holy Qi.

Every time the black sickle slashed the sky, it would leave a long evil Qi engraving, shaking the space.

Liu Li Female Saint was trying to protect Yuan Shu Female Saint and fought the two immortal vampire saints at the same time. She couldn't handle it anymore. She was almost hit a couple of times.

Qing Mo pouted and looked at Zhang Ruochen. "Mister..."

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile. If he hadn't seen that, he wouldn't have interfered. Now that he saw what happened, he couldn't just let it go.

"Go!"

Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Qing Mo looked pleased. She rushed toward the two female saints like a trace of blue shadow.

The five blood saints saw two human beings standing aside. The three blood saints who didn't make attacks were looking out at Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo.

Just as Qing Mo rushed forward, a short blood saint went forward.

"You should just stay aside and watch the show. It's not good for you to interfere with this."

That short blood saint didn't even consider Qing Mo to be his enemy as he only thought of her as a girl.

Pu.

Before they touched each other, that short blood saint was slapped away by Qing Mo. His skin cracked, and blood was spilled.

However, immortal vampires did have tremendous life forces. That short blood saint didn't die, but he was rolling on the ground in agony.

The other four blood saints were all startled as they didn't expect that girl to possess such power.

Meanwhile, they looked at Zhang Ruochen. They wondered whether that weak man was stronger.

However, they couldn't even see the face of that weak man, which meant he was also incredible.

The bald blood saint and the blood saint holding a sickle both stopped making attacks. They looked at Qing Mo and Zhang Ruochen carefully.

Yuanshu Female Saint and Liu Li Female Saint were both severely injured. They were already in despair and were about to blow up their saint sources to take those five blood saints down with them. However, they had hope again after seeing Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo show up.

They were also staring at Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo curiously. One of them was a sick young man, and the other was a sixteen-year-old girl. They didn't look like great beings in any way.

The blood saint holding a sickle could tell that Zhang Ruochen was at a higher status than Qing Mo. He said to him, "Don't meddle in this unless you want to get killed."

Zhang Ruochen walked forward, smiled and said, "I don't want to, but I just don't like immortal vampires. What do you think I should do?"

An older blood saint laughed and said, "Then put up with it. I suggest you leave Xianji Mountain now, young man. It's not going to end well for you if you make yourself an enemy of the immortal vampires. That Time and Space Descendant of your human race has become obsolete because he was too reckless. Do you think you're stronger than him?"

Even Qing Mo was furious after hearing what he said.

However, Zhang Ruochen was still calm. He reached out his palm and let out purple lightning from each of his fingers, forming a sharp thorn.

That blood saint who was severely injured had recovered, and his skin started to heal.

Just as he climbed up...

Hua!

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, and the lightning thorn flew out and pierced through his saint body.

The power in the lightning thorn was enormous, which melted the body of that blood saint and turned him into dust. There was only a blood-red saint source shining on the ground.

“A mind power saint of lightning.”

All the saints were shocked.

“So what? I’ll kill him also.”

That bald blood saint raised his hands, and two traces of tumbling holy Qi gushed out of his palms and went into a clock-shaped saint weapon. That clock-shaped saint weapon became larger and larger until its diameter reached three hundred feet. Purple fire gushed out, spun and pressed toward Zhang Ruochen.

The clock-shaped saint weapon was a powerful thousand-patterns saint weapon called Cloud-swallowing Clock, which was ranked high on the ‘Thousand-patterns Saint Weapon List.’ The destructive power coming out of the clock was terrifying, which turned the faces of the two female saints paler.

They couldn’t kill their enemies even if they blew up their saint sources if their enemies held a top-tier thousand-patterns saint weapon like that.

The bald blood saint showed his sharp teeth and guffawed.

“Are you regretting it now? Unfortunately, it’s too late!”

“The Cloud-swallowing Clock is indeed an impressive thousand-patterns saint weapon. However, you can’t wield its

real power.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and stared at the bald blood saint like he was an idiot. He said, “Slay him, Qing Mo.”

Qing Mo opened her hands, and then, a blue Wuliang Divine Fire showed up between her hands. Wuliang Divine Fire was like a godly lamp, painting the sky and land blue.

Wuliang Divine Fire turned into a clock shape, flew out and clashed with the Cloud-swallowing Clock.

Hua La!

The fire went through the Cloud-swallowing Clock and fell on the head of the bald blood saint, burning his skin and flesh.

“Ah! Wuliang Divine Fire... It’s Wuliang Divine Fire...”

The bald blood saint was horrified. He yelled in agony and mobilized his holy Qi. He performed a God-connecting technique, giving his blood to the Gods to activate his potential to suppress Wuliang Divine Fire.

That bald blood saint was an experienced gatherer. He knew how to save himself.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t give him any chance to survive. He condensed a long lightning thorn and wielded it again. It pierced through the chest of the bald blood saint, leaving a black hole with cracks.

Peng.

The bald blood saint was eventually killed, and his body fell on the ground, stiff.

Zhang Ruochen said to Qing Mo, “You should be more decisive if you want to kill someone. Don’t give him any chance to fight back. If that blood saint had performed the god-connecting technique and sacrificed his blood, he would have had a power ten times his own. Then he would have become a huge problem for us.”

Qing Mo stuck out her tongue and looked chill, yet she still memorized what Zhang Ruochen said and attacked the other three blood saints.

Suddenly, two blood saints had been killed. The remaining three blood saints all knew that Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo were forces to be reckoned with. They didn't dare stay here anymore. They performed their fastest body techniques and rushed to the clouds.

Zhang Ruochen wielded the lightning blade in another direction.

Qing Mo rushed into the clouds, and after a while, she went back to Zhang Ruochen and said, "They've all run away. One of them was severely injured by you. There's lots of blood on the ground."

Zhang Ruochen was a bit upset. He said, "With your cultivation and my help, you should've killed them all. Yet we've only killed two and injured one."

Qing Mo pouted and said, "I'm just a girl who cooks. I'm not a professional killer. You're demanding too much of me!"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Everyone's good at different things. I'm not going to force you."

Zhang Ruochen took back the two saint sources and the Cloud-swallowing Clock, and then, he left with Qing Mo.

"Please stay, mister."

Liu Li Female Saint suppressed the injuries on her body. She supported Yuan Shu Female Saint and caught up with them. She said, "We're Liu Li and Yuan Shu, two of the twelve white-feather saints from Can Lan Martial Saint. Thank you for helping us."

Zhang Ruochen shot them a glance, nodded and walked forward.

Liu Li Female Saint looked anxious and said, "We were encircled by lots of immortal vampires, so we tried to break the encirclement by dividing ourselves into six groups. I don't know whether our other sisters have survived or not. Martial Saint fought four heaven-pass saints. She might be in great danger as well. Please, help us."

“I’m sorry, I’m really injured, so I can’t help you,” Zhang Ruo Chen said.

Chapter 1298 - A Taoist Temple

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

If three Blood Saints escaped, they could call over even stronger figures at any time. With Zhang Ruochen's current health, he naturally couldn't care about more matters. He had to leave immediately.

He thought for a moment and said, "You shouldn't ask me. You should ask the experts of the Ministry of War at Zhilin Pass. If the imperial court army comes, any kind of enemy can be defeated."

Saintess Liuli shook her head. "Once we enter Xianji Mountain, we can't send messages to the outside world. A mysterious force shrouds the mountain. The communication runes can't fly out."

"Oh? That's possible?"

Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised. Even with his current level of Spiritual Power, he still didn't notice any changes after entering Xianji Mountain.

Thus, he took out a communication rune and sent it in one direction. It only flew out a few miles and then fell onto the ground. It was like an invisible force was stopping it from flying out of Xianji Mountain.

"This mountain is indeed a bit strange!" Zhang Ruochen muttered to himself.

"The Immortal Vampires have a great number of Saints from the four tribes in Xianji Mountain," Saintess Liuli said. "There must be a portion guarding the entrance. Yuansu and I are both

injured. We can't fight through them. Now, we can only beg you to help us. As long as we can escape from Xianji Mountain, we'll be able to send the message and have Zhilin Pass send the army to rescue the Martial Saint and kill the Immortal Vampire Saints."

If the Ministry of War really came, the Immortal Vampires wouldn't be the only one killed. Zhang Ruochen would probably also be attacked.

"I came into Xianji Mountain for something important," Zhang Ruochen said. "I can't backtrack."

Qing Mo understood Zhang Ruochen's awkward situation. It was already difficult for him to help them. He couldn't continue doing so, because it would be hurting himself.

She bit her lip and whispered, "Lord, the three Blood Saints can return at any time. With their injuries, they won't be able to defeat the Blood Saints. How about we bring them with? We won't have to care about this anymore when they heal."

"Sure," Zhang Ruochen said.

Qing Mo was surprised. She didn't think that Zhang Ruochen would agree so easily.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "It's good that you want to help others. If I keep disagreeing, I'll become the bad guy."

Saintess Liuli and Yuansu also understood that they were being troublesome. Thus, they didn't continue speaking. The most important thing now was to heal before making other plans.

Xianji Mountain was boundless. Some places were filled with ancient trees that reached to the sky. Other places had green bamboo forests. There were sharp abysses, waterfalls, and rivers.

There were many spiritual medicines on the mountain. They shone with small halos of light. Of course, there were also many deathly formations from the middle ages. Any misstep could cause you to die without even leaving a corpse behind.

Zhang Ruochen's group were already in the Saint Realm. They naturally didn't care about average spiritual medicines. They wouldn't risk their lives to pick any.

Saintess Liuli and Yuansu were from Ziwei Palace and had great clan backgrounds. They didn't lack any healing medicines. After taking some medicine, their injuries stabilized, no longer worsening.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward while checking the traces on the ground. He also divided his Spiritual Power to check the surroundings. Thus, he didn't move quickly. They could keep up.

Xianji Mountain is filled with danger, Zhang Ruochen analyzed in his mind. Even if Gu Songzi lives in the mountain, he must be in the outer regions. But Xianji Mountain's outside is extremely vast. Looking for someone is like searching for the pin in the haystack.

He sighed. Looking up, he saw that the clouds had separated. A looming mountain appeared.

The mountain was shaped like a stone elephant. It was probably more than 10,000 meters tall and was magnificent. There was a large cluster of ancient buildings at the peak. They shone with saintly light.

"This must be an important area of Xianji Mountain," Qing Mo said. "I can sense the auras of saintly medicines coming from there."

Zhang Ruochen found traces left by living beings at the foot of the mountain. However, he couldn't be sure if they were made by humans.

"Let's climb to the top of the mountain. Even if we don't find Gu Songzi, we might find other things."

The four started climbing the mountain. It was extremely quiet. They didn't run into any danger along the way. However, there was a very strong "might" on the mountain. The closer they got to the peak, the stronger the "might." It repressed a cultivator's five senses, strength, Spiritual Power... Every aspect of their body was weakened.

When they neared the mountaintop, a Taoist temple appeared before them.

It had been damaged long ago. The walls had collapsed and it was filled with weeds. Even the roof had fallen to the ground and rusted.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Saintesses. Their snow-white faces were covered in sweat and they breathed heavily. They were injured and had to endure the “might” from the mountain. Clearly, they were at their limits.

“No one knows if the mountain will still be so peaceful at night. Tonight, let us stop and rest in this temple.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen started walking and took a step over the temple’s doorway.

With just that step, strange noises sounded in his ears. There were sharp cries, the roars of savage beasts, women’s sobs, and the clashing of weapons and battles. It was like stepping into another world.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. He quickly took his foot back. The noises instantly vanished.

What was going on?

He had to re-observe this ratty old temple. A moment later, he stepped in again. The noises returned to his ears immediately.

This time, he used his Heavenly Eye to observe the temple. He saw various black shadows zooming through the temple. Deep inside, there was a cloud of black Qi. Even the Heavenly Eye couldn’t see clearly.

Those strange noises came from deep within the temple.

Zhang Ruochen had even gone to the netherworld before. He’d seen everything, so he was fearless. Continuing to be on-guard, he carefully entered the temple.

Immediately after, Qing Mo, Saintess Liuli, and Saintess Yuansu followed him in. However, they seemed very calm as if they couldn’t see or hear anything.

“Qing Mo,” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Do you hear anything strange?”

“No! Lord, what’s wrong? Don’t scare me?”

Qing Mo paled in fright. She moved closer to Zhang Ruochen, almost pressing her small frame against his body.

The Saintesses were also shocked. They spent all their time in the palace and hadn’t even seen ghost soldiers before. They naturally feared getting involved with unclean things.

“No, I’m just joking.”

Zhang Ruochen saw that the temple was quite peaceful. The black shadows seemed to fear humans and all retreated deep within the temple. Thus, he didn’t tell the women what he’d seen and heard.

Perhaps only Spiritual Power Saints could see and hear it. Their cultivations were high, but their Spiritual Powers were far from Zhang Ruochen’s level.

“You all stay here,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’ll go set things up outside. Remember, do not venture deep within the temple.”

He walked to the outside of the temple and took out the Time and Space Secret Guide. He prepared to use Spatial Twist and create a Spatial Maze.

If the Immortal Vampires found this place, he had to have ways to counter them.

Qing Mo and the two Saintesses were unsettled. Their eyes kept darting toward the deep end of the temple. They felt that Zhang Ruochen was hiding something. Were there really unknown creatures in the temple?

Zhang Ruochen hadn’t set up a Spatial Maze before. He had to learn as he went.

A Spatial Maze was a chaotic space using multiple Spatial Twists. Each Spatial Twist had to follow a certain pattern. They had to connect with and complement each other. That way, enemies wouldn’t be able to escape after venturing into it.

It was his first time making a Spatial Maze and it was quite tiring. Zhang Ruochen made many mistakes. He didn't manage to finish until the sun had set.

After completing, Zhang Ruochen felt quite accomplished. Smiling, he said, "With this Spatial Maze, even a Heaven Pass Blood General will have to suffer some losses."

He returned to the temple and saw that the Saintesses had taken off their armor. They wore silk palace robes embroidered with phoenix feathers. They had white undershirts and large patches of snowy-white skin exposed. One could see a tempting crevice.

They sat cross-legged on the ground, performing techniques. Thirty-six layers of Holy Qi enveloped their slender frames. They looked extremely holy and pure, like two beautiful jade statues of goddesses.

The female officials of Ziwei Palace were all known as fairies by human cultivators. Ziwei Palace represented the highest center of authority in Kunlun's Field. It was also the interconnection point of Spiritual Qi, the Qi fate of the human race, and rules of the world. It was like a world beyond the nine skies. Average people couldn't get close at all.

Saintess Liuli and Yuansu were indeed beautiful. They were elegant and holy. To cultivators below the Saint Realm, they were practically angels.

Qing Mo could see Zhang Ruochen's fatigue. She hurriedly got up and helped him sit down and rest.

"Lord, shall I roast a dragon claw for you?"

Qing Mo was confident in her cooking and wanted to try. She was also a foodie and had been wanting to cook one to eat.

Zhang Ruochen looked deep into the temple. Feeling worried, he didn't have much of an appetite, so he shook his head. "I'll cultivate first and try to reach level 53 for Spiritual Power. If you wish to eat, make it for yourself. Remember, don't let the smell spread, lest some scary creatures are lured over."

Chapter 1299 - Goddess Natty

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There was a tremendous amount of mind power and knowledge in the sarira. It looked like a golden ocean. Zhang Ruochen's mind power was like a drop of water compared to that golden ocean.

Zhang Ruochen could recklessly absorb the mind power and knowledge from the sarira and transform them into his own knowledge to improve his mind power.

Of course, the sarira could do more than just improve the mind power of monks. It could improve monks' cultivation as well. However, Zhang Ruochen's meridians and holy meridians had all been destroyed, so he couldn't absorb the holy power and saintly way rules from the sarira.

The sarira represented the Buddha Emperor and the Golden Dragon.

After only a short while, Zhang Ruochen's mind power was greatly improved, close to level fifty-three.

Zhang Ruochen smelled the meat. He stopped refining and opened his eyes. He saw Qing Mo roasting a dragon claw.

It wasn't an entire dragon claw, but a small piece of it. However, it was still ten feet long. It was at least one thousand pounds.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the dragon meat. Qing Mo laughed and felt accomplished.

Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint both stopped recovering. They smelled the delicious food and licked their lips.

The food of Qing Mo was so tempting that nobody could suppress their appetite.

In the end, the dragon meat was fully cooked.

They started to share the meat. Zhang Ruochen and the two female saints didn't care about their images. They tried to get as much meat as possible. After a short while, there were grease stains on their mouths as they finished the dragon meat completely.

Liu Li Female Saint licked her fingers and said, "Before meeting Qing Mo, I never expected someone to have cooking skills that could rival that goddess in the palace. I didn't expect to eat something so delicious today."

Zhang Ruochen said, "There's someone who has cooking skills that can rival those of Qing Mo?"

Liu Li Female Saint nodded and said, "There're nine maidens serving the Empress. Each of them has incredible power, and we can only admire them. One of the maidens got the inheritance from the ancient cooking god, and she has the most extraordinary pair of hands. She's called Goddess Natty. Every dish she cooks is absolutely delicious, and they have the power to improve someone's cultivation and mind power. One dish is like a saint pill."

"One dish is like a saint pill? That's ridiculous."

Zhang Ruochen found it hard to believe as he knew how precious saint pills were. If one dish could rival a saint pill, those alchemists would've lost their jobs already.

Yuanshu Female Saint shook her head and said, "We're not exaggerating. Although only the Empress can enjoy the dishes cooked by Goddess Natty, as the female officials working for the Empress, we were lucky enough to try some of the dishes our Empress bestowed upon us. Every time we tried the dishes, our power surged."

Liu Li Female Saint nodded and said, “Actually, it’s very difficult for me and Yuanshu to become saints. However, we entered Xuanhuang Realm after only two hundred years and surpassed many great talents. It’s not just because of the special environment in Ziwei Palace, but also the dishes made by Goddess Natty.”

Yuanshu Female Saint said, “The dragon meat cooked by Qing Mo also contains the mysterious power to improve monks’ cultivation. However, it still can’t rival that of Goddess Natty. They’re equally delicious though. Qing Mo is definitely the best cook in the mortal realm, but Goddess Natty has the inheritance from the cooking god. They’re skills of gods, not of the mortal realm.”

It was incredible to have the inheritance of a god.

Even saints couldn’t imagine the inheritance of gods.

Qing Mo didn’t care about it. She smiled. “I’m just a girl who cooks. I can’t rival that Goddess Natty. If I’m lucky enough to meet her in the future, I’ll definitely ask her for instruction.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and looked down. He said, “A saint is rushing toward the top of the mountain. He’s really quick. He’s at least entered the Heaven Pass Realm.”

Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint were suppressed by the mountain, so their senses had greatly declined.

“Is a mind power saint really that impressive? We’re all saints. How come he’s that strong?”

The two female saints looked at each other, stood up at the same time, walked to Zhang Ruochen and looked down.

After a short while, a blood-red being rushed up, and she was carrying tremendous holy Qi storms, messing with the spiritual Qi around the mountain.

She was holding a holy sword, and there was fire burning on her smooth skin. Her crimson hair was waving, leaving fiery spots in the air.

“It’s martial saint...”

“Martial saint is being chased by immortal vampires. Please, help her.”

Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint couldn't help grabbing Zhang Ruochen's arms. They looked at him and regarded him as a savior.

Cang Lan Martial Saint was injured, and her face was pale. There was blood at the corner of her mouth, with saint blood all over her fiery phoenix armor. Every step she took would leave a blood-red footprint.

There was a lot of blood mist behind her.

“Cang Lan Martial Saint, why are you still struggling. You're not getting away today!”

“You've killed four of our blood saints. Do you really think you can get away?”

“Haha, I really want to marry a maiden and make her my concubine. Will those human soldiers be furious seeing me violate a maiden?”

...

More than ten blood saints rushed out of the blood mist and climbed up the mountain.

As far as they were concerned, Cang Lan Martial Saint would definitely die if she climbed to the top of the mountain. There was no way she could make it out. They were encircling her, and now, they were waiting to kill her.

“Please, mister, help our martial saint. We'll do anything you ask us to do.”

Liu Li Female Saint was very anxious. She had to turn to Zhang Ruochen for help.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. “You're overestimating me. I'm not as strong as you think, and besides, I've been severely injured. I can't fight them.”

Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint were upset, but then, they rushed out of the rugged palace to meet Cang Lan Martial Saint.

They couldn't do anything to help because they had been severely injured, but they could at least blow up their saint sources to end the immortal vampires.

Just as they rushed to the edge of the Taoist temple, they stepped into a space formation.

And then, they felt that their bodies were out of their control. They were rushing forward, but their bodies moved to the right or backward. They couldn't leave the area at all.

“What is this...”

Both the female saints stopped. However, it was of no use. This area was bizarre, and they couldn't get out at all.

Cang Lan Martial Saint left the Taoist temple. She saw them both and yelled, “Leave here now. A large group of immortal vampire saints is coming here.”

However, the two female saints couldn't hear what she was saying. They were still walking slowly. Sometimes, they stepped back, sometimes, they jumped up, and sometimes, they moved to the left.

Cang Lan Martial Saint frowned. Seeing them rush out, she decided to bring them out.

After she trespassed in the space formation, she lost control of her body also.

Cang Lan Martial Saint stopped and sneered. “It's just a formation. It's not going to trap me.”

She grabbed the handle, and a fiery sword Qi that was more than ten feet long was wielded.

However, the attack power didn't touch the ground. Instead, it showed up above her head and cut toward her neck.

“No.”

Cang Lan Martial Saint was shocked. She wielded her holy sword and slashed upward, trying to ward off the sword Qi coming from above.

The sword changed directions and cut toward her waist.

Cang Lan Martial Saint crushed a guarding jade rune, forming a defense light mask to ward off the two traces of sword Qi. It was her last guarding jade rune. She didn't expect to use that to ward off the two strikes.

Fortunately, she still had one guarding jade run left, otherwise, it would have been a joke if Cang Lan Martial Saint was killed by him.

With that lesson, Cang Lan Martial Saint didn't dare move anymore. She then stood there and observed.

Cang Lan Martial suddenly laid eyes on two beings standing outside the Taoist temple. One of them was a sick young man, and the other was like a sixteen-year-old blue-caped girl.

They were Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo.

Zhang Ruochen entered the space formation and brought Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint out.

And then, he walked to Cang Lan Martial Saint and said, "Follow me closely."

Cang Lan Martial Saint stared at the back of Zhang Ruochen. She reckoned that he might have been the one who had established the formation.

Cang Lan Martial Saint followed him and memorized the position of the steps.

After entering the Taoist temple, Liu Li Female Saint and Yuanshu Female Saint greeted her and asked how badly she had been injured.

"They're just some minor wounds. Most of the saint blood on my body came from the immortal vampires."

Even though Cang Lan Martial Saint had been severely injured, she still looked calm. She stood straight.

Zhang Ruochen stood aside and didn't expose her lies. He looked down and saw the blood mist gushing up.

He didn't want trouble, yet trouble had found him.

Chapter 1300 - Before The Enemy

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Martial Saint Canglan's attention fell upon Zhang Ruochen but realized she couldn't see through him. The man didn't feel any pressure when standing before her. He still seemed very composed.

Martial Saint Canglan was the first of the Nine Heavenly Maidens, but she was being overlooked like this. This had never happened before.

She really wanted to know his identity. "Sir, may I know your name?"

Zhang Ruochen stood with his hands behind his back and continued staring down the mountain. "What use is there in asking? Hurry and try healing. Any bit of cultivation you can recover counts."

Shock flashed past Martial Saint Canglan's eyes. Such intense eyes, she thought. He can actually see that I'm heavily injured and just forcing myself forward now. This man definitely isn't an average man.

Saintess Liuli and Yuansu didn't know that Martial Saint Canglan was heavily injured, so they told her what they'd experienced with Zhang Ruochen.

The guardedness in her eyes finally lowered. She smiled faintly and said, "Thank you for saving Liuli and Yuansu. May I know which sect you are from? When I return to the Central Emperor City, I'll definitely report to the imperial court to write down your merits."

It was clear that Martial Saint Canglan still felt that Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo were unfamiliar and not trustworthy. She wanted to find out their identities.

From that, it was evident that Martial Saint Canglan was much wiser than Saintess Liuli and Yuansu. She definitely challenged herself outside and knew how dangerous people could be.

Zhang Ruochen still didn't reply. He just uttered, "Coming!"

Kaboom!

The heavy blood fog approached from the distance and appeared around the temple, surrounding it. Next, a dozen Blood Saints walked out of the fog. Each one had a domineering aura, like a demon god. Even a Half-Saint would probably prostrate themselves in terror from their saintly might.

Blood Saint Miefeng, the Heaven Pass Blood General of the Motian Tribe, brandished a brilliant silver sword. He laughed loudly. "Martial Saint Canglan, if you're willing to submit to me and become my mistress, I won't treat you poorly."

The other Blood Saints knew that Blood Saint Miefeng was purposely trying to anger Martial Saint Canglan. They all laughed along. "If you grow tired of her, you must let us taste one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens too, haha."

"If that day really comes, I'd be willing even if I have to lose ten years of my life."

Hearing these dirty words, Saintess Liuli and Yuansu gritted their teeth in anger. They just wanted to rush out of the temple and knock their teeth out.

Martial Saint Canglan's eyes shone with cold light. The saint sword in her hands clanged sharply. She glanced at Zhang Ruochen. "Sir, help me in killing those Immortal Vampire Saints."

"I'm sorry. I'm badly hurt. I'm afraid I can't help you." Zhang Ruochen coughed lightly, seemingly weak. He smiled apologetically.

Martial Saint Canglan's slender brows furrowed. She was a bit upset. It seemed like this man was pretending to be weak, while he actually just didn't want to help. He seemed to be hiding something.

"The Immortal Vampires steal, kill, and burn in the northern region," she said loud and clear. "They commit every sin. No one knows how many humans have died! Many humans are even being raised like pigs now! Any human cultivator should work together when faced with Immortal Vampires and overturn them."

Saintess Liuli and Yuansu both looked at Zhang Ruochen with anticipation. If this man with strong Spiritual Power was willing to ally with the Martial Saint, they might be able to cut the Immortal Saints down.

The entire time, Zhang Ruochen just listened quietly. He didn't refute or react to her.

Qing Mo stepped out. "My lord is indeed heavily injured. It's already very difficult for him to stand before you all. He really can't help you."

Martial Saint Canglan shook her head in disappointment. "Since you've made your choice, I won't keep giving you a hard time."

With that, Martial Saint Canglan and the two Saintesses walked out of the temple to fight with the Immortal Vampires.

"I've set up a formation outside the temple," Zhang Ruochen said. "They can't come in. Even if you want to die, do it after you recover. The stronger you are, the more Immortal Vampires you can bring down with you."

Martial Saint Canglan stopped and thought carefully about Zhang Ruochen's words.

The maze outside the temple was indeed powerful. It might really be able to stop the Immortal Saints. Martial Saint Canglan had a Spring Pill with her. If she had two hours, she could recover completely.

If she could really recover, she was quite confident in breaking through the siege.

In the end, Martial Saint Canglan and the two Saintesses took Spring Pills. They remained in the temple to heal.

Seeing that they couldn't force Martial Saint Canglan out, the Immortal Vampire Saints all stared at Zhang Ruochen in frustration. They felt that this man was too nosy.

Where did he come from?

A Blood Saint with a sickle stepped out and reported to Blood Saint Miefeng, "Blood General, this is the man who killed Blood Saint Konglan and Zufeng, rescuing the two Saintesses."

Blood Saint Miefeng huffed coldly. "He killed two Blood Saints and is protecting Martial Saint Canglan. Does he really think he's some guardian angel?"

"More accurately, he's killed five Blood Saints," Zhu Qingyi said. "He caused a shocking bloody case in Serene Wind Mansion. He killed three Blood Saints, dozens of Half-Saints, and 30,000 elite soldiers. He's on the Must-Kill List."

Zhu Qingyi's demonic eyes stared coldly at Zhang Ruochen. She recognized that he was the Spiritual Power Saint who'd escaped from her.

Hearing this, Martial Saint Canglan, who was healing herself, was slightly moved. She couldn't help but be impressed. Had she really misjudged him?

This man could go deeply into Immortal Vampire territory and do something so great. He must be a human hero who hated the enemy. Perhaps he really was injured and couldn't help.

Killing five Blood Saints was naturally a brilliant record for humans. You could be seen as a hero. But to the Immortal Vampires, someone like that was unforgivable. They wished they could tear him to pieces.

"What you're looking for is always in the last place you look. I'd like to see you escape this time!"

Zhu Qingyi waved her arm. Two Blood Saints appeared on either side of her.

The one on her left was huge and burly. His cultivation was at the peak of the Xuanhuang Realm. A river of Xuanhuang Qi wrapped around him.

The Blood Saint on her right seemed older. He'd already reached the Absolute Land Realm.

“Capture that Spiritual Power Saint. I want him alive.” Zhu Qingyi's voice was beautiful but carried cold murderous Qi.

The two Blood Saints sneered. Transforming into two beams of bloody light, they flew toward the temple. But as soon as they entered the spatial maze, they began to feel regret.

“No, there's a Spatial Maze outside the temple.”

The two Blood Saints reacted very quickly. When they sensed that something was wrong, they retreated, wanting to escape from the area. However, how could one escape from a Spatial Maze so easily?

The two Blood Saints were trapped in the formation.

Seeing this, Zhu Qingyi furrowed her brows. She glanced at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing at the doorway. Was this man also a formation master?

“What a powerful formation. It can trap a Saint in the Absolute Land Realm.”

“Where did such a powerful formation master come from?”

“Everyone, try and break through this formation. We suffered great losses, losing four Blood Saints to injure Martial Saint Canglan. We can't let her recover. Otherwise, with her terrifying combat abilities, who knows how much more it'll cost to capture her?”

...

The Immortal Vampire Saints present couldn't laugh anymore. They realized how serious things were. A formation master's appearance was a huge change, making this siege troublesome.

The leader of the Qitian Tribe was named Blood Saint Kongqian. He was also a Heaven Pass Blood General. His cultivation had reached the peak of the Heaven Pass Realm

and was extremely close to a True Saint. He grabbed a golden spear. Activating all his power, he stabbed toward the temple.

Kaboom!

The space shook violently.

The power that burst from the spear didn't break the Spatial Maze. Instead, the power was reversed and hit Blood Saint Kongqian's chest.

"How is this possible?"

Blood Saint Kongqian's expression hardened. He immediately dodged to the right, avoiding the force.

That force hit a Xuanhuang Saint behind him. It tore the Immortal Vampire apart, destroying him.

Not even a Xuanhuang Saint could take a Heaven Pass Blood General's full-force attack.

"What kind of formation is this? It can reverse attacks. You can't break through it." Blood Saint Kongqian's eyes were grave. He put away his cockiness and was forced to reevaluate the sickly man standing at the temple's entrance.

This man wasn't simple.

Blood Saint Miefeng smirked. "Why waste time on breaking a formation? I have an easier way. Bring them out."

With that, four Saintesses in white armor were brought before Blood Saint Miefeng. They were all hurt and their arms and legs were shackled. Each step produced loud metallic clangs.

The chains were made from special material and carved with thunder and fire runes. They were made specifically for Saints.

Blood Saint Miefeng extended a huge hand with claws growing out of the fingertips. He touched a Saintess' beautiful face and went down, all the way to her buttocks. The Saintess trembled in fear. Her knees weakened and she collapsed onto the ground. Sobs escaped from her mouth and she looked imploringly at Martial Saint Canglan and the others in the temple.

Saintesses of a palace were protected. Their willpower couldn't be compared to Saints who grew up experiencing countless bloody battles.

Blood Saint Miefeng shook his head. Smiling, he said, "It's a pity that we couldn't capture Martial Saint Canglan. But these four beautiful Saintesses don't disappoint me. They're all so lovely. I wonder if their bodies under the cold armor are more tempting? Come, rip off their armor and clothes. Let everyone see if the so-called 72 Saintesses are still so holy and cold when naked."

The Immortal Vampire Saints all laughed perversely. Some walked impatiently toward the four Saintesses, ready to start immediately.